

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01744 4362


GENEALOGY

979.4

H624H

1956

✓



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016 with funding from
findmypast.com

March, 1956
Vol. XXXVIII — No. 1

The
Historical Society of Southern California
QUARTERLY



EDWARD AUGUSTUS DICKSON

1879 - 1956



THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA was organized in 1883, and has enjoyed a record of continuous activity for over half a century. Commencing in 1886, and each year until 1935, the Society issued an Annual Publication. In 1935 this *Quarterly* was initiated. It is published at Los Angeles, California, each March, June, September and December.

The purposes of this Society are to preserve and protect the archives and historic sites of the Southwest, with particular stress on Southern California; to publish material of permanent historic interest and significance; to assist and encourage all persons and organizations engaged in similar activities; to hold regular monthly meetings in Los Angeles, except during the summer months, and at least once a year to gather in a pilgrimage to some spot of historic significance.

The Society welcomes to its membership all persons who are in sympathy with its aims. It derives its entire income from the dues and gifts of members, and all regular publications are offered to members without further charge.

It is the aim of the Editorial Board to render this *Quarterly* a publication of general historical interest. Suggestions and criticisms will be welcomed, and all persons, whether members of the Society or not, are invited to submit for the consideration of the editors original articles, old letters, documents, maps and other material bearing upon the history and development of this region.

* * * * *

Address articles, stories, books for review, and all material to appear in the *QUARTERLY*, and general Society correspondence to:

THE SECRETARY,
THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA
2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California

The
Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY

To

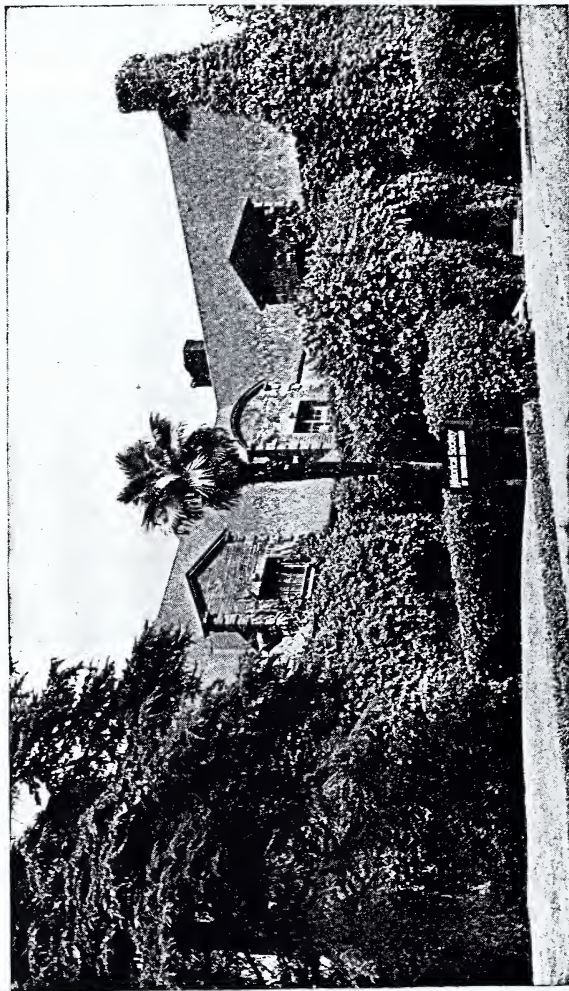
Edward Augustus Dickson

1879-1956

This volume is

respectfully and affectionately

dedicated



HOME OF THE
HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

The
Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY

VOLUME XXXVIII

March, 1956

NUMBER 4

CONTENTS:

EDWARD A. DICKSON

A Eulogy Delivered at the Funeral Service

By Gustave O. Arlt - - - - - 3

TWELVE APOSTLES OF CALIFORNIA

By Rockwell D. Hunt - - - - - 9

A HISTORY OF THE SAN GABRIEL MOUNTAINS

By Charles Clark Vernon - - - - - 39

THE CHAMBER OF COMMERCE CORNERSTONES:

Milestones in Los Angeles Progress

By John E. Baur - - - - - 61

JOURNAL OF B. B. HARRIS

- - - - - 71

"GEORGE COBURN MUST BE BACK"

By Helen Rocca Goss - - - - - 75

HISTORICAL PROFILES

By Marco R. Newmark - - - - - 91

XXXIV—ISAAC N. VAN NUYS

ACTIVITIES OF THE SOCIETY

- - - - - 94

GIFTS TO THE SOCIETY

- - - - - 96

The HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA QUARTERLY, official publication of the Historical Society of Southern California, 2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California, is issued four times each year during the months of March, June, September and December. Annual membership \$10.00. Entered as Second Class Matter at the Post Office at Los Angeles, California.

The Historical Society of Southern California

FOUNDED NOVEMBER 1, 1883

1955

OFFICERS:

JOHN E. FISHBURN, JR., *President*
GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *First Vice-President*
EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Second Vice-President*
MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Curator*
ANA BEGUE DE PACKMAN, *Secretary*

DIRECTORS:

JOHN C. AUSTIN	FRANK B. PUTNAM
JOHN ANSON FORD	MRS. FREDERIC C. RIPLEY
PHIL TOWNSEND HANNA	W. W. ROBINSON
FREDERICK F. HOUSER	MRS. MARSHALL STIMSON
OSCAR LAWLER	MISS GRACE S. STOERMER

STANDING COMMITTEES:

Publication Committee: Dr. Robert G. Cleland, Phil Townsend Hanna, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, W. W. Robinson, Dr. Henry Wagner.

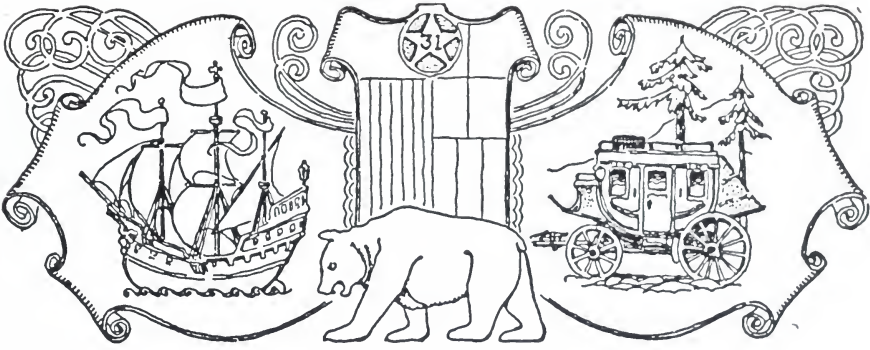
Program Committee: FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Chairman*; John B. T. Campbell, Rev. Msgr. James E. Dolan, Colin M. Gair, John Plummer, Wilbur E. Zimmerman.

Landmarks Committee: EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; John C. Austin, Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun, Clement J. Gagliano, Marco R. Newmark, Frank B. Putnam, Edward P. Ripley, Robert Raphael, Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman, David I. Worsfold, Ernest Yorba.

Gifts Committee: MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Chairman*; Richard O'Neill, Jr., Mrs. Lucy Gage Rand, Mrs. Marshall Stimson, Mrs. Robert Tipton, Miss Marguerite Winston, Mr. H. H. West, Mrs. John J. Wolfskill.

Hostesses of Social Hour: MRS. EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, Mrs. B. Sabichi Mitchell, Mrs. Ernest Yorba.

Executive Committee: JOHN E. FISHBURN, JR.; John C. Austin, Gustave O. Arlt, Oscar Lawler, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, Mrs. Marshall Stimson, W. W. Robinson, Ana Begue de Packman.



GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Editor*

The Historical Society of Southern California QUARTERLY for March, 1956

Edward A. Dickson

A EULOGY DELIVERED AT THE FUNERAL SERVICE

By Gustave O. Arlt



WE ARE HERE TODAY to honor the memory of one of the truly great men of our community and of our time: a man whose strong and capable hand has helped to mold so many of the institutions of our state and city that it is impossible to enumerate them all; a man whose brilliant talents were diffused upon the most varied projects and yet focussed with perfect clarity upon each of them. Most of us in this House of Worship knew Edward A. Dickson; many of us knew him well and were proud to be numbered among his friends. And yet very few of us had the remotest idea of the amazing scope of his interests.

Edward A. Dickson's career is a matter of public record. In the past days the newspapers of the state and nation have recounted many of the details of his activities. And yet I would like to review them here once more, not so much as the record of one man's remarkable achievements but rather as the shining reflection of that

man's character, as the expression of his determination and perseverance, of his sincerity and honesty, of his kindness and gentleness—and above all of his loyalty—loyalty to his ideals and beliefs, loyalty to the nation, state, and community, to the institutions he loved, and to the men he trusted.

Edward A. Dickson came to California from Wisconsin as a young boy and attended schools in Sacramento. After his graduation from the University of California in 1901 he sought to enter newspaper work but met only with rebuffs because of his youth and lack of experience. "Come back when you have finished at least six months of successful reporting," they told him. With the determination that was to become one of his great assets young Edward went to the Sacramento *Union* and offered to work for no salary. He was accepted and six months later he returned to the San Francisco *Chronicle*, the proud owner of a successful record of experience. Here began a journalistic career of great distinction and of phenomenal rapidity of advancement. Within a few years he rose to the rank of a political and editorial writer and his by-line became known throughout the state.

Of determining importance in Edward A. Dickson's career was his meeting in 1906 with Guy T. Earl, publisher of the Los Angeles *Express*. Earl sent for him, offered him the position of political editor and then explained the various limitations upon editorial policy which he intended to impose. Those who knew Edward A. Dickson will understand the indignation with which he said, "Mr. Earl, either I write politics as I see them, or I go back to San Francisco," and left the office. Mr. Earl recalled him and yielded to the young man's earnest insistence upon his journalistic integrity. This began a period of fruitful collaboration out of which grew a partnership and finally sole ownership of the *Express* by Mr. Dickson.

In 1907 he married Wilhelmina de Wolff whose unwavering devotion and understanding is the keystone of the arch of Edward Dickson's life and work. She made his home a place of comfort and happiness, she brought beauty, spiritual and physical, into his life, she guarded his health and husbanded his strength when his energy drove him to the limits of his capacity.

Together the young couple went to the nation's capital where a period as Washington correspondent completed Edward A. Dickson's political training. When he returned to California, barely 30 years of age, he plunged into the first and possibly fiercest political battle of his life. It was the momentous crusade for better government and for liberation from the self-seeking political machine that dominated California politics. Two men dared to challenge the all-powerful colossus—Chester Rowell, the fighting editor of the *Fresno Republican* and Edward A. Dickson. They organized the famous Lincoln-Roosevelt League with chapters in all parts of the state; within a year they made themselves felt in local elections and within two years they swept corruption out of the State and Hiram Johnson into the governor's mansion. Edward A. Dickson's fighting spirit had won its first great victory.

In 1913 Governor Hiram Johnson named Edward Dickson to the Board of Regents of the University of California. He was 34 years old, the youngest Regent ever to be appointed and, at the time, the only one from Southern California. Mr. Dickson accepted the challenge on behalf of his beloved Southland and within two years he was engaged in the battle to extend the range of the University to Los Angeles. In 1915 he succeeded in persuading the Board to establish a branch of University Extension in Los Angeles, in 1917 the first summer session of the University was held here, and in 1919 the Southern Branch of the University of California came into being. Edward A. Dickson's dream of a statewide university with one of its major campuses in the Southland began to be realized and his life's work lay clearly before him.

What happened in the next 35 years is history: how the modest institution grew into a four-year college; how Edward A. Dickson found the beautiful 400-acre terrain in the rolling hills of Westwood; how the young college moved in 1929 to its new location and how it grew within the lifetime of its founder to the stature of one of the great universities of the world. This is a miracle without parallel in history: that the genius who dreamed a dream of greatness should have lived to see the university of his creation produce Nobel prize scholars, leaders of the state and the nation, figures of world renown in industry and the arts. The Los Angeles campus

of the University of California is the marvel among universities of our time, and every stone in its structure, every book in its libraries, every intellectual achievement of its students is a monument to the dream of its founder. Truly, this alone is sufficient accomplishment for a single, extraordinary lifetime.

But Edward A. Dickson's boundless energy was not content with this achievement. At the same time he served as a director of the Olympic Games Association and helped in the creation of the Los Angeles Coliseum. He was a member of the Water and Power Commission that created the Colorado River Aqueduct and brought the life-giving stream to Southern California. In 1931, he sold his newspaper interests and turned his attention to a savings and loan association which he built into one of the powerful financial institutions of the South. He was the moving spirit and long-time president of the Historical Society of Southern California. With a small group of kindred spirits he was a founder of the unique Lincoln Club. He served term after term under various city administrations as a member of the Los Angeles Library Board. The County availed itself of his abilities as a member of the Art Commission. In 1950 Governor Warren named him Chairman of the Literary Centennial Committee and at the same time he served on the Los Angeles Centennial Commission. Wherever we look about us we see the lasting evidences of the handiwork of this remarkable man whose fertile brain was never idle and whose boundless energy drove him and others with him to build a better community.

He was a keen observer of human values and he was quick to recognize potential greatness in others. It was Edward A. Dickson who saw the unusual gifts of a young controller of the University of California and who fostered and groomed Robert Gordon Sproul to become one of the great educational leaders of our day. Together they formed a team that not only gave the University the most brilliant administration in its history but that also made its influence felt throughout the entire world. More than one of the younger civic leaders in this church today will gladly acknowledge that it was the helping and guiding hand of Edward Dickson that started them on their way to public service and that it was his sage counsel that kept them on the right path.

Edward A. Dickson

Edward A. Dickson had the capacity to achieve anything he wished in life. Had he been a selfish or even only a self-interested person he could have been very rich or very powerful. But that was not what he wanted; his was a far more altruistic objective. Wilhelmina Dickson once told me that many years ago Edward had said to her: "My mother taught me that our object in life is to leave the world just a tiny bit better than we found it." This was Edward Dickson's philosophy of life; this was the golden rule by which he lived and worked and fought. He gave himself fully and without reservation to every worthy public cause that needed him. To these ends he devoted his vast energy, his resourcefulness, his knowledge and skill, and his complete loyalty.

If this simple and inadequate tribute were made before people who did not know Edward A. Dickson, they might well wonder whether all his fine qualities were spent on public causes and whether he had no private life at all. And, to a certain extent, they would be right. He never completely shed his cares and they often followed him into the privacy of his home life. And yet, remarkably, he found time for study and thought. A glance at his personal library indicates that: generous in numbers, carefully selected and well-thumbed. It deals with those subjects which were close to his heart: the history of printing, the life of Abraham Lincoln, and the history of California. All the important volumes on these subjects are to be found on his shelves—and much of their contents was filed away in his prodigious memory. In these fields of learning he showed both breadth and depth.

He had more than a passing interest in art. The paintings in his home are tastefully selected and representative of the fine periods of pictorial art. He was constantly concerned about the art galleries of the University and brought about the founding of the UCLA Art Council. His connection with the County Art Commission was by no means perfunctory but very active. Within the past three months, in fact, shortly before he was taken ill, he was instrumental in founding the California Art Association with headquarters in Santa Barbara.

Books and paintings—those were his cultural interests and the Dickson home reflected them. It is a happy home, old-fashioned in

a dignified way, cheerful, and always bright with flowers, not only arranged but raised by Wilhelmina Dickson's gentle hand. And Edward loved his home, its spaciousness and its charm. He loved to share it with his friends, for he was a sociable person, a gracious host, attentive and entertaining. But his hospitality was not promiscuously shared: it was an honor to be invited to the Dickson home; an honor, because you knew you had been accepted as a friend. And once accepted fully into his friendship, you could be certain that his friendship and loyalty were yours for life.

And now he belongs to the ages. His life's work is done and well done. His monument stands, not only in stone and brick and concrete, but also in living flesh and blood and spirit. For his is the only monument that outlasts the centuries, an institution of the spirit that is not dependent upon piles of stone and brick and concrete that men can build and destroy. The Universities of Prague, of Heidelberg, of Paris have each outlived not one but a dozen states that fostered them. And so—please God—will the University that Edward A. Dickson built.

Edward Dickson was not a great lover of poetry. His straightforward, practical mind had little patience for poetic circumlocution. But he was not unaware of the place of poetry in life, and there was one poet whom he knew and admired and loved and whose autographed photograph he proudly showed his friends. This poet, like himself, was an adopted Californian, Edwin Markham. In 1909, for the centenary of the birth of a great American, Markham wrote a poem entitled "Lincoln: Man of the People." The last four lines of this poem that Edward Dickson loved have throbbed in my memory in the past week, and I assure you, it is no sacrilege to close with these words:

And when he fell in whirlwind, he went down
As when a lordly cedar, green with boughs,
Goes down with a great shout upon the hills,
And leaves a lonesome place against the sky.



Retrato del Rev. Padre Fray Junipero Serra Apóstol de la Alta California tomado del original que se conserva en el Convento de la Santa Cruz de Querétaro.

for the Cause of St. Junipero Serra

—From the Author's Collection

PADRE JUNIPERO SERRA



—From the Author's Collection

JEDEDIAH STRONG SMITH



—From the Author's Collection

MARIANO DE GUADALUPE VALLEJO



—From the Author's Collection

JOHN A. SUTTER

Twelve Apostles of California

By Rockwell D. Hunt



THE TITLE OF APOSTLE CARRIES THE IMPLICATION of being called to a special mission, sent forth at the behest of some one in authority, to carry a definite message or to promote a distinctive objective of that authority. Historically the term is generally applied to the twelve men directly selected by the founder of Christianity to preach his gospel and be his special representatives, or envoys, among the people.

But very soon it began to be used in a wider sense: preachers who first carried Christianity to the gentiles, or to heathen lands, were called apostles. These included such leaders as St. Paul, St. Boniface, St. Augustine, and an increasing number of others. And as time went on variations in the meaning of the word appeared, even carrying the term beyond the exclusive realm of religion. Thus, by invoking the liberty of figurative language, Richard Cobden became the "apostle of free trade," Voltaire was called the "apostle of infidelity," and Rousseau the "apostle of *Le Contrat Social*," Bortolome de las Casas the "apostle of the Indies," and Henry George the "apostle of the Single Tax."

Now, just as St. Patrick became the apostle of Ireland, it seems not unreasonable to extend apostleship still further, at least in simple metaphor, or by natural analogy, and apply it to leaders like Washington and Franklin at the genesis of our Republic, and to Lincoln, already known as the preserver of the Union.

What I am here proposing is the selection of twelve men so vital to the history and development of California as to merit the title "Apostles of California." Each one of the twelve possessed his own special individuality, each had his distinctive mission, made his own unique contribution. This is not to say that each "apostle"

was of saintly character or consistent loyalty to exalted ideals: it is simply averring that each of them—in several cases without conscious design—did something different but significant to enrich the history and development of California, and that no record of the achievements of the Golden State can be deemed complete if any of their names are omitted.

Since this essay stems from the study of history, for reasons that will appear obvious no living person at the time of writing is given a place in the twelve; and following the precedent of the original Twelve Apostles, no names of even the finest or greatest of California's noble-women will be found in the list.

I am fully aware that this is an audacious undertaking; also that judgments of critics may differ widely. Moreover, I freely grant that to fix the number at twelve is purely arbitrary—it might readily be more, or not so many. Twelve is the number suggested by the twelve Christian Apostles and is not to be thought of as possessing any magical or fetishistic significance.

Upon what authority does the apostleship of these men rest? I would not be so dogmatic as to suggest that it was either divine decree, or the fiat of fate. Some might refer to it as an extension of the ideal of "Manifest Destiny," which, though never perfectly defined, proved efficacious in the period culminating in the war with Mexico, and even claimed California as its legitimate offspring. In a more matter-of-fact way, it may simply be recorded that in the course of human events and in accordance with the underlying forces of nature, certain men emerged as "Beacon lights of history," each of whom rose above his contemporaries and won for himself a unique place of leadership which may be said to justify the title of apostle. I have no intention of being drawn into the intricacies of the philosophy of history.

Junípero Serra

There will be remarkable and spontaneous unanimity of opinion in the selection of the first of the Twelve—Padre Junípero Serra. Indeed, the great founder of the Franciscan Missions has long been known as "the apostle of California." His name was above every

Twelve Apostles of California

name when the first representative of the Golden State was to be made for National Statuary Hall in the Capitol at Washington.

As a youth of sixteen he became a professed Franciscan, put aside his baptismal name (Miguel José Serra) and took the name "Junípero," in memory of Juniperus, of whom St. Francis had exclaimed, "Would that I had a whole forest of such junipers!"

When the famous joint expedition of 1769 was completed and Serra, representing the cross, and Gaspar de Portolá, representing the sword, came together at San Diego on the first of July—significantly referred to as the natal day of Alta California—the consecrated founder of the Missions fervently confessed, "All my life has been lived for this glorious day." In truth it was on that sacred day, in his fifty-sixth year, that he entered upon his real life work.

What he accomplished as first Father-President of the Franciscan Missions during the following fifteen years constitutes the major factor of California's history of that period, known and read of all men. It might almost be said, the history of Spanish California is the history of the Franciscan Missions. But his achievement had called for surpassing fortitude, much physical suffering, and a crowning serenity of exalted spirit, which demonstrated that to him religion was everything. What matters is that he was intolerant of the temporal powers or the constant worldly besetments?

On the 28th day of August, 1784, the tolling of the mission bell at Carmel announced the death of Padre Junípero Serra to the grief-stricken people. The copious tears of his spiritual children, the Indian neophytes, constituted the most touching tribute to California's "Knight of the Cross." His selection to head the list of twelve apostles of the land he loved so dearly and of the benighted people for whose salvation he so earnestly prayed and labored is both natural and spontaneous. None other than Junípero Serra must be named the first of the Twelve.

Jedediah Strong Smith

Next I nominate a young American, the finest representative of that strange, strong individualistic group of men known as West-

ern Mountain Men, but withal a pronounced Christian whose devout character and ever-present volume of the Holy Scriptures earned for him the meaningful epithet "Bible-toter," Jedediah Strong Smith. Of him, as of Serra, it may truly be said, in all California history there was no other like him, also that his contribution was unique and highly significant.

The Spanish-Californians, in their Arcadian dreamland, believing themselves safe from any westward American movement, were rudely awakened by the appearance in 1826 of the party of trappers led by Smith, who conquered the great desert and crossed the mighty Sierra into California. Here was the beginning of the "peaceful invasion." But Smith opened a trail even to Oregon, thus paving the way for the Oregon-California link of succeeding years. In short Jedediah Strong Smith fairly won the title "Forerunner of the American Pioneers."

But let us take a look at that group of wide-ranging men with whom his name is inevitably associated. The typical "Mountain Men" of the Far West have rightly been called "some of the strangest yet most fascinating of God's mortals." They belong to a very brief period, following the Lewis and Clark Expedition and ending in the early 1840's. We shall never look upon their like again. Only lately have we been learning the inner secrets of their heart life, through the tales of men like George Frederick Ruxton, made available through LeRoy Hafen of Colorado. "Everything quiet or commonplace I detested," confessed Ruxton, "and my spirit chafed within me to see the world and participate in scenes of novelty and danger." The Mountain Man declared himself free; he was "defiantly independent and individualistic." As a roaming trapper he belonged in a neolithic age, with a minimum contact with civilization, going where others had not been, glorying in his self-sufficiency and uninhibited freedom, always in the presence of insecurity and potential danger—but also Nature's grandeur.

Jed Smith was a mountain man of the better sort. Though his actual contact with California was extremely brief, it was in its consequences highly important and consequential. I call him an Apostle of California.

Twelve Apostles of California

Mariano Guadalupe Vallejo

Pre-eminent among the Spanish-Californians stood Mariano Guadalupe Vallejo, "The Autocrat of Sonoma." Here was a Spanish gentleman, descendant of a long line of grandees extending far back in the Old World, but himself proud to be a Californian. He was born in the colonial capital, Monterey, exactly 38 years before Commodore Sloat raised the American flag at that historic town—July 7, 1846.

By his marriage at the age of twenty-four to Francisca Benicia Carrillo, a member of one of the most distinguished families of California, he became head of a family that formed the most nearly perfect link "between the quiet and happy age of the beginning of the century and the age of the American growth and change." He beheld the crimson and gold banner of Spain superseded by the Mexican tricolor; later he saw this supplanted by the Stars and Stripes.

Vallejo himself was emphatically a man of action, with a vaulting ambition and traits of character that presented a striking similarity to leading contemporary foreigners like John Augustus Sutter, the Swiss, and John Bidwell, the American. The pace set by the administrators and politicians of the Mexican régime was altogether too slow for his dynamic nature. He came in for problems and troubles aplenty: indeed, for most of his life he was beset with annoyances and vexation, though through it all he revealed a graciousness and a spirit that would be nothing less than remarkable in any age. Among all the early Pre-American Californians he was quite surely the most broadly educated. Gentility and refinement were among his most marked characteristics.

The interesting details of Vallejo's military and political career cannot here concern us. Proudly he carried his part as a soldier and an officer from early youth—he was the personification of dignity and courtly manner. The sceptre of authority on the northern frontier of Sonoma, Petaluma, and Napa was placed in his hands by Governor José Figueroa, though he experienced many vicissitudes during the confused administration of Juan Bautista Alvarado, his own nephew. Thus, while his power and station would seem

to have made him practically absolute over his vast patriarchal estates, his actual authority was tenuous at times, with threats of complete undermining.

When Captain John A. Sutter founded New Helvetia in 1839, Vallejo found in him his first real rival on the northern frontier. Here was a resourceful and ambitious Swiss, with colonial plans of vast import—the two “most vigorous men in California,” Vallejo and Sutter, confronted each other.

But shrewd and adventurous Americans were coming, too! Vallejo could not fail to observe the sluggishness of his countrymen, and he was quick to perceive the energy of the immigrants, representatives of the on-sweeping Westward Movement. Despite the serious threat they posed, he liked the Yankees for what he saw in them and for what he felt was back of them. If his own countrymen only had their spirit!

Among those early Californians Vallejo was one of the first to read the signs of the inevitable—there would be a change of authority in California! And all things considered, with the threat of England and of France, he was not long in concluding that the acquisition of the prize by the United States would prove desirable.

So it was, as one has said, General Vallejo became “Official host for California and the Californians.” The indignity he suffered in connection with the Bear Flag episode, while stinging and deeply humiliating, did not engender permanent bitterness of spirit. He availed himself of American citizenship, rendered conspicuous service as a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1849 and of the new state’s first senate. As a prominent and loyal citizen of California he showed kindness to the new settlers, was generous to those in need, marked by a spirit of true friendliness.

But with the appearance and persistence of the squatters on his vast domain, and because of the injustices, vexatious delays, and costly litigation occasioned by questions relating to early land titles, he suffered crushing losses. Pushing his claims for what he believed to be simple justice, he repaired to Washington. Finally, listening to the Second Inaugural of President Lincoln, catching his immortal words, “With malice toward none, with charity for all,” his bitter-

Twelve Apostles of California

ness vanished, his struggle was ended. "Let the wound heal," he said, as he silenced his sons who wished still to protest the great injustices.

Proud of his ancestral heritage, Vallejo found deep joy in his own family life at his *Lachryma Montis* home, near Sonoma. Beautiful to behold was the domestic felicity with his Francisca and their growing children together. Far and wide they were known for their hospitality and benevolent friendliness.

In the history of California Mariano Guadalupe Vallejo holds a place all his own. In earlier life he was at times arrogant and imperious—tall and erect, with military bearing and the manner of a Spanish cavalier. He craved action and power, not without the love of pomp and display. Spirited as a thoroughbred horse, none of his compatriots could match his driving energy. But he was not above learning the hard lessons of life, which brought mellowness and richness to his own life and made him a fitting link "binding the new to the old," and winning for him a high place among the citizens of his beloved California, now a great state in the American Union.

John Augustus Sutter

Johann Augustus Sutter, a German speaking Swiss, must be given a place among the Twelve, not so much because of any conspicuous trait of personal character—he certainly possessed such traits—not because he settled in California at a significantly historic time—he certainly did that; but rather because he became the focal point in the shaping of memorable events in California and the West, and because his unique personality, under whatever destiny it was that spurred him on, was a rich fusion of paradoxical factors that made him a romantic, picturesque, and consequential figure in our national as well as local annals.

It was on a Sunday afternoon in August, 1839, that Sutter landed from the American, a tributary of the Sacramento River. The founding of New Helvetia in 1839 by this strange fugitive from justice resulted in his becoming the feudal baron in the outlying Mexican colony, the "Lord of Sacramento." Swiftly the New Hel-

vetia as a village of tents had been transformed into Mexican-type adobes, then into the substantial rock-based Sutter's Fort that everybody knows. As Julian Dana expressed what happened, "chance made him a state maker."

For his base of operations his uncanny shrewdness led him to select, as the free gift from the hand of Dame Fortune the most strategic point and area in all the northern part of Mexican California. He experienced little difficulty in obtaining his far-flung grant of land at the hands of Governor Juan B. Alvarado, once he had complied with the requirements of becoming an adopted Mexican citizen—he found Alvarado the more willing because of his jealousy of the sensational influence of his uncle, M. G. Vallejo, only half a hundred miles, or so, to the west of Sutter's Fort. Here was an admirable counterpoise to Vallejo's power. Marvelously did circumstances work into the hands of Sutter!

But very soon the commander of the Fort showed surprising evidences of virtual independence from Mexican authority. The strength of his arms, the scores of Indians that served him, the vast numbers of cattle and horses on his holdings, even the cannon he had acquired from the Russians, enabled him almost literally to proclaim to the world, "I am lord of all I survey." And he never lacked in pomp and parade, impressive evidences of his extravagant claims—superb showmanship was to him an invaluable asset.

Sutter's sensational career was one of the most paradoxical in all the colorful history of California. Of humble birth, he was a failure in early business ventures; yet always optimistic, he paraded in Sacramento Valley on his favorite mount as feudal lord and was cast in the role of a western empire builder. He gloried "in martial titles and pomp of war," yet his actual military operations, apart from crude Indian fighting, were almost completely negligible. Perennially an insolvent debtor, forever under the shadow of financial bankruptcy, he nevertheless was always lavishly generous and proverbially hospitable. The gold discovery at his Coloma mill by his man Jim Marshall, instead of enriching him brought sorrow and ruin. His life abounded in contrasts and contradictions. In his life in California the actual truth was far stranger than fiction.



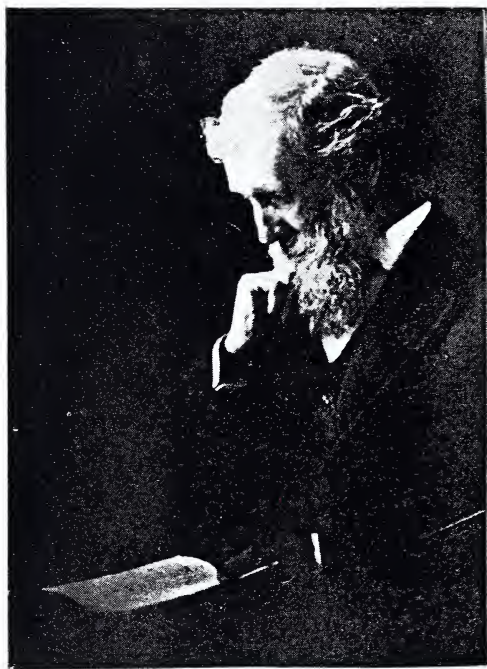
—From the Author's Collection

JOHN BIDWELL



—From the Author's Collection

THOMAS STARR KING



John Muir

—From the Author's Collection

JOHN MUIR



Leland Stanford

—From the Author's Collection

LELAND STANFORD

Twelve Apostles of California

The Mexican government had never occupied the great valley of the Sacramento—Sutter, who was neither Spanish nor American, came in the nick of time to fill the vacuum, and coming he became the dreaded rival of Vallejo, who lorded it over the Valley of the Moon to the West of him, just when he was at loggerheads with the governor. His purchase of the Russian property at Ft. Ross surprised and confused the Mexican leaders. New Helvetia became the rendezvous of successive waves of immigrants pouring down from the Sierra Nevada Mountains and coming south from Oregon. Frémont found it his most convenient stopping place. The genial, hospitable captain won friends right and left among the Americans: he liked them; through his influence many new groups were induced to try their fortune in the new Arcadian land. Although a Mexican citizen by adoption, he defied Mexican law except when it served his own purposes, and he became a prominent factor in the American conquest and in the genesis of the new American state. Sutter's Fort was the interior gateway to upper California, and Sutter himself held the key.

His astutely planned colonization, followed by the unplanned sequela presents one of the most striking examples of the nemesis of history in all our annals. Any rationalization or interpretation of the discorded facts I must respectfully leave to the philosopher—or the theologian. In summation I can only repeat that, all in all, under whatever skies, Johann Augustus Sutter ranks a place among the Twelve Apostles of California.

John Bidwell

As a contemporary of Vallejo who was a native born Californian of Spanish blood, and Sutter, the Swiss colonist from far-off Europe, there looms prominently another figure, a true American Westerner, John Bidwell, "Prince of California Pioneers," mountain man of another breed, home-seeker and settler, agriculturist, politician, humanitarian. This august personage must also be commissioned an Apostle of California—history decrees that he shall be one of the Twelve.

The claims of Bidwell to apostleship are many and undisputed.

As secretary of the "First Emigrant Train to California," in 1841, as employee and associate of Captain Sutter and pioneer in the California of the Arcadian days of the "Splendid Idle Forties," as proprietor of beautiful Rancho Chico and founder of the city of Chico in Northern California, as premier farmer of the "Empire State of the Pacific," and as open-handed, big-hearted philanthropist, his story has long been an open book for all to read and to know.

Indeed, the record of his life is too familiar to require repetition here. But characteristics of the man, his special qualities as a citizen, his unique contributions to the commonwealth—these should find a place in the context.

Bidwell was one of the few who lived and contributed actively in several different Californias: there were the simple Arcadian days of the Mexican régime—and no other American embodied in his living in later years the best of this romantic epoch so graciously as he; the critical period of the American conquest, in which he was an active participant from the days of the Bear Flag Republic; the unprecedented, stirring gold days of '49 and flush times following, during which he never surrendered to the common mania or descended to the orgies of drink or the gambling table; then the building of the great western commonwealth represented by the thirty-first star in the national ensign, in which he had an honorable part; finally, the upbuilding of the state growing in greatness, down to the dawning of the twentieth century. Deep and passionate was his love for California. As in the case of his distinguished contemporary, U. S. Senator Cornelius Cole, when reviewing the changes and the progress wrought, he could truthfully say, "*Et quorum pars fui.*"

Junípero Serra was a consecrated Franciscan friar; Thomas Starr King was a devoted, patriotic Unitarian preacher; John Bidwell was a faithful Protestant layman, likewise dedicated to the cause of righteousness. If he lacked something of the subtlety of Vallejo his sincerity was genuine; if he was not a highly successful vote-getting politician like Gwin, he always exalted principle above expediency; if he did not possess the erudition of the specialist like Davidson, he remained a humble but eager learner to the last year

Twelve Apostles of California

of his life; if he was not gifted with the oratory of the silver-tongued Edward D. Baker, he spoke as a prophet words of wisdom that come ringing down to us now.

In his uncompromising stand against the evils of drink, Bidwell—Prohibition nominee for President in 1892—was strongly backed by his charming wife, Annie Kennedy Bidwell. Together, “General” (as she always called him) and “Precious” (as he always called her), were host and hostess *par excellence* at the Chico mansion. To them nothing was more delightful than to entertain their guests and friends of both high and low estate. Among illustrious visitors were President and Mrs. Hayes, General Sherman, Senator Stanford, Sir Joseph Hooker, Asa Gray, and John Muir. But the atmosphere of kindness and unaffected democracy provided equal welcome to the humble, whose names were unknown to Fame. The Indian protégé from the near-by *rancheria* found welcome in the warm Bidwell kitchen.

John Bidwell was resourceful, industrious, studious, versatile; even better, he was dependable, loyal, serene, and generous; his sense of justice was keen, the sincerity of his faith was unquestioned, his integrity in public and private life uncompromising. Living as he did in the succeeding phases of the developing western commonwealth, living in the way he did—nobly, simply, grandly—he was a man whose like we shall not look upon again. Verily, John Bidwell is not to be deemed least among the Apostles of California.

Thomas Starr King

When it came to the selection of two California personalities to be honored by bronze memorials in Statuary Hall in the National Capitol, considerable spontaneity was shown in naming Padre Junípero Serra as first choice. For the second name, however, there was decided difference of opinion.

Among the names prominently presented were John Bidwell and General Mariano G. Vallejo; but in the end the decision went to the Reverend Thomas Starr King, Unitarian minister of San Francisco, believed by some to be the foremost citizen of California during the period of the Civil War. This is all the more remarkable

since King was resident in the Golden State a little less than four short years in all when death took him. There need be no hesitation in according him a secure place among the Twelve. Few if any of the entire list possessed more of the true apostolic qualities than Thomas Starr King, a true evangel of light and liberty. The unveiling and presentation ceremonies took place in Statuary Hall on the first day of March, 1931.

King came to California at a most critical time in the history of the American Union, arriving in San Francisco early in 1860. He had accepted the invitation to be the minister of First Unitarian Church after a most successful ministry in the Hollis Street Unitarian Church in Boston. He came at a time when Southern officials seemed dominant and when Southern sentiment was such as to render the status of California problematical in reference to the impending crisis of secession. In appearance he was a very slender man of youthful—almost boyish—appearance, weighing only 120 pounds, beardless, with long hair, and extraordinarily expressive dark gray eyes.

Here was a man with a mission. The rather unimpressive personality, with his diminutive figure, was quickly transformed into an inspired apostle of loyalty and righteousness when he stood in that pulpit to preach to that cultured San Francisco audience, the men strongly predominating.

He had a marvelous voice, deep and rich, "carrying conviction captive before its wonderful melody": it was resonant and clear, electric and trumpet-like, tender and sweet, persuasive and convincing. His luminous eyes, which have been called "living sermons," gave added favor and meaning to his graceful gestures. He had been a careful student of William Ellery Channing, whose influence had assisted in moulding his views on religious and social problems. He had no hesitation in discussing great questions of state and the government in his pulpit. He had been under the spell of Daniel Webster, whose Americanism had contributed powerfully in shaping his views on patriotism and nationality.

But great as was his power in the pulpit, it became still greater in the broader field of action when, under his dominant idea of the promotion of human welfare, he found his exalted mission in giv-

Twelve Apostles of California

ing himself unreservedly to Lincoln's consecrated task—saving the Union. The free state of California must maintain its freedom, and must contribute its full measure of devotion and substance toward the cause of Union. King's parish extended from the Mexican boundary to Canada. He has been referred to as the "Saint of the Pacific Coast."

His appeals on behalf of the United States Sanitary Commission—forerunner of the Red Cross—were the leading factor in bringing contributions of nearly a million and a quarter dollars, more than one-fourth of the total amount raised by the country. In every community he visited his patriotic addresses proved a powerful stabilizing influence in the attitude of loyalty to the Union in time of national peril.

Through his persuasive eloquence, unflinching courage, inspired patriotism, transparent integrity and absolute assurance of the righteousness of his cause, Thomas Starr King stands first in a galaxy of leaders in saving California for the Union—others of undying fame are Leland Stanford, known as California's War Governor, and Martin C. Briggs, "Methodist Trumpeter."

He was only in his fortieth year when death came. Every year for thirty years, it is said, Edward Everett Hale gave an address on Thomas Starr King. His friend, John Greenleaf Whittier, paid him noble tribute in chaste lines of truth and tenderness:

The great work laid upon his two score years
Is done, and well done . . .
. . . whose life stands rounded and approved
In the full growth and stature of a man.

John Muir

To many it will come as a shock to be reminded that the topography of California is dominated by its mountains—at least half of the entire surface area is covered by the mountains. The man whom I would designate as California's Master Mountaineer because of close kinship with them, the qualities that shone forth in his character, and the life that he lived, must be accorded a place

among Twelve Apostles of the Golden State. His name is John Muir. The very first sentence of his book, *The Mountains of California*, reads: "Go where you may within the bounds of California, mountains are ever in sight, charming and glorifying every landscape." "Patriarch of American lovers of mountains" is what James Boyce called him.

This native of Scotland was an inventive genius almost from childhood; but he decided he did not wish to spend his lifetime—which seemed to him all too short — among machines. He was moved by the Psalmist's prayer, "So teach us to number our days that we may apply our hearts unto wisdom." It was not until after he had spent several years as a student, others as a teacher and a laborer, that he reached San Francisco *via* the Isthmus, in the early spring of 1868, not yet quite thirty years old.

But the bustling city had no attraction for him. He soon became enamored of the mountains. When he looked upon the majestic Sierra Nevada, it was a case of love at first sight. During all his subsequent wanderings the fascinations of them called him back to the heights he loved best of all.

The central mission to which John Muir was called was to teach communion with Nature—hallowed were the mountains and all that in them is. Hear his classic exhortation:

Climb the mountains and get their good tidings. Nature's peace will flow into you as sunshine flows into trees. The winds will flow their own freshness into you, and the storms their energy, while cares will drop off like autumn leaves.

Happy are we that Muir has left us his priceless books and essays, and his scores of personal letters. In them we have a precious heritage. His matchless style was his very own, inspired by his exalted philosophy of life and serenity of spirit. His writings will always hold a high place in the literature of California and the West.

John Muir was not an athlete, nor did his physical appearance greatly impress an observer. He was tall and slight, with tough sinews and unusual powers of endurance. He had long auburn

Twelve Apostles of California

hair, with untrimmed beard; his piercing gray eyes were like the eagle's. In temperament he was modest to the point of shyness, unaffected as a little child, always artless, gentle, sincere.

His innumerable adventures in the heart of the Sierra were often entirely alone—sometimes a fortnight without sight of another human being. He loved the haunts of Nature with an ardent love. He was never happier than in the midst of the flashing lightning and the reverberating thunder of the mountain storm. The mountains were his kin. He combined in himself the scientific spirit, the instinct of the poet, and the humility and reverence of the Christian disciple. In his lines "To John Muir," C. W. Carruth has written:

O wondrous writer of poetic prose,
Who has come nearer Nature's heart than thou?
Swinging in storm-swept trees while forests bow,
And a grand symphony sings when Boreas blows.

We pay tribute to him as a man of power as well as a poet, who scrupulously selected the work he deemed most worthy, who practiced thoroughness in everything, who insisted on first-hand knowledge, and who loved Nature with an undying love—this great Californian "John of the Mountains."

Leland Stanford

There is nothing unusual about the childhood and youth of Leland Stanford. He tells us he was the middle one of three farmer boys living on their father's farm in Mohawk Valley in New York, between Albany and Schenectady. He attended public school till he was twelve, then continued his education in private schools, principally Cazonovia Seminary. Then he took up residence in Albany, where he read law, and he was admitted to the bar in 1848, though he never achieved eminence as an attorney.

But this same young man became the builder of the first trans-continental railroad, the owner of valuable estates and blooded race horses, the governor of California, a United States Senator, and the founder of a great university. His career was indeed an illustrious one.

The destruction by fire of his law office and library in the spring of 1852, a stunning blow to the young attorney, coupled with the fact that his brothers had become enthusiastic about the Golden State to which they had migrated, caused Leland to turn his face to the West. Meanwhile he had married Jane Lathrop, who proved to be an ideal helpmate and later a true philanthropist in her own name. He arrived in San Francisco in July of that year, and went into partnership with his brothers as a store keeper. Still, nothing spectacular or unusual.

But two things of major consequence were happening—young Stanford had come to California at a very eventful time; and he was quick to see and to seize great opportunities. The Republican Party was founded in 1856, and he was active in the founding of it. Secondly, the building of a railroad to the Pacific had become the dominant issue of the day, and everybody knows how he capitalized on the issue. He was soon deeply engrossed in both politics and business.

Before he was yet thirty-eight years old, Leland Stanford was inaugurated "War Governor" of California, First Republican governor of the state, though he did not continue in office to the end of the struggle. His spirit of loyalty to the Union is expressed in his inaugural:

"Every one of us," he declared, "should feel that we are but guardians holding our lives and our fortunes in trust for the protection of our Government, around which cluster the anxious hopes and fears of millions who have grown with its growth and strengthened with its strength."

Unquestionably Stanford's greatest material achievement was his leading part in the building of the Pacific Railroad. How he and his associates of the "Big Four" mixed politics, both in California and Washington, with business and high finance is no concern of ours here. The road was built, the fortune was made, the first president of the Central Pacific Railroad did become United States Senator.

"There is a destiny that shapes our ends, rough hew them as

Twelve Apostles of California

we may." As it was the destruction of young Stanford's library that caused him to turn toward California, it was an infinitely greater loss that resulted in the crowning event of his life. The crushing blow of the death of their only son while yet a mere youth released hidden fountains of affection in the hearts of his parents for all youth, creating in them a determination to live for humanity. Then it was that the seed thought of founding a university germinated. The formal opening of Leland Stanford, Jr. University, on the first of October, 1891, marked an epoch in the history of higher education, not only in California but in all western America. When President David Starr Jordan told of his belief that "A generous education should be the birthright of every man and woman in America," Stanford expressed the wish that those words might be one of the mottoes of the University.

It was this historic event, the founding of a great, well-endowed university, that earned for Leland Stanford an honored place among the Apostles of California. The salutary influence of such an act goes on and on and never ends.

David Starr Jordan

In the broad field of education, from kindergarten to full-fledged university, California would be unwilling to accept second place to any other state: education has come to be one of her major concerns. Many worthy leaders present themselves as candidates for the honor of apostleship. To mention only a few, there are John Swett, founder of the modern free public school system; Joseph Le Conte, beloved State University professor, who happily combined his science with a rare appreciation of nature and ability to write so gracefully; Benjamin Ide Wheeler, classical scholar and eminent university administrator; Josiah Royce, a native son who at Harvard University became one of America's greatest philosophers.

But, gladly according well-merited recognition to each of these, and still other notables, I am constrained to name as Apostle to California David Starr Jordan, whose acknowledged mastery in the field of science was surpassed by his stature as a scholar, and whose ripe scholarship was eclipsed by Jordan, the man.

When Leland and Jane Stanford, grief-stricken by the death of their only son, while yet a mere boy, decided to found a university as an expression of their purpose to live for humanity, they were led to select Dr. Jordan, then a professor in Indiana University, forty years of age, as its academic head. To him it was thus given to be the first president of the Leland Stanford, Jr. University in California, and to shape its policies and guide its destinies as no other can hope ever to do. From the opening in 1891 until his retirement to become Chancellor in 1913 he continued as president.

An adopted Californian, his deep love for the state was well matched by his belief in her destiny as told in his own words in his *California and the Californians* (1907):

California is the most cosmopolitan of all the states of the Union, and such she will remain. Whatever the fates may bring her, her people will be tolerant, hopeful and adequate, sure of themselves, masters of the present, fearless of the future.

Jordan's life, as he himself expressed it, was three-fold: he was a naturalist and explorer, for the love of it; secondly, a teacher, also for the love of it; and thirdly, from a sense of duty, a minor prophet of democracy. But his expression was far too modest: he was all that—and much more.

His mind was the mind of an intellectual leader: his soul was the soul of a poet. In the scientific field of genetics and the specialized study of ichthyology he was an eminent scholar; in the realm of personal morality he fought the good fight of sobriety and self-mastery. He lectured on "The Ascent of the Matterhorn"; he also lectured on "The Clean Life." A man of liberal thought, he believed in the efficacy of religion as the sustaining force of morality. Whether scaling the mountain heights, or playing on the faculty baseball team; whether exploring the mysteries of science or expounding the principles of democracy or the gospel of international peace; he was always an exemplar of the doctrine of the sound mind in the sound body.

Since a great university ranks among the most enduring of all human institutions, the influence of Jordan's guidance at Stanford

Twelve Apostles of California

is beyond computation. Here is one of his many statements bearing on the usefulness of the university:

Wisdom, virtue, and religion alike, it is the province of of the university to cultivate and intensify. It can accept no shams in wisdom, still less in virtue or in religion; but a life without these is the greatest sham of all.

Jordan's love for fair play and good sportsmanship showed wider scope in his hatred for war and deep yearning for universal peace. His self-mastery would not tolerate impulsiveness but found expression in the patient optimism and philosophic attitude of the humble learner. His great autobiography, *The Days of a Man*, is a remarkable product of a remarkable person. Because of the enduring quality of the work he did as educator, scientist, administrator, prophet of democracy, champion of the clean life, David Starr Jordan is saluted apostle of California. He was a man to match our mountains.

Hubert Howe Bancroft

Of all the numerous historians of California probably none came in for more of both praise and dispraise than Hubert Howe Bancroft. In the phrase of a writer who may be regarded as typical of many, his impressive shelf of the "Thirty-nine volumes of Western History stands today as a brilliant monument to the inspiration and perseverance of one man." At the opposite pole stands a well-known editor who, referring to Bancroft's assistants, the real authors of the history, called them "a horde of hack writers." A reviewer of John W. Caughey's biography of Bancroft headlines him as "the most prodigious historian since Thucydides"; by some he was savagely attacked; Bancroft referred to himself as an artisan.

Regardless of the widely divergent opinions concerning his methods and his personal ability as a writer, the product of his labors does stand today as "a great monument to the industry, foresight, and perserverance of Hubert Howe Bancroft and his faithful assistants." But it is not this alone that constitutes the worthiness of Bancroft to be included in the group of the Twelve Apostles of California.

In 1852 the young man, a native of Ohio, in company with George Kenny was sent out to the Empire State of the Pacific to set up a small bookshop. After a motley, uninspired career of three years, with funds advanced by his sister, he established a bookstore on Montgomery Street, San Francisco. His business grew rapidly, he moved to Market Street, where his commercial success became marked.

In 1859 his editor, William H. Knight, was requested to assemble the books in the store that dealt with the West: more than fifty volumes were brought to his desk. That was the very beginning of the famous Bancroft Library. He decided to add more to this nucleus. He tells us that when the collection reached 1,000 volumes he fancied he had them all. But after he "rummaged the enormous stocks of second-hand books in London and Paris," and he had 5,000, he saw that his collection was but begun!

Then Bancroft reached the determination to make his library of Western Americana as complete as possible. He employed agents to scout for books in the book marts of the world—high price was to be no deterrent. By 1869 he had accumulated 16,000 books and pamphlets.

Then he began his literary labors, while collecting continued at accelerated pace. Perceiving the need for a fireproof library building, he selected a site out on Valencia Street, and the brick structure erected there was for many years the home of the Bancroft Library. His amazing literary project unfolded gradually—otherwise courage to undertake it would have failed him. How he obtained his original source materials—archives, documents, diaries, letters, dictations from pioneers, borrowed family papers—is itself a fascinating story but not essential to present purposes.

The writing of the Bancroft volumes was finally completed; but our chief concern is with the Bancroft Library, which the owner offered for sale. It then contained between 50,000 and 60,000 items—books, pamphlets, manuscripts, and maps. Ultimately it was acquired by purchase by the state for the University of California. "incomparably superior to any other existing collection as a mine of primary historical material for all Western America," the Official

Twelve Apostles of California

Report stated, "a collection which could not even remotely be imitated, at no matter what cost . . ."

Whatever one's estimate of the permanent value of the writings of Hubert Howe Bancroft may be—it is generally conceded they are indispensable to all more recent and future historians of the area—it is the Bancroft Library, located on the beautiful campus of the University of California at Berkeley, that marks its distinguished founder as an Apostle of California. As a continuing institution of splendor and highest rank, becoming larger and more important with each passing year, sustained by the University and the state, guided by inspiring directors like Herbert Bolton and George Hammond, its already great influence is destined to increase indefinitely, adding its benefits to a grateful posterity.

I must accord to Hubert Howe Bancroft an honored place as one of the Twelve.

Will Rogers

Will Rogers, "Mayor of Beverly Hills," was as modest as a shy young maiden, always held an extremely modest opinion of himself. "Shucks!" he said, "I was just an old cow-hand that had a little luck. Why all this here fuss about me?" But at the time of his death in 1935, the editor of the *Los Angeles Times* expressed the opinion of millions when he said: "it would be difficult to find anywhere in the world a man who had so many friends."

When Will and Betty Rogers found opportunity to make their home in California they were delighted: it was at Beverly Hills that they established the first home they ever owned, and dearly did they love it. Will confessed the best thing he ever did was to marry Betty. His devotion to her and to their children was complete.

If there was anything about himself that he bragged about it was the Indian blood in his veins. "My father was one-eighth Cherokee and my mother one-quarter Cherokee," he said, "which I figure makes me about one-eighth cigar-store Injun." He playfully deflated the pride of members of "first families" dating back to the *Mayflower* by remarking with his characteristic grin, "My ancestors met the *Mayflower* when she came in."

The fabulous career of Will Rogers as an entertainer, on the radio, and in motion pictures—to say nothing of his lectures and his writings—is too familiar to require here even the briefest recital.

I have been reading and pondering the Gospel according to Will Rogers—its is humorous, happy, and hallowed. It teaches charitable judgment, social justice, and human brotherhood. It makes no invidious distinctions between persons and holds every species of sham up to scorn. It boldly declares that selfishness is the one thing that's wrong with all of us. Its homely philosophy is the good-natured wisdom of a sage, couched in language that everybody can understand. Its inimitable author drew inspiration from the wholesome life of his own home and from the good he saw in men in high estate and low, remaining always "resolutely unsophisticated." As a writer said; "Rogers was simply great and greatly simple."

Many and expressive were the nick-names he earned. As a young showman he was "The Cherokee Kid"; then he was "The Cowboy Philosopher"; "The Prince of Wit and Wisdom"; "Court Jester of the Nation"; "Congressman at Large"; "Ambassador of Good Will." And he earned them all. Because of his store of pertinent information and his deep understanding, he was called by L. H. Robbins "the apotheosis of the common man and the spokesman for the nation's horse sense. He was *Vox Populi* in person."

The tragic death of Will Rogers (with Wiley Post) in the airplane crash near Point Barrow in distant Alaska, brought sorrow to millions. He had expressed the wish in a lecture several years before that his epitaph should read: "I joked about every prominent man, but I never met a man I didn't like."

If there was something unique about other great Californians—and most certainly there was—the life of Will Rogers must be characterized as uniquely unique. I cannot do less than acclaim him an apostle of California. It was Conrad Nagel who applied to him the immortal lines of Shakespeare:

His life was gentle, and the elements
So mixed in him that Nature might stand up
And say to all the world; "This was a man."

Twelve Apostles of California

Frank Augustus Miller

In the newly-founded town of Riverside, in Southern California, Frank Miller had the deep satisfaction of bringing to realization and of developing his dream of a quiet caravansary in which should be embodied the romantic atmosphere, the hospitable spirit, and the special charm of the early California at the time when the Franciscan padres were dominant.

The Mission Inn did not spring into being suddenly, full-grown—quite the opposite. First there was the Glenwood Cottage, then came the Glenwood Tavern, followed by the Glenwood Hotel, and the Glenwood Mission Inn, finally, The Mission Inn as we know it. It was always in process of development. It grew piece by piece through a period of many years. First the original adobe family home, then the old frame buildings, at length the brick, stone, and concrete. But from the beginning the spirit that pervades the place was the same; it is best described by the inscription which greets one and all over the door, "Enter, friend, this is your house."

Frank Miller was a native of Wisconsin, born in June, 1857. As a youth he came to California in 1873, with his parents, two sisters and a brother. His father, Captain C. C. Miller, a civil engineer, in lieu of back salary for services acquired the block of land in Riverside, where the original adobe house became the family home. This adobe structure, which Frank helped to build, was destined to become a hotel, humble forerunner of the celebrated Mission Inn.

The Riverside Mission Inn is a realization of Frank Augustus Miller's dream. It embodies much of his love of the beautiful, much of the simplicity of his life, much of his unassuming spirit of friendliness and hospitality, much of his deep love for human brotherhood. No sentence of mine could do justice to its innumerable features, many of them unique, the grand *ensemble* being charmingly delightful with its atmosphere of inviting hospitality that happily blends a spirit of true democracy with a richness of regal splendor.

But the interests of Frank Miller extended far beyond the Mission Inn or the city of Riverside. True, he became the first

citizen of his community—but that was not all. As a staunch advocate of world peace and international friendship, his influence extended to the ends of the earth. Emperor Hirohito bestowed upon him membership in the Order of the Rising Sun; the French government honored him as a connoisseur of art. Men of letters repaired to the Inn to write; it was there that Carrie Jacobs Bond composed "The End of a Perfect Day"; persuaded by Jacob Riis he established the world-famous Easter Sunrise Service at the summit of Mount Rubidoux; the amazing hotel has been host to five United States presidents, as well as to high officials, renowned literati, and distinguished clerics from many lands.

But still that is not all. The dedication of the Master of the Inn to world friendship amounted to a consuming passion. It set in motion forces and influences that know no end. It was he who sponsored the Institute of International Relations, later known as the Institute of World Affairs, whose annual meetings through three decades at the Inn under the guidance of Rufus B. von KleinSmid, have attracted and continue to attract eminent advocates of universal peace and thus help to create a public sentiment of incalculable power in advancing the paramount cause of the present age. Miller it was who envisaged the fruition of this noble cause as humanity's highest goal.

Frank Augustus Miller, who called himself merely a "boardinghouse keeper," was a simple, common Christian gentleman, with humility and dedication, without dogmatism and intolerance. Many were the tributes paid him following his death on the 15th of June, 1935. He died as he had lived, still striving for the great goal of peace and brotherhood. In his eulogy Harry Chandler, publisher of the *Los Angeles Times*, spoke these words:

So long as the Easter sun rises over the rocky peak of Rubidoux, so long as this city of his heart remains, so long as peace and international brotherhood endure as an ideal of humankind, so long will his spirit live.

Here was a man who represented California at her best, worthy to be named a true Apostle.



—From the Author's Collection

DAVID STARR JORDAN



—From the Author's Collection

HUBERT HOWE BANCROFT



—From the Author's Collection

WILL ROGERS



—From the Author's Collection

FRANK AUGUSTUS MILLER

Twelve Apostles of California

Seventy Disciples

Having had the boldness to suggest Twelve Apostles of California, my imagination was stimulated to range still more widely. Recalling that I had read somewhere in the New Testament about Seventy Disciples, I looked up the reference, and this is what I found, in the tenth chapter of the book of Luke:

After that the Lord commissioned other seventy disciples, sending them in front of him two by two to every town and place that he intended to visit himself.

Then I reflected, if Twelve Apostles of California can be named, cannot Seventy Disciples be found also? The answer was an unequivocal affirmative. But the difficulty in selecting them, almost insuperable, is two-fold: first, that of limiting the number to seventy; second, that of deciding who, among the countless Californians, by their lives and their works, were best qualified to receive such a commission.

But, giving my unbridled imagination free scope, I have made the venture, knowing full well that numerous other leaders also possess high qualifications, and that my own list could not possibly be expected to satisfy other writers. Craving a charitable view on the part of my critics, I have decided to nominate the Seventy. In a purely arbitrary way, however, with a view to making the list more widely representative, I have placed the selections under ten groupings with seven men in each group. Since it is obviously impossible in this paper to set forth even the slightest detail concerning each of the Seventy, I have contented myself with adding simply a title or identifying phrase, to each name. Here are my proposals for the Seventy Disciples of California.

I. Exploration and Discovery.

Juan Rodríguez Cabrillo, discoverer of Alta California.

Francis Drake, daring British navigator who founded the first New England.

Sebastian Vizcaíno, who explored and described Monterey Bay.

Juan Bautista de Anza, energetic explorer who discovered a land route into the northwest.

Joseph Reddeford Walker, towering mountain man of an heroic age.

George Vancouver, distinguished English visitor in 1792.

Cristopher ("Kit") Carson, who as "Nestor of Rocky Mountains," pointed the way.

II. *Religion and Philosophy.*

Francisco Palóu, loving disciple and author of the *Life of Junípero Serra*.

Fermin Francisco de Lasuén, successor of Serra and exemplar of fidelity.

William Taylor, Street Preacher of San Francisco and Bishop of Africa.

Martin Clock Briggs, "Methodist Trumpeter of California."

Sadoc Alemany, eminent archbishop of the Catholic Church.

Josiah Royce, native son, distinguished teacher, and eminent philosopher.

Zephyrin Engelhardt, historian of the Franciscan Missions.

III. *Military Leaders—Army and Navy.*

Gaspar de Portolá, first military and civil governor of Alta California.

John Charles Frémont, known as the "Pathfinder."

William B. Ide, "Commander-in-chief" of the Bear Flag Party.

John Drake Sloat, American conqueror of Monterey in 1846.

Robert Field Stockton, militant commodore who led in the American conquest.

Stephen Watts Kearney, commander of the Army of the West.

Bennet Riley, patriotic military governor in the days of '49.

IV. *Pioneer Settlers.*

Abel Stearns, master of a princely domain in Southern California.

Twelve Apostles of California

John Marsh, "California's Trail Blazer on Six Frontiers,"
"First Doctor."

Peter Lassen, early American settler in Northern California.

Jonathan Trumbull ("Juan José") Warner, called "George Washington the Second."

Samuel Brannan, enterprising leader, California's first millionaire.

Cornelius Cole, distinguished centenarian and United States Senator.

William Lewis Manly, courageous "Hero of Death Valley."

V. *Politics and Government.*

Antonio María Bucareli, most influential of the Viceroy's of New Spain.

José de Galvez, masterful visitor-general with a vision of the north.

Thomas Oliver Larkin, Consul of United States to California.

Stephen Johnson Field, eminent justice of the Supreme Court.

Henry George, prophet-economist, champion of the single tax.

Stephen Mallory White, called "Father of Los Angeles Harbor."

Hiram W. Johnson, Lincoln-Roosevelt Reform Governor of California.

VI. *Literature, Journalism and Art.*

Francis Bret Harte, "Prince of Song and Story."

Samuel Langhorne Clemens ("Mark Twain"), inimitable American humorist.

Cincinnatus Heine ("Joaquin Miller") California's own "Poet of the Sierras."

William Keith, "Our wizard of the tinted brush."

Edwin Markham, Nature's nobleman, author of "The Man with the Hoe."

Chester Harvey Rowell, editor, publicist, statesman-like leader.

Herbert Eugene Bolton, tireless historian, inspiring teacher of teachers.

VII. *Education.*

John C. Pelton, pioneer of public education in San Francisco.

John Swett, champion of the free public school.

Daniel Coit Gilman, who became one of the world's greatest university administrators.

Joseph LeConte, eminent scientist, nature lover, noble citizen.

Benjamin Ide Wheeler, classic scholar, distinguished administrator.

David Prescott Barrows, political scientist, major-general, loyal administrator.

Vernon Lyman Kellogg, zoologist, Relief Administrator, with Herbert Hoover in Europe.

VIII. *Transportation and Industry.*

William Tell Coleman, "Old Vigilante," leader of supreme courage and patriotic devotion.

William Russell, whose dream brought the Pony Express.

Theodore Dehone Judah, "Engineering wizard of the West."

Horace Davis, educator, agricultural leader, writer.

Irving Scott, pioneer in industry in San Francisco.

Claus Spreckels, forerunner in the production and refinement of sugar.

Collis Potter Huntington, powerful railroad magnate.

IX. *Science and Invention.*

George Davidson, called the "Nestor of California Geographers."

Luther Burbank, wizard in the breeding of plants.

John Branner, eminent scientist, university administrator.

George Ellery Hale, wide-visioned astronomer, "Priest of the Sun."

Robert Andrews Millikan, renowned physicist, Nobel Prize winner.

Twelve Apostles of California

Eugene Woldemar Hilgard, distinguished scientist and soil expert.

David Wark Griffith, pioneer actor and director in motion pictures.

X. *Philanthropy and Conservation.*

Adolph Sutro, generous benefactor of San Francisco.

George Chaffey, pioneer in transforming power and in irrigation.

Franklin Knight Lane, California conservationist *par excellence*.

William Kent, reformer, foreshadowing the Central Valley Project.

Henry Edwards Huntington, founder of Huntington Library and Art Gallery.

Meichel Harry DeYoung, enterprising editor, promotor and benefactor.

James Lick, donor of Lick Observatory, on summit of Mt. Hamilton.

One more thing remains to be said. Viewed from the standpoint of biography, or the study of personalities, it will be found that the entire history of California from the beginning of the Spanish period may be included, in bold outline, by a study of the lives and accomplishments of the men I have called the Twelve Apostles, supplemented by a further study of the others listed as the Seventy Disciples of California. Even the most casual contemplation of the entire list will be most convincing evidence of the richness of the heritage.

A good many years ago a friend of mine, John E. Richards, well-known attorney of San Jose, who had a keen interest in the history of California and who won a place among her poets, wrote graceful lines on "The Builders." His first stanza consists in pertinent interrogations. It runs:

Who built the fabric of our State?

Who reared the temple of her fame?

Who are the great, the truly great,

Whose deeds the ages shall proclaim?

In subsequent stanzas he makes mention of a number of individuals who, in his opinion, supply an answer to his questions—most of them are mentioned in this paper. His final stanza pays them high tribute:

These build the fabric of our State
And rear the temple of her fame;
These are the great, the truly great,
Whose deeds the ages shall proclaim.

I trust it may not be deemed over-presumptuous on my part when I venture the thought that any one who is willing to make a sincere study of the lives, deeds, and characters of the twelve men I have called Apostles, and of the seventy I have designated as Disciples of California, will be richly rewarded by a breadth of knowledge and understanding of the entire history of the Golden State, from the earliest beginnings of the Spanish régime down into the dynamic American life of the eventful twentieth century.



A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

By Charles Clark Vernon

[*Editor's Note:* This is the first installment of a four-part serial covering the history of this fascinating section of Southern California from prehistoric times to the present. An introductory chapter on the geography, topography, and geology of the mountain range is omitted, not because it lacks merit, but because most, if not all, of our readers are quite familiar with the beautiful chain of peaks that stretches from Soledad Canyon and the San Fernando Valley to the Cajon Pass, bounded on the south by the San Gabriel Valley and on the north by the Mojave Desert. Surely no one in Southern California is unfamiliar with the sight of the majestic snow-covered peak of Mt. San Antonio or Old Baldy, as it is familiarly known. And surely there are not many Southern Californians who have not enjoyed winter snows or summer sunshine in the resorts of either the northern or southern slopes of the range. There are not so many, to be sure, who have braved the rugged mule trails and footpaths that wind away from the fine paved roads into the lonely inner reaches of these mountains.

The chapters which we shall publish in logical sequence the aboriginal people, the explorations, life in the mountains, and finally the modern development of recreational areas.]

CHAPTER I

THE NATIVE PEOPLE



BEFORE WHITE MEN CAME TO SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA, Shoshone

Indian people inhabited the area in moderate numbers,

living entirely off the land without the aid of agriculture and moving about pretty much at will. While all the Indians were of Shoshone stock, they were broken up into a number of groups only vaguely resembling tribes; but each had its own dialect and some distinguishing characteristics.

Four or five of these Indian groups either inhabited the San Gabriels or spent enough of their time in the mountains annually to justify the designation of the region in which the group ranged as a vague tribal territory. It is with these people that this chapter deals.

There is not abundant information on the native population of Southern California. Many of the tribes became extinct a few generations after their reduction by the missions, and others inter-

married or otherwise quickly lost their separate identity in regard to customs and speech under the new social and economic system imposed by the white man. In studying these unfortunate people, Walker noted that:

Today more than half of the original California groups have not a single representative. For this reason and also because few records were made of the Indians while they were living, it is necessary to go back to the dead past and depend upon archeology for much of the picture of their daily life.¹

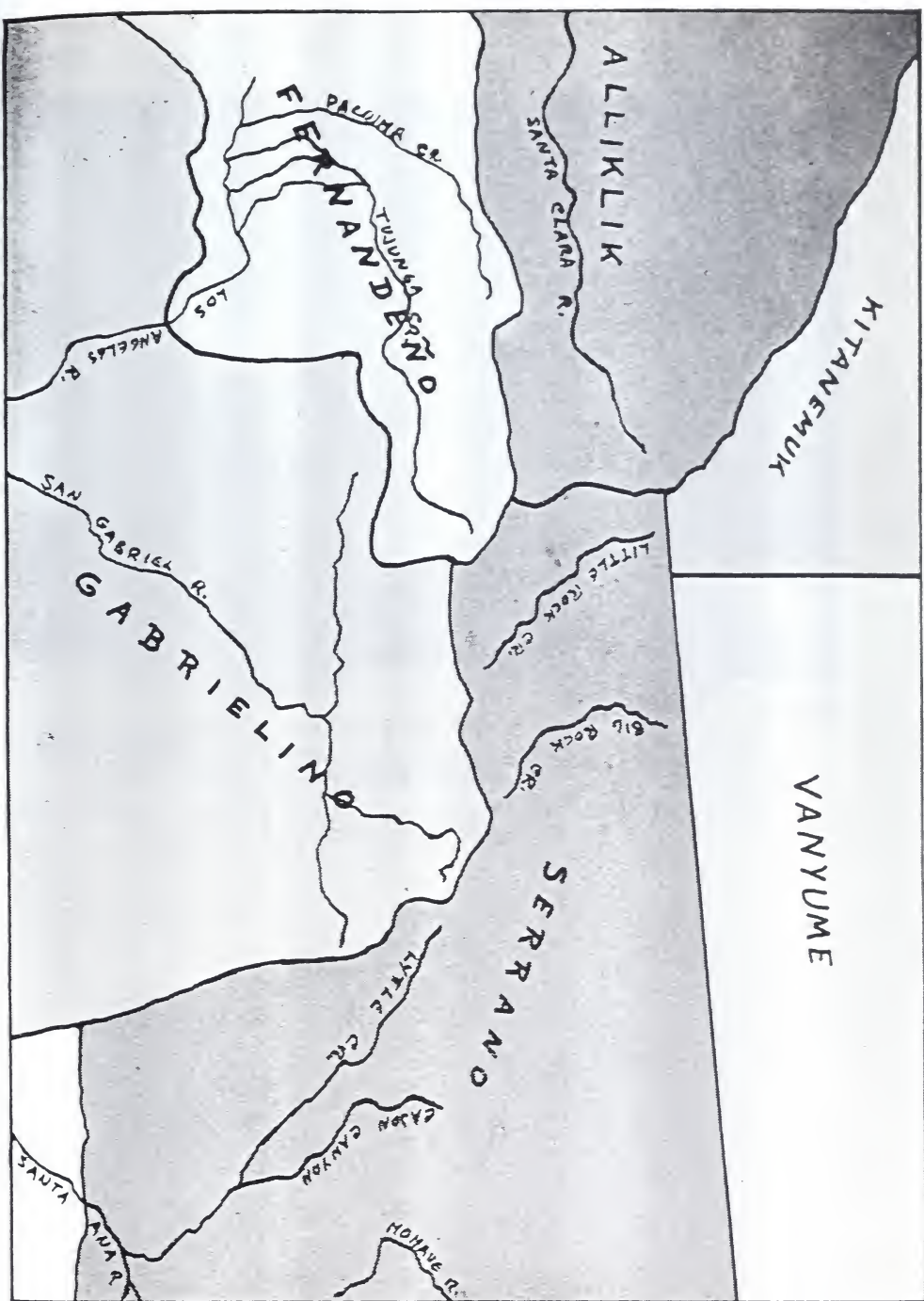
Even archeology has thus far surrendered much less information concerning the Southern California Indian than it has of other native American populations. Perhaps the reason behind this lack of knowledge is that local Indians were never colorful or inspiring, consequently a real interest in them did not develop until comparatively recently, and in the meantime the opportunity to learn more about them rapidly decreased. Such authorities as Kroeber² and Strong³ often speak of interviews with lone descendants of otherwise extinct Indian tribes as the only source of information on some phases of aboriginal life.

Americans have long regarded California Indians as definitely inferior to those of other parts of the continent. Recent studies, however, indicate that this opinion is not entirely justified.

California Indians are now considered the most skillful basket makers of any primitive people in the world, and their pottery is as fine as any in North America. Moreover, the same quality of workmanship and art is found in their pottery or baskets, also marks their ornaments, usually made of sea shells, and stone articles such as arrowheads, knives and even the household mortar and pestle.

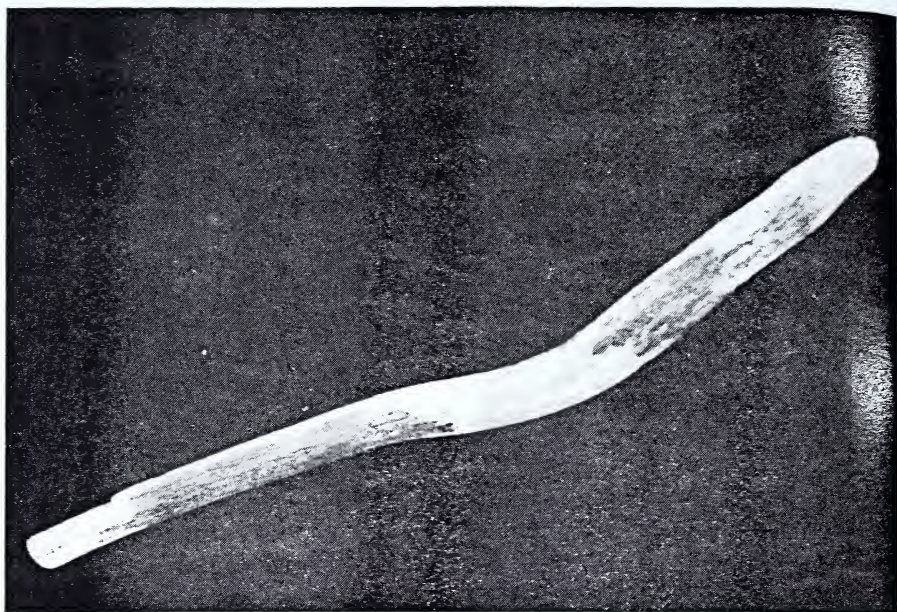
Other accomplishments include the building of board boats, a craft held exclusively by California coastal Indians, the mining of turquoise and soapstone and the use of money in an established system of exchange, the only money system found north of Mexico, among native people.

Other civilized accomplishments were not lacking. Most Southern California Indians employed a vocabulary of about thirty-five hundred words; the average American today uses less than five



INDIAN TRIBES IN THE SAN GABRIEL MOUNTAIN AREA
 Map showing general Aboriginal Indian Territories in the San Gabriel Mountain Area.

From the author's collection



—From the Author's Collection

EE

THE MAKANA

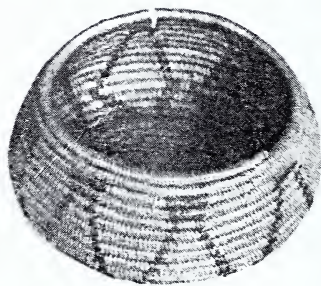
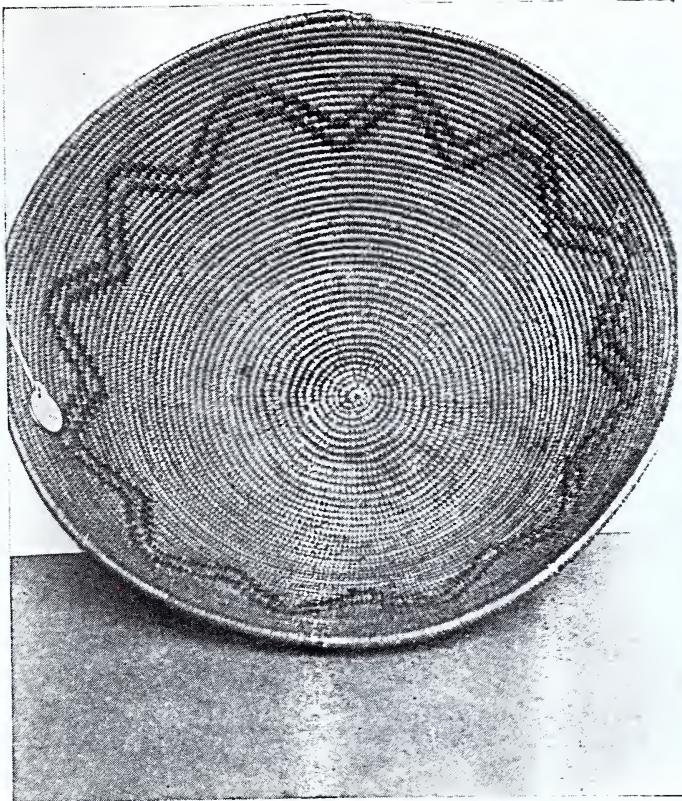
A stick about twenty inches long for throwing at small game. The Indians achieved remarkable accuracy with this hunting weapon, using it mostly for rabbit.



—From the Author's Collection

STONE MORTAR AND PESTLE

This stone mortar with interesting basket hopper attached to the rock with asphaltum is on display at the Southwest Museum.



—From the Author's Collection

GABRIELINO BASKETS

Now on display at the Southwest Museum, these baskets were made by the San Gabriel Mission Indians in the manner of their ancient craft.

hundred. Women held a more nearly equal position in their society than did the wives of the Spanish conquerors; indeed women occasionally rose to the rank of medicine man or chief in the tribal structure. Organized warfare, like well-defined tribal organization, had long ceased to exist when the Spanish arrived in California⁴ The natives were also well advanced in cosmology.

Their remarkable creation myths . . . are probably the most highly developed north of Mexico, and compare favorably with those of early Egypt and Babylon; and their cosmology was not far behind that of the middle ages of Europe. Their phenomenal development during the mission period proves that they were not intellectually inferior but were equal if not superior to most of the tribes in North America.⁵

If all these things are true about the Southern California Indian, what are the white man's reasons for holding the people in contempt? The answer lies partially in the fact that the Shoshoneans failed to fight for their homeland, but sat by, in varying degrees of idleness, and watched their land fall under the Spanish yoke.

More tangible evidence of what whites disdained about Indian life is found by looking at the native as the Spanish saw him first, then as the American saw him. The California Indian was not physically attractive. He was of squatty build and broad, flat face, and lived near the dirt in his daily routine. Few things about the Indian inspired any admiration on the part of his conquerors. Neither his clothing nor shelter were developed beyond the barest essential that climate demanded, and his diet, which included not only the roots that women constantly dug, but lizards, snakes, grasshoppers and ants, was regarded as intolerable.

On the arrival of the Spanish, native tribes were found in a very disjointed state. Every tribe spoke a different dialect, and few were in communication with each other except for a crude sort of trade or exchange of articles; and, as might be expected, unity of action was not only nonexistent, but almost impossible under the prevailing conditions.

When Americans came into California, they found the Indians, then mostly under the mission system, living in a filthy and degrad-

ed manner. Their quarters, little improved from those of aboriginal days, were more crowded than ever before, and the people had a status roughly equivalent to the medieval serf. All this contrasted strikingly to the way of fiercely independent tribes like the Sioux or Apache.

It may be said, then, that the good qualities of the Southern California Indian were thoroughly obscured by his appearance and habits; and that indications of his intelligence, ingenuity and fine craftsmanship were hidden or lost sight of until they were uncovered by extensive studies in recent years.

If these people were not so inferior to other Indians, how does it happen that they failed to develop culturally in some other of the more obvious ways? One answer is that:

At some time during the migrations of . . . hunting peoples from the north the tribes in the United States, now better known as Shoshoneans, were cut off from those going south by hostile tribes north of Mexico—probably Athapascan Apaches and Navajos—and forced to remain in the Great Basin or Plateau, Utah, and other western states; some drifted down into Southern California, where they were afterwards called Gabrielino, Serrano, Cahuilla, Luiseno and Juaneno by Franciscan missionaries, and being almost naked, classed as intellectually inferior to other tribes in North America. However, time has confuted their hasty opinion. They were not inferior but were hemmed in, held in check, and prevented from progressing by hostile peoples on all sides.⁶

The nudity of the Shoshoneans was doubtless caused by the fact that the temperate climate of Southern California simplified both their shelter and clothing habits. The year around they wore nothing but loin cloths for protection against the elements. The absence of cold winters, snow or an extended rainy season made the simplest shelter adequate.

Nature was not satisfied in stopping here. She went on to supply food in abundance for all but the desert Indians. This abundance consisted not of quantity of one given item, but rather a fair supply of many items, fish, game, roots, and many forms of edible vegetation and insects. Thus in California, the failure to obtain of any one of these foods resulted not in general dislocation, war,

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

and upheaval, but in a simple turn to an alternate fare. The supply was so varied that no one misfortune could destroy all its sources.

Because of the nature of the climate and the food supply, Southern California Indians found it easy to move from place to place seasonally. They could go to the foothills in early spring for yucca stalks, to the oak groves for acorns, and to the sea or mountains according to their needs. A stream with an adjacent acorn grove provided the usual setting for an inland village site.

The characteristics of food supply and climate also affected the manner in which Southern California Indians hunted. They used many snares and traps, and showed ingenuity and patience in such pursuits, but did not often participate in the kind of hunt that would entail great amounts of physical activity, exertion, or personal daring.

Since the Indians ranged a general area following the food supply and since they were seldom at war among themselves, exact territorial boundaries for each of the various tribes are difficult to draw. It can be said that a certain area is thought of as Gabrielino land, yet other tribes may have entered it from all sides, while scattered Gabrielino Villages were situated well within territory usually designated as belonging to other groups. It is not surprising that absolute accuracy in determining the land of many tribes is impossible, for often the group is extinct, its language is lost and surviving neighbors lack even word-of-mouth tradition to aid the ethnologist. Nevertheless, certain Southern California regions can be regarded as the general range of the tribe under consideration.

As mentioned above, all the native people of the San Gabriels, as well as those who lived near its boundaries, were of Shoshonean stock. They were related racially and dialectically, and were not strongly alien toward one another. The various tribes had some customs in common yet each retained distinguishing characteristics of its own.

Since it is not always possible, in light of the information now available, to say that certain local tribes absolutely did or did not range the San Gabriels, all of the people who probably turned to the mountains for food or materials will be considered. These were

the Gabrielino, Fernandean, Kawaiisu and the Serrano Shoshoneans including the Serrano proper, the Kitanemuk, and perhaps the Al-liklik tribes.

Of all the native people living near the mountains in aboriginal times, none are so well known as the Gabrielinos or San Gabriel Indians. They were the predominant group on the Los Angeles County plain and were therefore more widely known than the comparatively isolated desert or mountain tribes. Also, they were the Indians of the San Gabriel Mission, from which they derived their name. Reid says there were probably over sixty local villages when the Spanish came, "and each village generally contained from 500 to 1,500 huts."⁷

San Gabriel and San Fernando Indians will be treated as one group because of their similarity in most respects. Those in the area of the San Fernando Mission were called Fernandeanos while those of the San Gabriel Mission were called Gabrielinos, but "there is no known point at which the two differed in customs."⁸

The general territory of the Gabrielinos as it concerns the San Gabriel Mountains is simply "south of the Sierra Madre."⁹ However, they did go into and across the mountains frequently, and evidence of their permanent settlements in the mountains still remains.

On upper Alder Creek where the Loomis ranch is now situated, Indian relics and artifacts of many kinds are unearthed continually. The present operators of the ranch can show visitors two large rocks with a number of permanent mortars ground in each one. They also have in their possession small portable mortars with asphaltum still stuck to the top rim where the hoppers¹⁰ were attached. Most of these relics have been turned up by the plow in the course of years, or by county road grading equipment.¹¹ The ranch is on an old Indian trail, traces of which still remain ascending Indian Ridge toward Mount Pacifico. There can be little doubt that a village once stood in this area so well supplied by nature with the essentials for living.

San Gabriel Canyon, through which an Indian trail also passed, must certainly have been the site of one or more Gabrielino villages.

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

The most notable remaining signs of aboriginal activity in the San Gabriel Canyon area are some rocks still bearing ancient markings. Four such rocks have been found and two remain in their original places. The largest and most interesting boulder is located at the head of a narrow bench across the San Gabriel River from Camp Rincon. It stands beside an old Indian trail which crossed the mountains, and all surfaces of the stone bear hieroglyphics in red dye. The markings are badly faded at present and attract little attention.

A second boulder, with markings better preserved, stands near the upper forks of Bear Creek. The markings are on a sheltered undercut and have escaped the effects of weather. Another rock with Indian markings in Bear Creek now lies buried under sand and debris from the 1938 flood.

The last boulder in this area bearing hieroglyphics stood back in the East Fork, but after being moved lower into the canyon to make way for a road, was washed away from its new position by the same deluge referred to above.

Because floods so often sweep the San Gabriel River, its course is not a region rich in artifacts, but the canyon certainly must have supported at least one village. Roger Dalton believes the Indians regularly made summer camps on the San Gabriel River, but he doubts that any of the camps were permanent.¹²

Early explorers often made records of their contacts with Southern California Indians, but it is difficult sometimes to discover which tribal group the explorer described. Fage's account of local natives provides an example of such references.

There were seven Indian villages met with between San Francisco Salano [near El Toro] and this place. [the Santa Clara River canyon near Castaic.] They were all on the line of march near our camping places, and were quite populous; some of them were so much so, that, had the Indians borne arms, they would have given us great anxiety, for at one place more than 200 of them came out at a time, in tumultuous fashion, to greet us; everywhere they paid us honors, and made gifts which helped greatly to reduce the cost of maintenance for the men, (and permitted part of the supply of foodstuffs which we had to be reserved for other contingencies.¹³

It would seem that all the Indians described here are those of the Los Angeles plain; however Fages soon says:

In the Canada de Santa Clara there are many willows, from the fruit of which in season the Indians know how to make a certain wine which has no unpleasant flavor. The mountaineers know how to make also a kind of sweet paste, and sugar, which is not unworthy of the name among those people.¹⁴

Are these mountaineers of Fages' the same people that he described before, simply located farther into the mountains, or are they actually one of the Serrano groups? Since the expedition's route crossed the Los Angeles plain then went into Santa Clara Pass, it seems probable that Fages first described Gabrielinos, then one of the mountain tribes, but that he was unable to tell one group from the other except for the difference he noted.

It has been pointed out that Southern California Indians were not of a low type at all; and that of all the Indians south of the Tehachapis, the Gabrielinos were the most advanced. They were the wealthiest of all the Shoshoneans in California and dominated culturally, influencing even alien people. Both sand painting and the jimson weed ritual are examples of cultural contributions by the Gabrielino which were taken up by other tribes.¹⁵

Housing was not much of a problem for any of the Southern California Indians. Gabrielinos set poles in the desired form and covered them with tule mats. Walker's description of the jacal is a good one.

In building it, poles were set up into the ground in a circle, and the tops were bent over and tied, leaving an opening at the top for smoke to escape. The door opening was so arranged as to be away from the heat of the sun. To the upright poles, smaller ones were fastened horizontally, and to these was attached a thatch of tules, grass, or brush, or tule matting.

The jacal (hut) gave protection against rain and extreme heat and cold, but was not much used except for sleeping purposes, as the family lived outdoors most of the time, cooking at an outside fireplace and spending the evening there, frequently singing and recounting stories.¹⁶

Clothing, like shelter, was no problem for this Indian. Men

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

usually wore the loin cloth, children. nothing, and women skirts or aprons of tule grass, as summertime attire. To keep dry or warm in the winter, the Indians donned robes of deer or rabbit skin. They wore nothing on their feet except under unusual conditions when sandals were employed and were not moccasin makers. Women adorned themselves with ornaments and beads made from sea shells, perhaps of the same kind that were used as a medium of exchange, as well as other types.

Acorns provided the staple food of these people. They ate certain leaves and herbs, and "fish which was plentiful in the mountain streams was an important item. The catches of the summer season were dried by women and stored away to be eaten when the winter rains had come and when the men no longer made excursions away from the village."¹⁷

Aside from fish, the native people ate most kinds of meat, usually roasted, as well as many kinds of seeds, edible roots, and several varieties of wild berries and nuts. In short, they ate what the land had to offer, and although ingenious in their methods of obtaining and preparing the food, were not farmers until after the Spaniards came.

Although the Gabrielinos showed a high degree of both craftsmanship and ingenuity in many ways. they did not work clay until that craft was introduced by the mission fathers. No pottery has been found that would indicate its use in aboriginal days. This would seem to be a distinct handicap in the pursuit of everyday life, especially since skins were not used as containers either. It is surprising that Gabrielinos did not have clay vessels because neighboring desert Indians with whom the former had contact, made fine, hard pottery for many purposes.

Soapstone bowls, basketry of all sizes and shapes, and vessels "for liquids . . . roughly made of rushes and plastered outside and in with bitumen or pitch."¹⁸ substituted for pottery. The soapstone bowls were quarried and manufactured on Catalina Island, and from there were traded over a large area. They were uniform in thickness and served as fine casseroles in cooking as well as for ordinary purposes.

A utensil common to primitive people almost everywhere is the all-essential mortar and pestle. These the Indian made of granite and sandstone, and fine workmanship was a trademark. Both mortar and pestle were well shaped and uniform, despite the lack of any tools other than crude stone implements, with which to fashion them. The manufacture of portable mortars was commonplace, an accomplishment which again elevates the Gabrielino above many other American tribes.

Deerskins, seeds, and sometimes acorns were items of trade. The currency in use was strung disk beads made from clamshells. Implements such as war clubs of medium size and the makana, a curved flat stick for throwing at small game, were common. Meats were almost universally cut with a cane splint. Knives and spoons were made of shell, or occasionally stone. Cane supplied the Indian with arrowshafts, and gall, boiled down, served as poison for the tips.

Marriage was by purchase, the woman's relatives benefiting in the exchange. Chiefs or prominent men might have more than one wife if they could afford such luxury; the ordinary Indian had one. Adultery was punishable by death, but the general practice was for the offended man simply to announce an exchange of wives; such action was according to law and ended the affair.

Following childbirth, the mother and child were "purified" by periodic steaming, within a hut, for three days. The mother's diet was regulated for about two months after the child was born but "not until the child could run about, was she privileged to share her husband's bed."¹⁹ This last practice is of special significance since it was an important means of keeping the race strong. The custom of requiring a period of two to four years between child-births is one held by many native people, and often typifies the stronger races like the Maori of New Zealand. It gives the mother a chance to recover and prepare herself physically for another child, with the result that both mother and baby are healthier and stronger from the time of conception.

When a person died a period of mourning followed; then the deceased was cremated.²⁰ Destruction of property was practiced

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

after death in a limited degree. If the dead were especially regarded, some property might be destroyed as a part of the mourning ceremony.

These Shoshoneans put much faith in their medicine men. Reid stated that:

Their medical (medicine) men were esteemed as wizards and seers . . . They not only cured diseases, but created them; they poisoned people with herbs and ceremonies, made it rain when required, consulted the good spirit and received answers, changed themselves into the form of divers [sic] animals, and foretold coming events. All this was firmly believed by the people, and in consequence their seers were held in dread and deep reverence.²¹

The Indians seemed to lack the degenerative troubles such as heart disease, cancer and tooth decay from which modern man suffers. Instead they were most often afflicted by fevers, rheumatism or stiffness of the joints, and local inflammations.²² The natives treated disease by various methods involving superstition, old wives remedies, and most important steaming.

Shoshone people throughout California generally used the temescal or steam house not only to cure illness, but in connection with many parts of everyday living. Its use ranged from a place for significant religious ceremonies to an effective method of preparing the Indian for the hunt by temporarily ridding him of body odors.

The temescal was a small hut which was made as tight, and sealed as well, as the Indians knew how. A large, circular fire pit, lined and filled with rocks, occupied the center of the floor. The hut was usually built near a stream or pond.

When the Indian wanted his Turkish bath, whatever the reason, he built a fire in the steam house which warmed the interior and heated the rocks in the fireplace. Water was then poured on the rocks to produce steam, and as fast as rocks could be warmed, more steam was produced. The effect of this was, of course, to cause the Indian to sweat profusely. He remained in the hut for several hours, or as long as he could bear the heat and suffocation, then ran out and plunged into the stream's cool water.

Almost all uses of the temescal were accompanied by ceremonies, most of which were religious in nature. The primary purpose of sweating was to drive wickedness from the body—wickedness being sickness, misfortune or any need for purification. Over a long period of time, the use of the temescal was extended considerably until a wide variety of rather common occurrences were treated by indulgence in a purification ceremony.

The results of this sweating varied with the condition for which the individual went into the hut. If the patient had any sickness accompanied by a fever, the dive into cold water often killed him. The entire populations of villages are known to have perished because temescals were used on the wrong occasion.²³

The Gabrielinos and other Southern California Indians probably had the most advanced religious concepts of any of North America's native people. The following quotation indicates that Shoshone religious beliefs compared more favorably with those of the white man than did their medical practices.

They believed in one god, the maker and creator of all things, whose name was held so sacred among them, as hardly ever to be used; and when used only in a low voice. That name is *Qua-o-ar*. When they have to use the name of the Supreme Being on any ordinary occasion, they substitute in its stead, the word *y-yo-ha-rivg-nain*, or 'The Giver of Life.' . . . God ascended to Heaven immediately afterwards (after creation), where he receives the soul of all who die. They had no bad spirit connected with their creed; and never heard of a "Devil" or "Hell" until the coming of the Spaniards.²⁴

In fact, even after Christianization, they felt that hell was a place for Spaniards and not Indians.

When all the knowledge gained about the Gabrielino is organized, it forms a picture of a simple and happy aboriginal people who were well adjusted to Southern California environment. They lived in peace and their accomplishments were according to necessity. They were in a stone age civilization, but culturally the white man had far less to offer them than he did technologically; and the Southern California Indian, like many others, suffered rather than benefited from his exchange with the Spaniard and

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

American. Perhaps a country must be either too thickly populated by a primitive people or otherwise undesirable, if they are to benefit from invasion by others of a technologically advanced civilization. At any rate the Gabrielino, as well as the other Southern California tribes, was better off in most respects during aboriginal days than at any time during the eighteen hundreds.

While very few important differences existed between most Indian tribes of the Los Angeles plain, their mountain-dwelling brethren developed some customs that contrasted markedly from those of the Gabrielino or Fernandeño. The highland Indian groups were first called Serrano, which means "mountaineer" and was applied generally to all the Shoshoneans who lived in the southern mountains of the coast ranges. It included the Alliklik, Kitanemuk, Vanyume, and Serrano proper. These were individual tribes with distinct differences, even though all were of Shoshonean stock, and all had more customs in common with each other than with lowland tribes around them.²⁵

"The main territory of the Serrano proper was the San Bernardino Mountains and northward into the Mojave Desert for a distance; the San Gabriel Mountains west of San Antonio Peak and a strip of lowland along the San Gabriels from Cucamonga east."²⁶

Serrano cosmogony recorded that the earliest events in their creation myth "occurred at Mount San Antonio where the . . . Serrano . . . first settled in their migration from the north . . .

They afterward extended their settlements to Mount San Gorgonio, . . . and even beyond to Mount San Jacinto."²⁷

"There is another territory that may have been Serrano: the northern slope of the Sierra Madre for some twenty miles west of Mount San Antonio, the region of Sheep, Deadman and Big and Little Rock Creeks. But this is uncertain."²⁸

Although confusion exists as to the exact boundaries of this land, it seems clear that the San Bernardino Mountains were their principal territory, with a smaller number of them making their home in the San Gabriels. Total population of the Serranos in aboriginal times was about fifteen hundred.

There is little question but what Serrano Indians settled in

various places within the San Gabriel Mountains. Chances are that they stayed pretty well in the eastern end of the range, which more closely resembles their more favored San Bernardino Mountains, and no doubt was an easier area for a people to live in the year around. One important Serrano village site is on Lytle Creek, the most easterly canyon in the San Gabriels.

On a hillside bench, not far from where the Lytle Creek hot spring used to flow, stood a grove of giant oaks, beneath which large granite boulders were conveniently scattered. Where a boulder could be found under one of the oaks, Indians put nature's combination to use, suspending a heavy pestle from an overhanging limb and grinding large mortars in the rock. If no oak were handy, the mortar could be operated with the aid of a spring pole, or with the hands alone. These were acorn meal mills of unusually large size. The mortars measured a foot across and the pestles were as long as eighteen inches.²⁹

Time has altered the appearance of this site, but the rocks can be found and examined by a person who knows where to look. However a recent fire has all but obliterated the old landmark, destroying the trees with their tell-tale limb rings where ropes were tied, and altering the face of the hillside. Some of the rocks have been buried and others have had the soil cut away from them by rain and flood, but fire made the most destructive touch, leaving the location difficult to find.

The use of giant mortars and pestles helped differentiate Serranos from their lowland neighbors, for Indians of the valley seemed to rely mainly on the smaller and often portable grinding bowl. As mentioned before, these relatively isolated mountain people differed in more than one way from other Indians.

The Serrano were not a tribe in the sense in which that term is generally used . . . the political unit of the Serrano was the localized lineage which was nearly always autonomous. The entire dialectic group was therefore never politically united, nor do there seem to have been even large portions of it amalgamated . . . The problem of distribution is therefore largely one of locating individual groups, not of plotting tribal domains.³⁰

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

Serrano communities then, existed individually, each one owning its tract on a stream. Kroeber says the permanent settlements were established where the stream emerged from the foothills.

A division into moieties or clans marked the Serrano cultural organization. This was according to religious beliefs, whereby one clan or village would be, for example, of the Wildcat moiety while the other would be Coyote.

The significance of this division can be seen by examining Serrano customs. In aboriginal times there was no intermarriage between Wildcat and Coyote groups,³¹ while each clan, although independent otherwise, depended upon members of the opposite moiety for performance of all ceremonies.³²

Local lowland Indians considered the mountaineers as inferiors,³³ although the reason has not been made clear. Anthropology has lost much knowledge of these people because of "the early breakdown and almost complete disappearance of Serrano culture."³⁴ The census of 1910 numbered them "something over one hundred,"³⁵ total count.

Each group or village had a leader called "Kika." The position was always hereditary, in distinction to at least one other Shoshone tribe which had the richest man assume that post upon the death of an old chief, rather than the chief's descendant.

Ceremonies were held in special tule houses instead of open air enclosures as among the other Southern California Indians,³⁶ and an interesting exchange occurred when rituals were held since each clan possessed only part of the equipment necessary for the rite, and tradition decreed that both groups must be present.

Like the Gabrielino, their main food source was acorns which were stored outside, above the ground. Also, they built dwellings of poles and tule mats. The dead were cremated. Unlike Gabrielinos, the Serranos made fine pottery which they did not paint. They practiced an adolescent ceremony for the girls and an initiation rite for the boys, in accordance with the common Shoshone custom. Upon the death of a Serrano, his fellow tribesmen made images which they subsequently destroyed at the mourning ritual. These practices also show a variance from the Gabrielino.

Tattooing was common in aboriginal days. Many California Indian tribes could be identified by their own peculiar patterns, and the Serrano were only one of many groups to practice it. The method of obtaining the typical blue-green marks is interesting.

Tattoo marks are . . . deep blue-green [in] color . . . In primitive times tattooing was universal among both men and women. A puncture was made with a thorn of the mesquite tree, the crushed leaves of which were then rubbed therein until the juice from the leaves was forced deeply into the flesh and an indelible stain was produced.³⁷

Serrano cosmogony was rather typical, as was their sense of good and bad, or morals, which were marked by the Indian's pragmatic outlook plus some natural optimism and faith.

The primitive Indians knew no devil and had no conception of hell or evil in our sense. They judged an act to be good or bad according to its social consequence. Everything contributing to the social benefit was good—contrariwise bad. To them good and evil in our sense were nonexistent.³⁸

Concepts like this might well bear comparison with creeds and subsequent actions of more advanced people, and it should be expected that if the technological aspects of a primitive civilization could be improved, then the people would progress culturally too. Once rid of many pre-scientific concepts and customs, more advanced people might no longer regard the entire culture and all the institutions of backward people as inferior and needing replacement rather than progressive improvement.

The major characteristics which differentiated the Serrano from his lowland brothers were his mountain habitat, his clan or moiety village system, and the rapid and almost complete disappearance of his culture and language with the coming of the white man. Many other differences existed, but these seem most outstanding.

The Kitanemuk were another Shoshone mountain people who probably ranged into the San Gabriels.

Territory of the Kitanemuk was the Upper Tejon and Paso Creeks . . . the streams on the rear side of the Tehachapi Mountains, and the

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

small creeks draining the northern slope of the Liebre and Sawmill Range, with Antelope Valley and the western-most end of the Mojave Desert . . . The bulk of their territory was over the mountains in Southern California . . .³⁹

From Kroeber's outline of their territory, there is no indication that they were more than neighbors to the San Gabriel Mountains, since all their territory lay northwest of the range. However, Garcés tells of Kitanemuk raids against Indians of the upper Santa Clara River (probably Allikliks), and of their putting an enemy chief to death there.⁴⁰ He calls them simply Serranos because of their mountain habitat but Kroeber indicates that they were the Kitanemuk Serranos.⁴¹ It is evident, then, that they ranged at least to the edge of the San Gabriels.

An interesting description of Kitanemuk shelter has been left by Garcés.

The disposition and form of their dwelling-house is as follows: A spacious square inclosure, completed by an archway or covering of mats upon bows of willow, the mats sewn of the same tule, of which material is the roof composed, in which are there some opening for the escape of smoke. It has only two doors, on the east and on the west, and at each of these there is a sentinel all night. Their cloister or corridor consists of several cells or compartments on all four sides wherein they enter to sleep whenever the hour arrives, and at this time each family stays by the fire in front of its own room.⁴²

These were large square community shelters, having individual family rooms on each side surrounding a court, like those built by some other California Indians, but not like those of the Gabrielinos or Serranos, who had separate family huts.

Kitanemuk dialect was similar to that of all mountain groups. They practiced an initiation ritual with jimson weed, a custom probably borrowed from the Gabrielinos. Their basketry was of the San Joaquin drainage type rather than that of Southern California. Seeds were scattered in sacrifice over the fire and over sacred objects, like the Pueblo custom of sprinkling corn. They probably interred corpses, with the memorial burning of property following.⁴³

Garcés has recorded another custom which is an interesting and unusual one.

The captain took a white stone, which he drew out of a bag and threw it on the fire, in order that it should be heated; he withdrew it at the proper time, and braying it well in a stone mortar mixed it with wild tobacco and water till it became as it were a paste. Then he handed me [Garcés] the pestle of the mortar, that also was of stone, in order that I should taste that mess, which I found extremely bitter. I returned him the pestle, which he wetted again, and gave to an old man, who licked it well, though it was with great effort that he was able to swallow that sauce, which all the others successively tasted. My companions the Jama-jabs [Gabrielinos] having tried it were attacked at once with vomitings so violent that I thought one of them would die, which those of the rancheria greeted with laughter. Then the meeting was broken up, for there was no one else who would try it any more . . . I have been able to ascertain that they drink this sort of gruel to cure fatigue, and consequently it is customary to offer it to all their guests.⁴⁴

The Kitanemuk stood between the Gabrielino and Southern Yokuts, geographically and in custom, showing signs of contact with both groups, but most strongly simulating their fellow Shoshoneans. They also served as a transmitter of culture between the Gabrielino and Yokut, not only because of their location which was in a mountain pass, but because of a tendency to stay at home and let others come to them in trade.

The Alliklik Indians complete the tribes of Serrano people that lived in the San Gabriels. They were inhabitants of the western boundary of the mountains, holding the Santa Clara River from a point between Sespe and Piru, along Castaic and probably Pastoria Creeks, and across the mountains to the San Joaquin Valley drainage and adjacent to the Yokut Indians.⁴⁵

These may be the Indians Fages wrote of when he mentioned "mountaineers" of the Santa Clara River.⁴⁶ If so, that would be one of the few references in print to the Alliklik who were never very numerous. What few there were dwindled very rapidly in numbers when taken to the missions San Fernando and San Buenaventura. Those that survived the transplanting intermarried, and their language as well as separate identity was lost in a few gen-

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

erations. Only two or three words of their speech have been preserved, and none of the people.

Information is understandably scarce about the Alliklik, who so quickly became extinct. They may have buried their dead, since their neighbors on the north had this custom; however this is not certain. Other customs or practices they had remain unknown, so for the present this people must simply be remembered as a small group of mountaineers who occupied the upper Santa Clara River.

The Kawaiisu, a Shoshone mountain people who were not one of the Serrano groups, also ranged the San Gabriel Mountains. They lived principally in the Tehachapi Mountains, but some Kawaiisu located in the western Mojave Desert and northern slope of the San Gabriel Mountains.

For some time, it was believed that their territory did not extend south and east into the Mojave; however recent evidence indicates that it did. "There were Kawaiisu . . . at Victorville on the upper Mojave River some years ago who asserted that this was part of their ancient territory, and that they ranged from the west along the base of the Sierra Madre."⁴⁷

If Kroeber's informants were right, then this tribe was among the Indians of the San Gabriels, and had a great area in their territory. Nevertheless, Kawaiisu population in aboriginal times was only about five hundred, and by 1926 Kroeber estimated their surviving population at about one hundred and fifty.

In custom, the Kawaiisu show an odd mixture of those of their neighbors added to a few practices distinctively their own. The most striking of these was their lack of organization on the basis of clans, like the other mountaineers. The Chieftainship depended upon wealth rather than descent, and the Kawaiisu said outright that any rich man could become a chief.⁴⁸ They practiced a mourning ceremony, and property was destroyed at the funeral. Jimson weed was associated with puberty rites and administered to both boys and girls. They placed strong belief in powerful rain doctors.

Other phases of this culture are little known, and details, even of the things mentioned, have yet to be filled in. Their dialect seems to have been like the Paiute and Ute. They made excellent

basketry of the Chemehuvi type, also a fine water bottle; but of other manufactures there is little information.

The Kawaiisu, then, had mingled the customs of two neighbors, one of which was alien to them. Standing between two different peoples, the Kawaiisu formed a sort of wedge, or perhaps a better word is filter. How effective a filter—or wedge, whichever the case—is still an unknown matter, as the white man's knowledge of his red antecedents, especially in California, leaves much to be desired.

The Indians that either ranged or occupied the San Gabriels were both mountaineers and lowlanders. The Serrano groups were mountaineers, the Gabrielinos, lowlanders for the most part; and the Kawaiisu were people who knew both mountains and desert but called the Tehachapis home.

There were never large numbers of Indians settled in the San Gabriels, although its borders, especially, had much to offer. However, there were always settlements scattered along the foothills, in canyon mouths, and beside some of the larger streams.

The mission was the strongest influence on the Indian in bringing about his desertion of the mountains. For the most part the Indians were willing, or at least found it the easiest course, to become a part of the mission's organized community. Thus the mountains lost their aboriginal inhabitants, who left little behind to indicate many years of occupancy.

For some Indians, the mountains had furnished complete subsistence. They afforded shelter, food and other essentials, and were a permanent home. These were mainly Serranos.

To others, the mountains . . . provided good hunting, meat to eat, skins to wear, and, in the chaparral, an unlimited source of food, drink, medicine, even weapons.

The various oaks furnished them acorns, staple all-year-round food. The handsome manzanita, whose invariably crooked branches inspired early Californians to say that it was harder to find a straight manzanita than a perfect woman, gave berries for food and cider. Its leaves were good for bronchites and smoking. The most common plant of the chaparral, the greasewood, produced arrow shafts for brown hunters. The stately yucca—the "candle of god" of the Spanish Californians—gave

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

fiber for Indian nets and ropes. The stems of its young stalks were as edible as asparagus. So, too, the fragrant blooms, when first boiled, were good eating. Yucca seeds could be used as a porridge and the roots made soap. The scarlet berries of the toyon plant, the so-called California holly, were acidly pleasant to Indian palates. A laxative and remedy for rheumatism came from the bark of the coffee berry. Even the plentiful poison oak, called "bad woman" by Spanish-speaking cynics, had some use as a cure for rattlesnake bite.⁴⁹

For many Indian villages, the mountains were also a source of water. Since springs have always been scarce on Southern California plains, streams that issued from the various ranges made possible many important settlements.

The San Gabriels served the native people as a place for permanent habitation, or a source of food, water, and materials. Very different uses than those that present Californians put them to!

NOTES

1. Edwin F. Walker, *Indians of Southern California*, Southwest Museum Leaflet No. 10, Los Angeles, California, 1949, p. 4.
2. A. L. Kroeber, *Handbook of the Indians of California*, Bureau of American Ethnology Bulletin No. 78, Government Printing Office, Washington, D.C. 1925. Kroeber is the prime source for the sections of this chapter dealing with aboriginal Indian customs and society.
3. William Duncan Strong, *Aboriginal Society in Southern California*, University of California Press, Berkeley, California, 1929.
4. Walker, *op. cit.*, pp. 1-2.
5. G. Hazen Shinn, *Shoshonean Days*, privately printed by the Arthur H. Clark Co., Glendale, California, 1941, pp. 29-30.
6. *Ibid.*, p. 29.
7. Hugo Reid, *The Indians of Los Angeles County*, privately printed, Los Angeles, 1926, pp. 2-3.
8. Kroeber, *op. cit.*, p. 620.
9. *Ibid.*, p. 620. Sierra Madre is another name for the San Gabriel Range. See appendix III.
10. A hopper is a funnel-like retainer of woven reed which was glued to the top of mortars to prevent the grain from spilling over the top.
11. Mr. and Mrs. Orval Thomas, interview, Sept. 25, 1950.
12. Roger Dalton, interview, July 26, 1950.
13. Pedro Fages, *A Historical, Political, and Natural Description of California*, Priestly translation, University of California Press, Berkeley, California, 1937, pp. 17-18.
14. *Ibid.*, p. 22.
15. Kroeber, *op. cit.*, pp. 621 f.
16. Walker, *op. cit.*, p. 5.
17. Harold D. Carew, *History of Pasadena and the San Gabriel Valley*, Vol. I, S. J. Clarke Publishing Company, 1930, p. 67.
18. Hugo Reid, *op. cit.*, p. 27.
19. *Ibid.*, p. 16.
20. Kroeber, *op. cit.*, p. 633. The custom of burial was introduced by the mission fathers since the usual custom in aboriginal times was to cremate the remains.

21. Hugo Reid, *op. cit.*, p. 18.
22. *Ibid.*, p. 18.
23. Edwin F. Walker, interview, July 19, 1951.
24. Hugo Reid, *op. cit.*, p. 9.
25. The Gabrielino is so much better known than other Indians who ranged or occupied the San Gabriel Mountains, that the part of this chapter on them is much longer than the parts on each of the Serrano groups, or the Kawaiisu. In many ways, these other Indians were like the Gabrielino, and it will not be necessary to recount such similarities, but instead the ways in which they are believed to have differed from this well known group will be pointed out.
26. Kroeber, *op. cit.*, p. 615.
27. Shinn, *op. cit.*, pp. 35-36.
28. *Ibid.*, p. 616.
29. Thrall, Will H. interview, Aug. 21, 1950. All information on Lytle Creek Indian site is from this interview.
30. Strong, *op. cit.*, p. 6.
31. *Ibid.*, p. 23.
32. *Ibid.*, p. 329.
33. Shinn, *op. cit.*, p. 24.
34. Strong, *op. cit.*, p. 329.
35. *Loc. cit.*
36. *Ibid.*, p. 618.
37. Shinn, *op. cit.*, pp. 23-24.
38. *Ibid.*, p. 41.
39. Kroeber, *op. cit.*, pp. 611-12.
40. Garcés, *op. cit.*, p. 302.
41. Kroeber, *op. cit.*, p. 613.
42. Garcés, *op. cit.*, pp. 273-74.
43. Kroeber, *op. cit.*, pp. 612-13.
44. Garcés, *op. cit.*, pp. 277-78.
45. Kroeber, *op. cit.*, p. 613.
46. Fages, *op. cit.*, p. 22. See pp. 45 in this paper for passage from Fages.
47. Kroeber, *op. cit.*, p. 602.
48. *Ibid.*, p. 603.
49. Robinson, *op. cit.*, pp. 7-8.



The Chamber of Commerce Cornerstones: *Milestones in Los Angeles Progress*

By John E. Baur



AS SYMBOLS, CORNERSTONES ARE ALWAYS IMPORTANT. They represent both a firm beginning and a strong hope. It is therefore appropriate that the relics placed in cornerstones be both emblematic and interesting. The Western historian, John W. Caughey, has said that gold is the cornerstone of California, and so entitled a book. In the social and economic development of Southern California, the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce has been a cornerstone for nearly seven decades. Recently the cornerstone of its building was removed and opened. This act in itself is evidence of great success, for with the relentless growth of Southern California, the Chamber has had to move its quarters six times since the organization was founded in October, 1888. During the spring of 1956 the cornerstone of the seventh building will be sealed at the new site, 400 South Bixel.

When the metal box inside the older stone was opened a few weeks ago, it was found to contain articles placed in the Chamber's fifth building in 1903, and later sealed in the present stone when it was laid on March 28, 1924. In the latter year, other items characteristic of the more modern period were added. For the historian and antiquarian, these articles are not of great rarity or high intrinsic value, except for a few, such as the first pamphlet issued by the Chamber in December, 1888, entitled *Southern California and Los Angeles City and County*. Measuring six by twelve inches, its 36 pages stressed the mild climate, the barely exploited mineral and petroleum resources, and the role of agriculture. Though they are obtainable, scattered elsewhere, these papers, photographs, and

mementoes here assembled are important because they reflect what Los Angeles was in 1903 and the contents added exactly 21 years later show how the hopes, expectations and accomplishments of the Chamber and the region it served had changed between the two eras.

On March 28, 1903, the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce was a small organization, though already it had grown rapidly in its fifteen years, from 150 charter members to a 1903 enrollment of 1,200. When the Chamber had been founded with E. W. Jones, president, W. H. Workman, first vice-president, Harrison Gray Otis, second vice-president, S. B. Lewis, third vice-president, John L. Redick, treasurer, and Thomas A. Lewis, secretary, it took courageous men to see much future for Los Angeles, a city not yet recovered from the economic shock following the "Boom of the Eighties." Yet, despite the temporary exodus of disappointed newcomers who did not really know the area, few Angelenos believed their city would not prove a promised land. The Chamber could proclaim in its first publication that here was "the healthiest city in the world," and with due enthusiasm describe such recent improvements as the new electric light system, suburban railroads and cultural and educational developments.

During the 'nineties Los Angeles quickly recovered the population and prosperity lost after the Boom. Businessmen supported the Chamber so effectively that it was soon engaged in numerous activities, particularly serving as an information clearinghouse for ranchers new both to their livelihood and the country. The Chamber was unique in that its membership was made up not only of businessmen, but of any citizens interested in civic improvement. Before the new century began it could already claim that no similar organization in the nation had so large a membership in proportion to the community's size, (in 1900 Los Angeles had a population of 102,000) and efforts had begun for its activities to embrace all Southern California.

With both Los Angeles and the Chamber on the forward move, "moving days" would be frequent for the body. Its temporary headquarters had been in the old Board of Trade building on First

Milestones in Los Angeles Progress

and Broadway. Then in 1889, the first move was made, to the second floor of a building on First Street adjoining the Times Building. There, the staff had office space, several anterooms, and a small assembly hall. Only fourteen months were to be spent in this location, however, for more room was needed, so in March, 1890, the Chamber moved to larger quarters in the second story of the Mott Market on Main Street between First and Second streets. Now a permanent exhibit of local products could be installed, since there were galleries, storerooms, a meeting room, offices, and a hall seating 500. Soon even these accommodations proved too small, and in 1894 the Chamber was located in the Mason Building on the southeast corner of Fourth and Broadway. The main portion of this structure was taken up with an exhibit room 80 by 120 feet. Here, displays of Southern California's principal products—fresh, dried, canned, and crystallized fruits—could be seen by tens of thousands of tourists. The famous walnut elephant and the comprehensive Palmer Collection of Southwestern Indian antiquities were popular attractions.

By 1903, the Chamber had to move once more. At that time it had issued over 40 publications with a circulation of nearly a million. More than 50,000 colored stickers bearing the slogan "For Information about Southern California Write to the Chamber of Commerce, Los Angeles," had been distributed. The energetic young institution had grown to over 1,200 members and was known throughout the United States. Meanwhile, it had participated in every American world's fair since the Columbian Exposition at Chicago in 1893 and in several citrus fairs it had sponsored. Exhibits had even reached Hamburg, Paris and Guatemala. Numbering by 1903 over a million, the Chamber's visitors had come from every state and every section of the earth. The "California on Wheels" exhibit, an ingenious innovation in advertising, had been displayed before another million Americans outside the state. Building a new harbor, and at the threshold of the automobile age which would transform the West, Los Angeles has grown to 136,000, with its building permits for 1903 valued at \$13,046,338 and annual bank clearances \$307,316,530. Thus it was inevitable that the Chamber change quarters again. A new structure containing 21,000



Painting Plate Courtesy Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce

OPENING OF CORNERSTONE

A copper box, buried in March, 1924, was unearthed from the cornerstone of the present Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce building for an examination of its contents prior to their placement in the cornerstone of the new Chamber home at Fourth and Bixel Streets. A portion of the crowd attending the ceremonies are shown here at the time the box was opened. In the front row (left to right) are Chamber Director J. E. Fishburn, Jr., president of the Historical Society of Southern California; 1930 Chamber President John C. Austin, architect for the present building at 12th and Broadway; 1921 Chamber President Sylvester Weaver, who gave the official dedication speech when the cornerstone was put into place in 1924; and 1955 Chamber President Carl P. Miller. Other Chamber Directors, officials and guests pictured are Milton J. Brock, Sr., Dr. Ben Frees, Donald R. Lewis, D. L. Marlett, Sidney Hordenaker, Earle M. Jorgensen, George B. Gose, Arthur D. Paxton, Roy M. Hagen, Lee M. Merriman, Charles Detoy, William B. Cokerly, Jr., John W. Padden, F. R. Wilcox and Terrell C. Drinkwater.

Milestones in Los Angeles Progress

crease in circulation. Also included was the *Herald's* publication, *To Our Friends: Greetings*, which explained that paper's organization; accompanying it were two issues of the journal. An advertisement on the back page of the Sunday *Herald*, March 29, by W. M. Garland & Co. predicted "Population Los Angeles 1910—250,000." Already Garland's prophecies had become a local tradition, and in this one he underestimated the facts. The census fixed the 1910 figure at 319,198! Papers of early spring, 1903, mirrored Los Angeles' increasing industrial complexion. The Los Angeles *Mining Review*, the *Union Labor News*, and the *California Independent*, selected for the cornerstone, gave evidence of this. In a city becoming cosmopolitan, such a publication as the *Hotel Gazette* rightly was included, as was the foreign-language press, represented by *Germania* and *L'Union Nouvelle*. Aware the cornerstone would perpetuate the story, the Sunday *Times* of March 29, Part V, traced the Chamber's history, while the *Record* did likewise. Even *The Wireless* of Avalon went inside the metal box. As agriculture was still the pace-setter for Southern California, we find the *California Cultivator* of March 27 and the *Pacific Fruit World* dated the next day.

To us of the late 'fifties, one of the most amusing bits of journalism inspired by the cornerstone ceremonies appeared in Los Angeles' official legal paper, the *Daily Journal*, for March 28. It must have brought a chuckle to many an Angeleno, and for slightly different reasons, it would also to their grandchildren of 1956. They will agree that the doggerel poet was by far a better prophet. Entitled "Salvo!" and addressed to the "Man Who Opens the Cornerstone of the Chamber of Commerce," it was published right in the center of Page One:

Good morning, sir! Good afternoon, or if you please, good night!

I'm handicapped, because, you see, I don't know which is right.

You have opened this, the cornerstone—your motive I know not,

I trust it was an honest one that brought you to this spot.

Of course, you know the date when this huge stone was set in place.

You have the size of building and an idea of its grace.

The hands that wrought, the brain that thought, the lips that
formed the speech.

Have long ago been silenced and the grave is over each.

We lived, we wrote, we battled, and we triumphed, sometimes
too.

We fancied—yes, we fancy now that we are seeing you.

Your date may be 2000 (A.D. account we use,

Our calendar won't work quite right, for time its bound to
lose).

We wonder if you navigate the air in swift machines.

We wonder if you still enjoy a plate of pork and beans.

We wonder if you know the scenes beyond the northern ice.

We wonder if your women folks are still afraid of mice.

We'd like to know if you converse sub-oceans by a 'phone.

We'd like to know if trousers are the garb of men alone.

We'd like to know if you have signalled Mars with much
success.

We'd like to know if Shakespeare wrote those plays—or do
you guess?

Have you improved this climate in an artificial way?

Have you developed radium and bounced the orb of day?

Have you built homes of onyx which Arizona yields?

Have you run short of yellow ore from California fields?

Success to you, America! Please God, you love the land,

As heartily as we have done. I shake, old boy, your hand!

But ere I leave this introspect and retrospect, I'll state,

I'd like to see YOUR copy of The Journal, down to date.

VERDAD S. VERDE

Our generation has answered all these questions. Yet, at that time the Chamber of Commerce had also set a record of answering innumerable queries about Southern California and its probable future. These pamphlets included in the cornerstone reflect the interests of agriculturists: *Los Angeles City and County, California* (already in its eleventh edition, 1903), *Citrus Fruit in California*, and *Climate and Health in Los Angeles County and Southern California*.

Forms for membership in the Chamber, its by-laws, and similar papers were included, and then the cornerstone was sealed and the new structure rose above it, to be formally inaugurated on February 12, 1904. During the next two decades Los Angeles grew

Milestones in Los Angeles Progress

from 36th largest to the nation's tenth city, with a population approaching a million. Keeping pace, the Chamber's activities multiplied. In the twentieth century's first decade it conducted various excursions to the harbor and elsewhere, stimulated interest in a Panama Canal, participated in the St. Louis Exposition, campaigned for better mail service to rural areas, and championed the Owens River water project from 1905 until its completion in 1913. In 1906 the organization began a series of tereoptical lectures on different sections of California. That year, it assembled funds and supplies for San Franciscans injured or made destitute by the earthquake and fire. Meanwhile, the Chamber opposed increased trans-continental freight rates, and, as a new decade began, favored the annexation of Hollywood and other outlying areas to the growing city, soon the continent's largest in area. Always a friend of education, it had characteristically included the *Alphabetical List of Schools* and the *Directory* of the Los Angeles City schools in both the 1903 and the 1924 cornerstones. The Chamber campaigned for appropriations for colleges of agriculture and a teacher training school in the region. On May 13, 1913, the Los Angeles Chamber was admitted to the Chamber of Commerce of the United States.

During World War I, the Chamber once more increased its responsibilities. It raised funds for Allied relief, led the way to regional trade expansion, and advocated a highway to the newest agricultural frontier, Imperial Valley. A signal honor was won in 1916 when the Chamber became the first organization of its kind in the United States to submit to Congress an adequate plan for national defense. Out of this blueprint emerged the American Society for National Service. The Chamber also furnished experts to the war councils in Washington, 1917-1918. The Trade Extension Bureau was converted into a clearinghouse in the dispatch of supplies for the Army and Navy. Through the effort of the Chamber, a government aviation school was established in Southern California, which even that early had become the scene of many "famous firsts" in the pioneer days of aviation.

In 1918 the Los Angeles Chamber began a campaign for the Civic Center which is still being developed. Its far-sighted plan

for a "city beautiful" with broad boulevards connecting the leading parks, was realized. From 1919 on the Chamber struggled to establish the cotton industry, which today makes California the second largest producer in America.

By 1924, Los Angeles was a great city. Its manufactures annually amounted to over \$1,100,000,000 and its bank clearances \$7,024,888,783. The Chamber estimated the metropolis' population at 1,073,995 in 1924, and its own membership had reached 10,500. Thus the sixth Chamber of Commerce building was needed. It cost \$2,500,000 and rose at the corner of Twelfth and Broadway. There the cornerstone was laid on March 28, 1924.

Among the items included in the new stone was a black leatherette album containing the photographs of the Chamber's officers, surviving charter members, and pictures of the four earlier headquarters. There were also two of the new Monroe Doctrine Centennial fifty-cent pieces, a Statement of Membership of the Junior Chamber, a financial statement of the Chamber, 1924, Members' Annuals for the past several years, a copy of Charles Dwight Willard's *History* of the organization, published in 1900, and a 36-page typescript bringing it up to date, the city directory for 1924, the telephone book (then but one volume!), an American flag, a color seal of the Chamber, the program of exercises for the cornerstone laying, and several periodicals of the day. These latter included copies of the *Times*, *Herald*, *Record*, *Examiner*, *Daily News*, *Tidings*, *Saturday Night*, and *Southern California Business*. There was also a news account of the first round-the-world flight about to be made by four planes commanded by Major Fred L. Martin and a photograph of Clover Field, Santa Monica, where the adventure began. Already the Chamber was air-conscious and was collecting meteorological and aviation data.

The Chamber's publications were now well known, and they showed the new trend definitely toward industrialization. Here are some included in the cornerstone: *Textile Manufacturing in Los Angeles*, soon to be so important a Pacific Coast activity; *Assembling and Manufacturing of Automobiles*; *Glass Manufacturing in Los Angeles*; *Commercial Woods of the Pacific Coast*; *General*

Milestones in Los Angeles Progress

Industrial Report of Los Angeles; Smelting of Iron Ore and Manufacture of Steel; The Motion Picture Industry; Los Angeles Today, a color brochure; *Home Building in Southern California; Where to Stop and What It Costs*; and *Los Angeles City and County*, by Harry Ellington Brook, revised January, 1924, and in its 33rd edition. This latest printing of a Chamber classic stressed the one unchanging asset—the climate—and also the Los Angeles Aqueduct, educational advantages, and tourist facilities; petroleum, undergoing great expansion, received considerable attention.

Several typescripts were included. One just completed was "Memorandum on the Increase in the Commerce of Los Angeles Harbor in 1923." "Another Real Record," a phonograph disc about 11½" in radius and attached to a postcard-size card, when played gave the listener basic information on the Chamber's recent findings. Among the manuscripts was a typescript stating that at the Annual Banquet, February 22, 1923, a motion had been carried that a bust of Frank Wiggins, the Chamber's great secretary, be placed in the new building's entrance hall. It may still be seen there today. On his part, Wiggins signed a document the day the stone was laid. It announced:

Coincident with the laying of the cornerstone of the new Chamber of Commerce building today, federal, state, county, and city governing officials with civic organizations and agricultural, industrial and commercial interests, sat under the tutelage of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce on the threatened foot and mouth infection and deliberated on means and methods for its control.

This is the first time such a spirit of cooperation has been manifested or such an organization brought together under a council instituted, in the history of any Chamber of Commerce in the World.

That was a busy month. On March 14 the Los Angeles Junior Chamber of Commerce held its first meeting for organization. Another record was being set, as the *Examiner* of March 28, also found in the cornerstone, revealed in a lead story. A group of 400 prominent Los Angeles bankers, merchants, and industrialists had organized to raise \$50,000,000 to bring more industry to Greater Los Angeles.

Finally, there were placed in the metal box several pamphlets explaining the advantages of Long Beach, Riverside County, San Diego and one with the fascinating title *Tulare County Catechism*.

When the exercises were concluded in the late afternoon of March 28, 1924, and President William Lacy of the Chamber, Governor Friend W. Richardson and Mayor George Cryer had spoken, the institution which was to occupy the new site was recognized the world's largest Chamber of Commerce. With good reason, the future looked bright. The tradition of optimism and of hard-headed work to back it up has continued to our day. Since those who choose the contents of the 1956 cornerstone are as wise as their predecessors, their choice will both reflect the astonishing success story which is current California and a faith in the future, that "evidence of things unseen." These are the real cornerstones of this region and of all the institutions which have made it such a determining factor in America's greatness.*

*The writer gratefully acknowledges the kindness and help of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce and its staff in allowing him to see and use the material from the 1903 and 1924 cornerstones.

Journal of B. B. Harris

[EDITOR'S NOTE: Following excerpts are taken from the Journal of B. B. Harris, an absorbing account of a journey with party and mulepack, travelling on horseback from Texas to California in 1849. Mr. Harris, later a pioneer lawyer in Southern California, was the father of Mrs. Emma Harris Perry, wife of Mr. I. D. Perry, long-time Head of the English Department at Los Angeles high school, and now living at 6232 Glen Airy, Hollywood.]

* * * * *



BETWEEN THE LAGUNA (now Elsinore) and Temescal exchanged my \$200 trusty rifle, for which I gave 640 acres of good Texas land, for a gun rough in exterior but equally as efficient and \$18 in cash, two fine duelling pistols and a half bushel of ginger bread—the other party being the only Mexican I ever saw who was expert with a rifle. In a few hours he slew with his new purchase a bushel of ground squirrels.

Nooning at Yorba's at the Santa Ana Crossing and passing through a growth of mustard 10 feet high we reach Chino before night fall.

Shall I ever cease to praise and thank Don Isaac Julian Williams for his generosity and princely hospitality to the immigrants, myself included—sans everything—offering to buy salt, potatoes, beef, etc.—he made us help ourselves “ad libitum”—refusing any pay whatever.

Mexicans immigrating southward stole his horses, trading them to Americans coming this way — often he recognized his brands and animals in possession of Countrymen going North. In no instance did I hear of his reclaiming the property. He would say he was glad the property was being servicable to them. When General Sutter was warmly thanked by the first Legislature of California for aid to immigrants the Legislature did Colonel Williams an injustice in not including him in the vote also.

Pointing to Lytle Creek he tried to persuade us to try our luck there. Exhibiting gold mined there by his Indians I ascertained from him that his birth place was Pennsylvania—his occupation for many years—trapper, until marrying a native California lady and settling at Chino.

The immigrants made sad inroads upon his numerous cattle and horses. I learned from him that during the Mexican War about 500 cavalymen surrounding his place demanded his surrender—entrenching in his house with 10 men he kept them at bay for several days—until at length sending a flaming arrow into his grass thatched roof and burning his house overhead he surrendered—but repenting the deed his captors aided in extinguishing the fire and arresting further damage. He explained the superior nutritiousness of sun dried burr clover and alfileria, calling my attention to stock preferring it to green food.

Leaving Chino on August 27th, 1849, passing Reed's and Rowland's ranchos we camped at Workman's (Puente) nooning next day at San Gabriel Crossing. Here throwing a wild unbroke horse gently on a bank of sand he soon yielded and became a fair saddle animal the same afternoon—thus unconsciously did we stumble on Rary's secret of horse taming which 8 or 10 years after drew attention of the world.

Before night Los Angeles, then containing 2,000-3,000 people, saw our horses drinking from its little River. Its houses were one story adobe—roofed with thatch smeared over with brea which during the heat of the day dripped from the eaves like ropy tar. Only three or four Americans lived there—one of whom was Benito Wilson at whose store we replenished supplies for the journey to the mines or rather to Tejon—being induced by trapper Trunard to depend on rifle from then on.

Wages at Los Angeles were then \$5 per day while at San Francisco and the mines they were \$20—but gold dust migration Northward and Southward made business lively and money plentiful here. It sounded strange to hear men's wealth expressed by so many thousand cows or so many thousand vines.

September 1st, obtaining directions from Don Benito Wilson we press on to the mines—passing Cahuenga to San Fernando taking only an hour or two to study the town and mission — Next morning entering the canyon of the Rio Terrocen meander it until the trail deflects taking up the sheer side of a high dark red mountain. Camping amid a thousand recent tracks of grizzly bears—



—Photo Courtesy: E. A. Harris Perry

B. B. HARRIS
California Pioneer

which everyone itched to tackle—and to that end sat up a good part of the night, guns in hand. Suggesting that these bears were very ferocious and more powerful than black bears of the East—that I had read Freemont's account of John Glass' terrific encounter with one that did not decline but courted it. I was hooted at, Freemont pronounced a blow hard and Clark and Lewis unreliable on the subject. One man having only a shot gun and buck shot proclaimed fearlessness of any bear after he had got one shot at it. Luckily the bears did not come, or that night would have seen horrible havoc among the green grizzly hunters.

On amid mountains to San Francisquito ranch we plodded—the proprietor of which much alarmed at the swelling of a limb of a boy child asked relief which was soon afforded by application of sugar and lead. The grateful old gentleman caused his herds of sheep and beeves to be driven up inviting us to accept one of each or as many as we might choose.

Hence still amid mountains pursuing our way to what was the subsequent site of Ft. Tejon, another Eden in the hills—thence descend along the Canada de las Uvas—near its mouth came to a spot being prepared by Indians for cultivation—we donated them a fagged out mule, abandoned a mile behind, representing it to be fat, good to eat and only tired. To our surprise came the answer that they were Christians, therefore not mule eaters but thankfully accepted the gift for use. The Indian Chief and spokesman was named Zapatero (shoemaker) a name acquired when he dwelt at the mission. Six years later, canvassing for votes as Democratic nominee for District Judge, I chanced to stay at the Tejon reservation with Cajé Tucker, our violinist on the plains—then Government employee among the Indians. Desiring to rest with him for a few days and learning that he was a few miles away living with Zapatero and his wife—regret filled my mind at the idea of having Indian cookery during my stay. Arriving at old Zap's brush shanty, announcing that I was Tucker's friend he exclaimed in Spanish, "You are the friend that gave me the abandoned mule" and with hospitable arms, lifting me from saddle placed me tenderly on the grass. What a surprise awaited me! I never knew nicer, cleaner or better cooked biscuits, meats and vegetables, than those pre-

pared by his good squaw, and never had a warmer truer welcome anywhere.

At bed time the feather bed, with snowy sheets, of himself and wife was, against my protest forced upon me. His garden though not luxuriantly arranged, included all the esculents of ordinary good livers among the whites. That night old Zap and I talked until midnight about game hunting, the relative merits of bows, arrows, rifles, shot guns and the destructive effects of each—both awarding the rifle the premium.


If a heart aglow with friendship love and kindness be the the choicest jewel then was good old Zap wealthy indeed and I rich in owning his esteem. The ardent loving nature of this good couple and their only child made that brush wickiup to me far brighter and more to be preferred than the luxurious palace with all its hollow, artificial surroundings.

I was pressed to be this family's life long guest and companion but not being a wild Indian, I suspect that a place on the reservation would have been denied me. Having ascertained the day of my departure—unknown to but afterwards ascertained by me, this good Indian sent runners before to request two or three camps of not friendly Indians to offer me no harm and to smooth my long journey of 150 miles to the white settlements. I confess that the trip at that time was dangerous even from wild beasts, let alone viler red men . . .”

[From here the Journal continues with account of life and fortunes at the mines and a later colorful life as pioneer until his death in 1897.]

"George Coburn Must Be Back"

By Helen Rocca Goss

 IN MANY PARTS OF THE WORLD when a small household object cannot be located, some one, either seriously or in jest, is sure to call upon Saint Anthony, the patron saint of lost articles, for help in finding it. But where I grew up, near Middletown in southern Lake County, California, we had a different expression for such occasions, an expression still used by the descendants of those living there in the 1890's. We are likely to shrug and remark: "George Coburn must be back," although George disappeared nearly sixty years ago, and it is reasonably safe to assume that he will not be coming back.

During the quarter century from 1875 to 1900, Lake County had its share of experience with acts of violence—murders, stage-robberies, etc.—and with colorful characters and picturesque impostors. There was Tom Dye, for example, who murdered a man named Bates in Middletown in October, 1878, and while awaiting trial escaped from the county jail in Lakeport on March 7, 1879. When he was recaptured in Reno, Nevada, in August, 1880, it was learned that during the interim he had twice been in the Middletown area, once just after his escape, a second time about a month later. On both occasions he had been assisted by friends, who took food and clothing to him in a hide-out he had in the shelter of a large rock in the wild country on beyond the Great Western Quick-silver Mine, where my father, Andrew Rocca, was then superintendent. Although Dye was obviously not one of the outstanding citizens of the county and he apparently used the hide-out for only a few days on each occasion, he managed to achieve a certain kind of immortality by having his name attached to the boulder, which to this day is called Tom Dye Rock.¹

Then, there was that rather fantastic character referred to in the local press of the day as "an individual of considerable note" until he had duped a number of persons in Lakeport. After that he was called " 'Prof.' H. Anderson, the dancing master and horse thief, who operated recently in this place." He was captured at Benecia in May, 1881, and sentenced to four years in San Quentin for his various offenses.² Another bad man of the day, who was neither a "professor" nor a dancing master but an accomplished horse and cattle-thief, was Buck English, whose exploits I have described in an earlier article in the *Quarterly*.³ He succeeded in terrorizing the neighborhood off and on for many years until his capture after a well-known stage-robbery in 1895. And, as a final illustration, there was the crime that rocked the county for years in the 1890's and led to its most famous trials—the murder of a woman by a masked band and the White Cap Trials, as they were called, in which my father gathered much of the evidence against the accused men and acted as a special prosecutor.⁴ That long and absorbing story is one I hope to relate some other time, but it should be mentioned here, because, as will be apparent later, it did have a slight connection with the Coburn affair.

But, curious as were some of these men and their stories—Dye, Anderson, English, etc.—none had the bizarre qualities of the strange drama of young George W. Coburn, who lived with his parents and his sister, Luella, on a farm a mile or two from Middletown on the Lakeport road.⁵

In the early 1890's, the Middletown area was plagued by a veritable rash of thefts of all kinds of objects, including thimbles, a derby hat, an alarm clock, a sewing machine, the belt from a hay-bailer, a side-saddle, all the whips and robes from the buggies of those attending church one Sunday evening, and all the books from a country schoolhouse.⁶ What was most puzzling about these thefts was the fact that so many articles of little value were taken and that so often, as in the cases of the school books and the buggy whips, large quantities of the same things disappeared. Buck English might have been suspected, but the thefts occurred during his long disappearance from the neighborhood, and anyway English was known to be a much more discriminating thief—he took cattle,

"George Coburn Must Be Back"

horses, watches, and hard cash, no hay-bailer belts or buggy whips for him!

At about the same time, too, what appeared to be a mysterious woman, usually dressed in white, began puzzling people almost as much as the unexplained disappearance of so many small articles from so many homes. One of my sisters feels sure that she herself once saw the woman. Rather late one moonlit night, my sister Florence and Carrie Shaw, a family friend who lived in our home for many years, were returning to the mine from Middletown when they were startled to see what looked like a woman dressed in white walking all alone down the road on the steep grade below the mine. What surprised them even more was the fact that as soon as she saw them, the lonely figure quickly disappeared into the bushes at the side of the road.⁷ Others reported seeing the ghost-like woman brooding alone on the banks of a stream at dusk, and some heard, or thought they heard, her make a wailing or moaning sound. The scene they described was so eerie that no one blamed them for fleeing without trying to discover whether the strange creature was of this or another world.⁸

A plausible, if highly sensational, explanation for all of these weird goings-on came in November, 1895, when a hunter chanced upon a huge cache of miscellaneous objects about three miles north-east of Middletown, near the boundary of the Coburn and McKinley places. Suspicion immediately fell upon George Coburn, and on November 7th he was arrested while leaving an Odd Fellows' meeting.⁹ It took a good-sized wagon and two strong horses to haul that part of his loot to Middletown, where it was displayed at a store and crowds gathered "to view this remarkable collection which surpasses the famous 'Old Curiosity Shop'."¹⁰ There, among many other things, were the rotting and molded buggy whips; some of the weather-stained and moth-eaten robes; the piles of musty, dog-eared school books.¹¹ There, too, were at least some of the costumes of the mysterious "Woman in White," whose identity was no longer in doubt. George, up until that time considered as only slightly "queer," was now revealed as a kleptomaniac who could not resist the temptation to steal whatever he could lay his hands on, not, in most instances, because he wanted the things but

merely to increase the bulk of his caches. And it was clear that when going about at night on one of his forays, he had frequently disguised himself as a woman.

Coburn's favorite hiding places were large, hollow trees, the openings of which he would cover with dirt and leaves, but he also had a number of shacks and rustic "rooms," cut into the earth itself in wooded areas and cleverly camouflaged by branches and leaves. The Middletown *Independent* of July 3, 1897, in commenting on the numerous caches which had been discovered up until that time, said in part:

. . . Stolen property will continue to be found on this ranch for the next century, for in all probability Coburn himself does not remember where he has hidden more than one-fourth of his plunder . . .

The court notes in the Middletown *Independent* for November 22, 1895, list at least three separate cases of "The People vs. G. W. Coburn." In the first, he was charged with burglary and bond fixed at \$500; in the second, he was charged with "grand larceny for stealing a bicycle," trial was set for December 18th and bond fixed at \$500; and in the third case, he was accused of "grand larceny for stealing a side saddle and a sewing machine," recommitted for further examination and bond fixed at \$250. There were other cases against him, however,—five in all, according to the *Independent* of March 7, 1896. That issue of the paper stated that Coburn had been sentenced to three years imprisonment at Folsom Prison for "the Hughes burglary," and that the district attorney and the counsel for the defense had agreed that sentence in the four other cases in which he had pleaded guilty should not be pronounced by the court until after his appeal in that first case had been decided by the California Supreme Court.

Close on the heels of this announcement, however, the *Independent* of March 21, 1896, reported that George Coburn had escaped from the Lakeport jail—a feat which must have been fairly easy to perform in that era, judging by the number of those who did it. The sheriff had been searching around Middletown, the article said, but having "learned nothing of the whereabouts of G. W. Coburn up to that time," had returned empty-handed to

"George Coburn Must Be Back"

Lakeport. It was the general impression, the article continued, "that he has left this part of the country and will not be found here."

For more than a year George Coburn dropped out of the news, but in late June of 1897, his name was in the headlines again, this time not only in the newspapers of Lake and Napa counties, but in those of San Francisco as well. This time, too, his father, W. R. Coburn, was linked with him in the news stories and in a tragic way.

In the spring of 1897, there were a number of robberies in and around Middletown, and various small miscellaneous articles began disappearing again. According to the Middletown *Independent* of June 26, 1897, "a few persons" had know for some time that George Coburn was living in hiding on his parents' place, and on several occasions "he narrowly escaped being captured but always managed to escape."¹² Finally, James Storey, a laborer on the Coburn ranch, agreed to take Sheriff Pardee and his posse to the place where he believed George could be found, provided it was done under the cover of darkness, so that the Coburn family would not suspect him of the aid he had given the authorities in their search. Early on the morning of June 25th, just before daybreak, Storey led Pardee and his posse—consisting of Constable Strong of Middletown, J. M. Epperson, E. L. Collins, David Lundquist, and D. Poston, who lived near the Coburns—to a cave on the Coburn place about a mile from their house, where George usually slept. He was not there, but was soon located asleep under a fallen fir tree. As the men approached him, they ordered Coburn to surrender, and, according to Epperson's later testimony, they heard this reply: "Don't shoot—I surrender." They thought, too, that Coburn held up his hands, but it was still so dark they could not be sure. Then, "quicker than a flash," Coburn grabbed his gun and fired two shots, wounding Storey seriously, and "with a scream like a wild animal," sprang from his bed and made his escape "despite the fact that the posse shot at him at close range."¹³

Storey, whose wounds were bleeding profusely, was then taken to the Poston place, where two members of the posse put him into a buggy and started to Middletown for medical aid. According to

the Epperson testimony, the four remaining men—Pardee, Epperson, Collins, and Lundquist—first started toward the Coburn home with the intention of arresting George's father. They changed their minds, however, and were on their way to town when, "near the forks of the county road," a dog belonging to the elder Coburn came out into the road and the posse then saw Coburn himself in a field at the side of the road, "rifle in hand, crouching in a clump of bushes."¹⁴ All four of the men covered Coburn with their shotguns, and Epperson said that he personally had ordered Coburn three times to drop his gun. "I heard a gun fired behind me," Epperson continued, "and Mr. Coburn fell to the ground, the gun falling with him." The shot, he said, was fired by Collins, but Epperson added that Coburn's rifle had been pointed at Pardee and he believed that shooting the man was the only way of preventing him from killing the sheriff. When they went to disarm him, the testimony continued, Coburn's Winchester rifle was cocked and he had two pistols on his person beside the rifle.

When asked if Coburn had said anything, Epperson gave some interesting testimony that was to be quoted frequently in the controversy that developed over the episode. He quoted Coburn directly as saying: "What did you shoot me for, I never did anything wrong?" Epperson then asked Coburn what he was doing out there anyway, to which he replied that he had heard the shooting and was out to see what it meant. "I asked him when he had seen his son George," Epperson went on. "He said he had not seen him for six months. . . I said 'We heard you talking with him yesterday.' He said, 'I did talk with him yesterday; I was with him.' And he said no more."

Collins' shotgun blast struck Coburn full in the breast and wounded him mortally. He was taken in a wagon to Dr. Hicks' office in Middletown for treatment, but he died a few minutes after arriving there.¹⁵ The other wounded man, Storey, was not expected to live at the time, but he did eventually recover.

Mrs. Christianna Coburn, the wife of the dead man and mother of George, also testified at the coroner's inquest. They had heard three or four shots fired and dogs barking in the early morning hours of the 25th, she said, and her husband said it was time to get

"George Coburn Must Be Back"

up anyway and he would go out to look around a bit. When asked if Mr. Coburn knew where his son was, she replied: "I don't think he did." To the next question, "Did he say anything about George when he heard the shots," she made the same reply, "I don't think he did." It was not until after her husband had gone out, she said, that she noticed he had taken his rifle with him. When she was asked, "Did you count the shots after Mr. Coburn left the house?" she answered: "I heard but one—a very heavy one." Luella Coburn testified that she knew nothing whatever about the facts connected with the shooting of her father.¹⁶

The coroner's jury, under the foremanship of J. H. Jamison, found that the deceased was a native of Vermont, seventy years of age; that he came to his death from gunshot wounds inflicted by Edward Collins, deputy sheriff of Lake County, on June 25, 1897, at about 5 A.M. near Middletown; and ended by saying: "We do further find it was justifiable homicide."¹⁷ The local newspaper, in reporting these facts, said it was "the general belief" that Coburn knew about his son's robberies, if he was not actually connected with them. Coburn they described as "a strong, wiry little man," who appeared more like a man of fifty than one almost seventy-one years of age. Since the arrest of his son, the newspaper continued, Coburn had been "very disagreeable," often making threats against the officers of the law and others. The article then cited an incident which had taken place about three months earlier when Coburn was being examined as a juryman by Judge Crump in Lakeport. Without giving the details, the articles said that Coburn had "insulted the Court" and been fined \$100.00 and sentenced to twenty-four hours in jail. The man was considered "dangerous," the article concluded by saying, because he "constantly carried arms" and it was believed he would have used them upon the slightest provocation. And to Epperson's testimony that Coburn had two pistols on him when he was disarmed after he was shot, the *Independent* added a knife as well.

This was the case against W. R. Coburn, and it is admittedly a formidable one. Not only the local newspaper but the San Francisco *Examiner*, which had a reporter on the scene, pictured the elder Coburn as a very dangerous man, who went about armed to

the teeth, a man who certainly knew about his son's robberies if he was not actually involved in them himself. Yet, in spite of all this evidence there were many law-abiding citizens, my father among them, who were deeply troubled about the whole affair and who questioned whether it had in fact been necessary to shoot down a seventy-year-old man without more provocation than they believed Coburn had given. His first remark after being shot, as quoted by Epperson—"What did you shoot me for, I never did anything wrong?"—was cited with telling effect by those who asked if that question sounded like the one of a defiant man, just after he has been mortally wounded, because he himself was on the point of shooting the sheriff. There were rumors, too, which may or may not have had any foundation, that Collins was unnecessarily "trigger happy," because of a grudge he bore against Coburn.¹⁸ In support of that theory it was pointed out that, though Epperson was by his own testimony giving Coburn the orders and would presumably have been the man to fire if the orders were not being carried out, and also that Collins was standing somewhat behind Epperson, it was Collins who did the shooting. The ugly word "murder" was used in heated discussion then, and at a later date Coburn's death was on at least one occasion even called that in print—perhaps deliberately, perhaps through ignorance or absent-mindedness—by a different editor of the local paper. The *Calistogian* of January 12, 1912, quoted an item from the *Middletown Independent* of the previous week about the house on the Coburn ranch (then belonging to a different family) burning down. The place, it said, had been "the scene of the murder" many years earlier of the man the item incorrectly called "George Coburn Sr."

That Coburn must have known about his son's robberies and that he was guilty of hiding a fugitive from justice, seems all too clear from the evidence. It appears equally clear, though, that there was bungling of the case on many occasions, beginning with the carelessness that permitted George to escape from the Lakeport jail. Had it not been for that lapse the shooting of his father and the futile manhunt for George himself that went on for years might have been avoided.

As far as Andrew Rocca's point of view is concerned, while

"George Coburn Must Be Back"

he knew practically every one connected with the case and had many friends on both the posse and the coroner's jury, he himself simply had not found Coburn the dangerous bad man pictured in the press. About fifteen months before Coburn was shot, in late March of 1896, Coburn had gone with Andrew Rocca to Sacramento to plead with the governor to keep in San Quentin for their full terms the men convicted in the White Cap trials.¹⁹ Feeling had run very high on that issue for years, and Coburn had undoubtedly made enemies by his stand against pardons—all the more so, no doubt, if, at the very moment he was arguing for the full punishment for those offenders he was suspected by some persons of concealing an escaped convict on his own place. Coburn and Rocca saw eye-to-eye on the pardon issue, and no one knew better than the latter that extremely unfair charges had been levelled against some of those who took a firm stand against pardons for the men. It is perhaps not without significance that the powerful forces behind the pardon movement included a number of newspapers, among them the *Independent*. A man as devoted to law and order as my father did not for a moment believe that Coburn should have been condoned for harboring a fugitive from justice, no matter what the circumstances and even if the fugitive was his own son. But Father did strongly believe that with more skillful handling of the affair Coburn might have been arrested without bloodshed, instead of killed before his case could have a legal airing.

So much for the story of the elder Coburn. To return to the unfinished one of his son, since George had had on only his under-clothing when he escaped and was also believed to be wounded, the *Independent* of June 26th had expressed the belief that he would be captured "within the next few days." A posse of ten or fifteen men had left town immediately the very Friday morning of his escape, and those men were "determined to capture Coburn," according to the newspaper.

Meanwhile, the newspapers were busy describing the various items found in George's caches at that time. Thus, the San Francisco *Examiner* of June 27, 1897, said:

In the cabin discovered in the mountains yesterday by the sheriff's men was found a clock running, which showed the correct time, together

with buggy robes, tools, burglar's keys, forceps and a great variety of small articles, including a partly constructed organ, which the young man was evidently building, and which showed that Coburn had returned to the scene of his former robberies and indulged in his old practices for many months.

The *Independent*, too, gave further facts not only about George's "pack-rat" tendencies but about the same inventive quality that led him to try to construct an organ—a quality which might conceivably have been his salvation had it been directed into normal channels. The issue of the newspaper on June 26, 1897, described a dark lantern picked up by Constable Strong near the spot where George was found sleeping on the morning of the 25th. Although the lantern was made only of "an oyster can and a bicycle oiler" it gave a good light and showed the real "ingenuity of young Coburn," the item said.

The next issue of the *Independent*, the one of July 3, 1897, had a long article entitled "George Coburn Still at Large," in which an investigation of the Coburn place by a representative of the newspaper was described in some detail. The rough, wild country on the slopes of Sugar Loaf Mountain back of the place the reporter found to be "an ideal hiding place for an escaped convict." It was cut up into innumerable canyons thickly covered with a growth of brush and small fir trees. Everywhere on the side of the mountain he saw "small trails, some of which lead to larger trails, and others lead nowhere." From George's cabin—a "rude affair" with three earthen walls and a door of fir trees—a trail led to where he was sleeping when the posse approached him.²⁰ His bed was about half a mile from the family residence but directly between the cabin and the house. As the reporter looked around, he found a number of George's treasures still there, although others had searched the place before he did. In a stump about twenty-five yards from the bed there was a five-gallon can filled with wheat; two small cans of shot of all sizes, made by passing the lead through a wire screen, were in a big madrone a little farther on, and the same tree had two quart-cans filled with hops; in a hollow tree by the trail leading to the spring, there were three fruit jars filled with salt and a baking powder can of matches; a tree in the pasture had

"George Coburn Must Be Back"

a five-gallon can half-filled with kerosene in its branches, etc. Two bicycle tracks were plainly visible on the mountain, but neither had been used for some time.

As for George himself, that July 3rd issue of the local paper reported that there was nothing new in the case but he was believed to be still in the neighborhood. Another item in the same paper, headed "Was It Coburn?" related the facts that shortly after George's escape from the posse on June 25th, Mrs. E. E. Myers, who lived about a mile from the place where he disappeared, had seen a man, bare-headed and in his shirt-sleeves, running toward her house. Her sons were out cutting wood at the time, and thinking that one of them had been injured, Mrs. Myers hurried to meet the man. But as soon as he saw her he turned abruptly and disappeared into the woods.

Items like that kept appearing from time to time all the rest of the summer and into the autumn without any one being positive that George had actually been seen. For example, the *Independent* of July 24, 1897, reported that there had been much excitement in Kelseyville the previous Thursday, when some hunters found a roll of blankets "in a cave on Cole Creek, where George Coburn is said to have camped after escaping from jail last year." The hunters went to notify the officers and returned to the cave with them, only to find that some one had removed the blankets during their absence. And the *Calistogian* of August 13, 1897, reported that, while hunting on Sunday morning, August 8th, a Middletown stage driver, Tuck Quigley, had definitely seen George Coburn with a companion on Pine Ridge opposite Cobb Mountain.²¹

Far more positive evidence that George was still around came in early November, when he was seen several times and by a number of people who knew him so well that there could be no case of mistaken identity. The Middletown *Independent* for November 13, 1897, had a long article on the subject, entitled "George Coburn Again," which began as follows:

Once more efforts to capture George Coburn have proved futile and although the sheriff and a number of men worked almost day and night for a week, he is still at large. George kept quiet so long that many

thought he had left this section but he has a way of turning up when least expected . . .

The article then went on to say that on the previous Thursday morning, Ben Wilson had gone to the Coburn ranch to see about some wood. Leaving his horse near the house, he walked a short distance into the pasture, where he immediately noticed bicycle tracks. Just then a noise attracted his attention, and turning, he saw George, who had been sitting on the ground, get up and start toward the house. He had a roll of blankets on his back and he carried a pick. As soon as Wilson could do so without arousing suspicion of what he had seen, he went back to his horse and returned to town, and with Edward Collins returned immediately to the Coburn ranch. The two men searched carefully but found nothing except a pair of moccasins made out of sacks, and they saw no more of George that day.

The following morning Collins went out to the Coburn ranch again, where Wilson soon joined him. About 9 o'clock, Collins saw George in the distance, carrying a pick and walking in the opposite direction. Later in the morning, Wilson, who had stationed himself on an elevated point near the old garden, saw a man and a woman talking, and he was "almost positive" they were George and Luella Coburn. That evening, Collins, Wilson, and George McKinley, who was a neighbor of the Coburns, went to the ranch to watch for George, having previously agreed upon stations from which to observe the premises. As McKinley was on the way to his vantage point, and when he was some 250 yards west of the barn, he saw George, carrying his inevitable roll of blankets, a pick, and a sack, coming toward him. McKinley waited until Coburn was about forty feet from him, then stepped out from behind a bush and ordered him to throw up his hands. Instead Coburn started to run, and McKinley discharged his gun, containing twenty-five buck-shot. Coburn dropped his sack and ran screaming toward the barn, while Collins tried to intercept him by running between him and the barn. The screaming soon stopped and thinking that Coburn was probably badly wounded, the three men searched the brush very thoroughly but found nothing except the sack Coburn had

"George Coburn Must Be Back"

been carrying. It contained some butter, sugar, twine, and small tools. Once again the search was given up, McKinley returned home, Wilson and Collins started to town. As they were passing through a thicket, some one—Coburn, they felt sure—hurled a stone over their heads and it struck a nearby tree.

On Saturday morning the sheriff arrived from Lakeport and with a number of men searched the place all the rest of that day and the next. On Sunday evening, as Collins was driving along the road on his way back to town, he saw Coburn watching him from behind a tree. Collins drove on a short distance as if he had noticed nothing, then returned and waited only a few moments when Coburn, carrying his trade mark, the roll of blankets, came within thirty yards of him. Collins ordered Coburn to stop, but instead he began running and, though Collins shot at him, he kept right on running and disappeared into the brush.

The following day, Mrs. W. R. Coburn and Luella Coburn were placed under arrest, accused of "harboring and protecting a person charged and convicted of the crime of burglary." The preliminary examination of the two was held behind closed doors a couple of days later, when the defendants were bound over to appear before the Superior Court and then released upon each giving bond of \$200.

The search for Coburn continued all through that week in early November, 1897, without his being seen again. By that time the men in the posse were thoroughly baffled, and the newspaper article of the 13th ended by expressing their bewilderment for them in the following statement:

The men are positive that Coburn wears an armor, as he has been shot at at close range by men who would not miss their aim, and also when he runs a rattling noise can be heard. He seems determined not to be taken alive.

That may sound only like newspaper sensationalism, but I am sure that some of the sober-minded members of the posse, who were crack shots, did believe that Coburn must have had some kind of protection to prevent him from being seriously wounded by any of the numerous shots fired at him, often at close range.

George Coburn was before my time—the intensive manhunt for him I have just described took place the year I was born—but Dave Lundquist, who was so intimately associated with all the efforts to capture him, was a close family friend and often at our house during my childhood. I remember listening with fascination while he and Father discussed by the hour the various times George had slipped through the posse's fingers. One that particularly impressed me was, I believe, the incident that inspired the comment in the above quotation. The posse was in a huddle as to what they should do next, when George rode swiftly by on a bicycle and showed no sign whatever of being wounded by any of the shots fired at him.²²

Thus, the weary and frustrating search went on, though never again, I think, with the intensity of that fruitless week in November, 1897. After that date there were often rumors that some one had seen Coburn here or there, but it was never certain that it was actually he who had been seen. Gradually, reports came of his being seen in more distant places—Arizona, for example. Finally, it was said that he had made his way across the border and into Mexico, where, like Ambrose Bierce, he vanished into the mists of conjecture. So far as newspaper items are concerned, the last one I discovered relating to the Coburn family was the one previously mentioned about their house burning in 1912—"the home of the historical Coburn family," the item called it, adding: "If the old house held any secrets of the doings of young George they are forever erased."

In the Middletown area, however, George Coburn became a legendary character, a real figure, to be sure, but one about whom many myths and a bit of folklore developed. Those of us who were children there in the late 1890's and early 1900's, often heard him referred to when our mothers had misplaced their thimbles, their scissors, or their spectacles—"Well, I guess George Coburn must be back," they would say with a mirthless little laugh. And we, too, though we may live thousands of miles away, when in similar circumstances often catch ourselves with that sentence on the tips of our tongues.

"George Coburn Must Be Back"

NOTES

1. This account of the Tom Dye incident is summarized from news items and notices of rewards offered for his capture in the Lakeport *Lake-Democrat* of Mar. 8, 29, 1879, and Aug. 21, 28, Sept. 25, Nov. 19, Dec. 17, 1880. While the newspaper items make no reference to the exact place where Dye hid, in the Middletown area it was well known that he had used the rock as a shelter, and it was locally that the boulder got its name. In the 1880's and 1890's, residents of the Great Western Mine sometimes made excursions to Tom Dye Rock.
2. Lakeport *Bee-Democrat*, Mar. 30, 1881; *Calistogian*, May 11, 25, 1881.
3. "Highwaymen in the Quicksilver Mining Region," *The Historical Society of Southern California, Quarterly*, Vol. XXXVII, No. 3, p. 223.
4. On the night of October 10, 1890, a masked band, consisting of eleven men, made an attack on a roadside saloon, called the Campers' Retreat, located about a mile from the Bradford Mine and only a few miles from both Middletown and the Great Western Mine, wounding the owner, J. W. Riche, and murdering his wife, Helen Matilda Riche. One of the masked men was also killed in the melée. Since the Klan-like vigilante organization, centering in the Middle West and known as the "White Cap movement," seemed to have served as a pattern for the local raid, the term White Cap was attached to both the murder and the trials. As a result of the trials, four men were sentenced to terms of from twelve to twenty-five years in San Quentin Prison. Although the citizens of the county had been shocked and horrified by the episode and the local paper had described it by such terms as "a dastardly outrage," when the four convicted men had served only a small part of their terms a movement to pardon them was organized.
5. According to the Middletown *Independent* of June 26, 1897, there was another son in the Coburn family, younger than George, who then lived in Placer County. No source that I was able to discover gave the exact age of George Coburn, but he was evidently in his mid-twenties in 1895 when he first began appearing in news items.
6. The articles listed here are those mentioned in one of the following sources: Middletown *Independent*, Nov. 22, 1895; San Francisco *Examiner*, June 26, 27, 1897; written statement by my sister, Florence G. McFarling, under the date of Feb. 23, 1947, hereafter cited merely by her last name and initials; and a conversation with an old Middletown friend, Mrs. Cora B. Herrick, in the summer of 1949 and from which I made notes at the time.
7. F. G. McFarling. My sister writes that at the time they believed it must be a family friend, Mrs. Habishaw, who often did walk alone to the mine to visit and left for home at very late hours. But when Mrs. Habishaw came to visit a few days later and was asked about it, she said she had not been anywhere near the mine that night.
8. As one can well imagine, many of these stories have been exaggerated with the years, but I have tried to use only those I have ample reason to believe are authentic. This particular one I heard told a number of times in my youth. It was mentioned again to me more recently in the course of two conversations—one in the late 1930's with my sister, the late Beatrice Marie Bates, and the one with Mrs. Herrick in the summer of 1949.
9. *Calistogian*, Nov. 9, 1895. As an example of the myths and fiction that surrounded the truth about George Coburn, one story has it that he was wearing women's clothing when arrested the first time. The more prosaic account that he was leaving the meeting of a men's lodge and in ordinary male clothing, seems to be the correct, if less spectacular, statement.
10. *Ibid.*
11. F. G. McFarling; San Francisco *Examiner*, June 26, 1897.
12. Various sources have been used in the following summary of the events taking place on or near the Coburn ranch on the morning of June 25, 1897. Most use was made of the Middletown *Independent* of the following day, which printed two important articles on the subject—their own account under the heading "A Fatal Encounter," and the testimony of J. M. Epperson at the coroner's inquest. When there was any significant difference in the stories I have used the official account given in the Epperson testimony. According to the *Independent*, Sheriff Pardee, David Lundquist, and E. L. Collins testified substantially the same as Epperson. Some use was also made of the accounts in the San Francisco *Examiner* and the Napa *Register* of June 26, 27, 1897. The information about the aid Storey had given to the authorities is from the *Examiner*. Although the *Calistogian*, pub-

- lished in Calistoga, sixteen miles from Middletown, was usually one of the most reliable newspapers in the neighborhood, it published a singularly garbled version of the episode, probably because it went to press on June 25th, the very day of the incident, and did not have time to check on the facts. In their account the incidents on the Coburn place, when George was discovered asleep, and those on the way to town at least a mile and a half distant, are lumped together as if father and son were only a few feet from each other.
13. Middletown *Independent*, June 26, 1897, "A Fatal Encounter." As to the time these events took place, Epperson said that he arrived at the Poston place from Lakeport about 2 A.M. and that it was about 3:30 A.M. when they found George asleep.
 14. The quotations are from the *Independent* article, "A Fatal Encounter," the other material from the Epperson testimony. The exact place where the posse saw Coburn was pointed out to me on several occasions by my father and others. For those who know the area, it is just about where the road from "Maker's Corner" joins the road from Middletown to Lakeport.
 15. Middletown *Independent*, June 26, 1897.
 16. *Ibid.*
 17. *Ibid.* Two county officers, Coroner Mack Mathews and District Attorney M. S. Sayre, came from Lakeport to conduct the inquest. The members of the coroner's jury besides Jamison were: C. W. Sacry, G. A. McKinley, John Turner, W. G. Cannon, C. W. Farmer, F. Cameron, H. M. Morris, John Schwartz, and J. J. Hughes. Besides the witnesses already mentioned, Dr. Hicks testified as to the wounds he had found on Coburn's body when he examined him.
 18. F. G. McFarling.
 19. *Lake County Bee*, April 2, 1896.
 20. After describing the cabin and the inadequate shelter it would give in a storm, the reporter said the question naturally arises, "Where did George Coburn spend the rainy nights last winter?"
 21. To the best of my knowledge, the most complete file of the issues of the Middletown *Independent* for those early years is the one I used in the Bancroft Library at the University of California in Berkeley. Although it is a broken file, fortunately it does contain the most important issues of the paper for the Coburn story. Undoubtedly, however, there were other items of interest about it in the missing numbers.
 22. Some of the older members of the family were away at school when Father and Dave carried on those long conversations. Three others beside myself, however, my sister, Idalene B. McCollum, and my brothers, Andrew Rocca, Jr. and Bernard T. Rocca, well remember Dave's accounts of the manhunt and have discussed them with me at various times. Bernard points out that, although Dave was always glad to talk about the efforts to capture young George, he was reluctant to discuss the facts connected with the shooting of the elder Coburn. On that point Dave Lundquist took what I believe was the correct position—that having given his testimony officially at the coroner's inquest, he preferred not to go into greater detail on that subject in private conversation.



Historical Profiles

By Marco R. Newmark

XXXIV

ISAAC N. VAN NUYS

Isaac N. Van Nuys was born on his father's farm near West Sparta, New York on November 20, 1835. He was the son of Peter and Mrs. (nee Harriet Kerr) Van Nuys of Dutch ancestry. They lived in New York from colonial days. Peter Van Nuys was the son of Isaac Van Nuys. Isaac Van Nuys served in the colonial wars as a private in the Kings County militia in New York in 1715.

Isaac N. Van Nuys was raised on his father's farm. He attended public school in West Sparta and then enrolled in the Academy of Lima in New York. He continued to work on his father's farm until he was thirty years of age.

All his life he had suffered from asthma and in 1865, hoping to better his health, he came to Napa, California. From there he went to Monticello, where he opened a general merchandise store. While conducting the store he sold small implements to the farmers in the neighborhood and from them learned something about farming in California.

It was at this time that he met Isaac Lankershim, his future father-in-law. Shortly thereafter Lankershim bought a large ranch in Fresno County and in 1868 he purchased the 16,000 acre El Cajon Ranch in San Diego County. He had already acquired several other properties in the north end of the State. He persuaded Isaac N. Van Nuys to supervise these properties, while still running the store.

Isaac Lankershim became interested in the San Fernando Valley, at the time devoted to raising cattle and sheep.

In 1869 he formed a syndicate—the San Fernando Farm Homestead Association, which was incorporated on June 2 of that year. On July 2, 1869, Lankershim bought from Pio Pico the lower half of San Fernando Ranch, a property of 60,000 acres. He took care of the large cattle and sheep operations. Within a year the name of the Association was changed to San Fernando Sheep Company. The droughts of 1874 and 1875 put an end to this venture.

In 1871 Isaac N. Van Nuys sold his Monticello store and came south to take an active part in the management of Isaac Lankershim's farm projects. He was convinced that wheat could be grown in the San Fernando Valley. Others had made attempts to grow wheat there and failed and in addition he was warned that it was impossible, but in spite of this he followed his own idea. He chose seed and selected his ground carefully and met with success. The drought of 1874 and 1875 destroyed the crop; but in 1876 he renewed his effort and before the end of the year he grew sufficient wheat to ship two full cargoes to Liverpool. This was the first wheat to be shipped abroad from California.

The first wheat operations centered around the Home Ranch, which was about two miles west of the present town of Van Nuys, and two or three miles further west was the West Ranch and yet further west was the Workman Ranch. On all these ranches Van Nuys financed farming projects, as was also true of the Patton Ranch and the Kestor ranches, which were some one and a half miles southwest of the future Van Nuys. The Sheep Ranch, which was on Western Avenue near Ventura Boulevard, was the last of the ranches to be devoted to farming. It was maintained by the San Fernando Farm Homestead Association. The Clyman Ranch was part of the 12,000 acres sold by the Association in 1888. The town of Toluca was founded on this ranch. The name was later changed to Lankershim and is now part of North Hollywood.

In 1878 the production of wheat was so great that Lankershim and Van Nuys organized the old Los Angeles Farming and Milling Company to grind their grain. In the same year Van Nuys left the

Historical Profiles

Home Ranch to establish his residence in Los Angeles. In December, 1879, he bought from Meyer J. Newmark a lot at 613 South Spring Street. He next bought the adjoining lot so that his property now extended to Seventh and Spring Streets; and finally he acquired from Judge Ygnacio Sepulveda the sixty feet west of the corner of Seventh and Spring Streets; and it was on these properties that the Van Nuys Building was later erected.

On February 10, 1880, Van Nuys married Miss Susanna Lankershim, daughter of Isaac Lankershim. Three children were born to them—Annis Van Nuys (Mrs. Richard J. Schweppe), J. Bent Van Nuys and Kate Van Nuys (Mrs. James R. Page).

The Los Angeles Board of Trade was organized in 1883 and Van Nuys was elected a member of the Board of Directors. He was also a director of the Los Angeles Pressed Brick Company; the Kaspare Cohn Bank (later changed to Union Bank and Trust Company), and the Farmers and Merchants Bank, of which he was elected Vice-President when it was nationalized in 1903.

In 1888 Van Nuys sold 12,000 acres at the east end of the San Fernando Ranch to the newly organized Lankershim Land and Water Company. In 1896 Van Nuys built the Van Nuys Hotel at the northwest corner of Fourth and Main Streets. At this time this was a residential neighborhood. By the mid-1840's it had been invaded by business and the name was changed to Barclay Hotel.

By 1910 failing health compelled Van Nuys to turn most of his affairs over to his son, J. Bent Van Nuys. In 1911 he razed the houses on this Seventh and Spring Street properties and started the Van Nuys Building. It is one of the largest office buildings in the city. The ground floor is occupied by a branch of the Security-First National Bank, the upper floors by offices. Van Nuys did not live to see the building completed. He passed away on February 12, 1912.

Since then J. Bent Van Nuys has had the responsibility of managing the building. The care of the balance of the estate is shared by J. Bent Van Nuys, Mrs. Richard S. Schweppe and Mrs. James R. Page.

Activities of the Society

MEETING

Tuesday, January 31, 1956

President John E. Fishburn, Jr., conducted the meeting. He welcomed members and guests. He then introduced the speaker of the evening, Mr. James O. McReynolds, president of Coulter's. Mr. McReynolds is the grandson of Pioneer Merchant B. F. Coulter. The speaker brought to the Society a fund of history connected with Early Los Angeles and of Coulter's, a store known by four generations of Angelenos. An excerpt from the *Daily Evening Express* reads as follows: "On October 21, 1878, Mr. B. F. Coulter will open his new Dry Goods Establishment at Temple and Main." (now site of the Federal Building.)

Under the chairmanship of Mrs. John J. Wolfskill a fashion exhibit of the 80's was modeled by the following ladies: Miss Anita Aguirre, Mrs. Horace Brezee, Mrs. John Park Dougal, Miss Marsha Dougal, Mrs. Harry Lamport, Mrs. Peter Kuhl, Miss Jane Stransky, Mrs. John J. Wolfskill and Mrs. George B. Varnum.

Refreshments were served to the enthusiastic audience. At the urns were Mmes. James McReynolds and Jean Giles.

MEETING

Tuesday, February 28, 1956

Presiding was President John E. Fishburn, who introduced the speaker of the evening, Dr. Balentine Henley, president of College of Osteopathic Physicians and Surgeons.

Activities of the Society

Dr. Henley's subject was "From Ninety Subscribers in 1881—the Los Angeles Exchange has grown to the Millionth telephone."

Everyone present received a copy of the unique first telephone directory of two pages through the courtesy of the Pacific Telephone and Telegraph Company.

Chairman of our Hostess Committee, Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun announced refreshments. At the urns were: Mmes. Evangelina V. de Higuera and Ernest J. Yorba.

MEETING

Tuesday, March 27, 1956

President John E. Fishburn introduced the speaker of the evening, The Most Reverend Timothy J. Manning, vicar general, Archdiocese of Los Angeles. His subject was: "A Century's Ministering to the City of the Angels."

Dr. Manning told the story of six Sisters of Charity, Sisters Scholastica, Ann, Clara, Angelita, Maria and Francisca. These women were of the Order of Saint Vincent de Paul and Los Angeles pioneers in the field of caring of the sick, the poor and the orphaned children of Los Angeles—the population at this time (1856) was about six thousand people.

A well kept scrap book was on exhibit to prove the good done by this group of women. The press of the day gave them unlimited space and the citizens responded to their call.

Refreshments were served. At the urns were Mmes. Beatrix Sabichi Mitchell and Guy Marion.

Gifts to the Society

In each issue of THE QUARTERLY there appears a list of the donors and gifts made currently to the Society.

The Society is making an especial effort to build up its collection of historic materials, such as diaries, letters, account books, early newspapers, theatre and other programs, pictures of early-day life in California and costumes. We need your help.

Many members having treasured ancestral keepsakes were impelled to give them to the Society because of the realization that in private possession they would, sooner or later, disappear or deteriorate, whereas, in the custody of the Historical Society of Southern California they will be preserved indefinitely.

MARCO R. NEWMARK,
Chairman, Committee on Gifts and Bequests

MR. E. B. HUGHES: Book—"DEEP ROOTS," *The History of Blake, Moffitt and Towne*, edited by Neill C. Wilson. The year 1955 was the centennial year for this pioneer paper firm.

MRS. ALICE CATT ARMSTRONG: Book—"WHO'S WHO IN CALIFORNIA," 1955-56 edition. Edited and published by the donor.

THE HUNTINGTON LIBRARY: Book—"CHARLES F. LUMMIS," *Editor of the Southwest*, by Edwin R. Bingham. (Published by the Huntington Library, San Marino, 1955; price. \$5.00.)

UNIVERSITY OF OKLAHOMA PRESS: Book—"THE FUR HUNTERS OF THE FAR WEST," by Alexander Ross, and edited by Kenneth A. Spaulding. (Published by the University of Oklahoma Press, 1955. Price, \$5.00.)

MRS. HELEN SPAULDING GROFF: Thirty historic photographs of pioneer personalities, landmarks, missions and out-of-town places.

MR. MARCO R. NEWMARK: *Pioneer Notes*, excerpts from the Diaries of Judge Benjamin Hayes.

MR. FRANK B. PUTNAM: Booklet—"Reminiscences of the Early Bar of Los Angeles," by Jackson A. Grave.

MRS. CARLOS SABICHI: Box of photographs yet to be identified.

MR. HENRY H. WEST: Book—"HOW MUCH HE REMEMBERED," *Biography of John Calvin Sherer, 1852-1949*, by Caroline Shaw Sherer.

MR. JOHN J. WOLFSKILL: Twelve photographs of the ladies who modeled the 1880 fashions at our January, 1956, meeting.

June, 1956

Vol. XXXVIII — No. 2

The

Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY



—Photo Courtesy Mount Wilson Observatory

MOUNT WILSON OBSERVATORY

See "The Development of Science in Los Angeles and the Southern California Area"—page 99.



THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA was organized in 1883, and has enjoyed a record of continuous activity for over half a century. Commencing in 1886, and each year until 1935, the Society issued an Annual Publication. In 1935 this *Quarterly* was initiated. It is published at Los Angeles, California, each March, June, September and December.

The purposes of this Society are to preserve and protect the archives and historic sites of the Southwest, with particular stress on Southern California; to publish material of permanent historic interest and significance; to assist and encourage all persons and organizations engaged in similar activities; to hold regular monthly meetings in Los Angeles, except during the summer months, and at least once a year to gather in a pilgrimage to some spot of historic significance.

The Society welcomes to its membership all persons who are in sympathy with its aims. It derives its entire income from the dues and gifts of members, and all regular publications are offered to members without further charge.

It is the aim of the Editorial Board to render this *Quarterly* a publication of general historical interest. Suggestions and criticisms will be welcomed, and all persons, whether members of the Society or not, are invited to submit for the consideration of the editors original articles, old letters, documents, maps and other material bearing upon the history and development of this region.

* * * * *

Address articles, stories, books for review, and all material to appear in the *QUARTERLY*, and general Society correspondence to:

THE SECRETARY,
THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA
2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California

The
Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY



HOME OF THE
HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

The
Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY

VOLUME XXXVIII

June, 1956

NUMBER 2

CONTENTS:

THE DEVELOPMENT OF SCIENCE IN LOS ANGELES AND
THE SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA AREA (1850-1900)

By Henry Winfred Splitter - - - - - 99

A HISTORY OF THE SAN GABRIEL MOUNTAINS—PART II

By Charles Clark Vernon - - - - - 141

WILSHIRE BOULEVARD TEMPLE:
CONGREGATION B'NAI B'RITH (1862-1947)

By Marco R. Newmark - - - - - 167

EARLY LOS ANGELES: MECCA OF CELEBRITIES

By Maymie R. Krythe - - - - - 185

BELATED DIAGNOSIS

By Helen Rocca Goss - - - - - 193

BOOK REVIEWS - - - - - 205

ACTIVITIES OF THE SOCIETY - - - - - 206

GIFTS TO THE SOCIETY - - - - - 208

The HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA QUARTERLY, official publication of the *Historical Society of Southern California*, 2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 3, California, is issued four times each year during the months of March, June, September and December. Annual membership \$10.00. Entered as Second Class Matter at the Post Office at Los Angeles, California.

The Historical Society of Southern California

FOUNDED NOVEMBER 1, 1883

1956

OFFICERS:

GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *President*
EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Vice-President*
FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Treasurer*
MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Curator*
ANA BEGUE DE PACKMAN, *Secretary Emeritus*

DIRECTORS:

JOHN C. AUSTIN	OSCAR LAWLER
MRS. EDWARD A. DICKSON	MRS. FREDERIC C. RIPLEY
PHIL TOWNSEND HANNA	W. W. ROBINSON
FREDERICK F. HOUSER	MRS. MARSHALL STIMSON
MISS GRACE S. STOERMER	

STANDING COMMITTEES:

Publication Committee: Dr. Robert G. Cleland, Phil Townsend Hanna, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, W. W. Robinson, Dr. Henry Wagner.

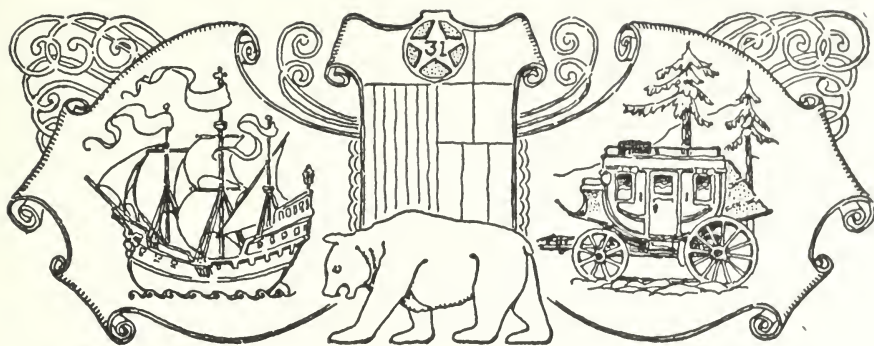
Program Committee: FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Chairman*; Rev. Msgr. James E. Dolan, Colin M. Gair, John Plummer, Wilbur E. Zimmerman.

Landmarks Committee: EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; John C. Austin, Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun, Clement J. Gagliano, Marco R. Newmark, Frank B. Putnam, Edward P. Ripley, Robert Raphael, Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman, David I. Worsfold, Ernest Yorba.

Gifts Committee: MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Chairman*; Richard O'Neill, Jr., Mrs. Lucy Gage Rand, Mrs. Marshall Stimson, Mrs. Robert Tipton, Miss Marguerite Winston, Mr. H. H. West, Mrs. John J. Wolfskill.

Hostesses of Social Hour: MRS. EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, Mrs. B. Sabichi Mitchell, Mrs. Ernest Yorba.

Executive Committee: GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; John C. Austin, Edmond F. Ducommun, Oscar Lawler, Frank B. Putnam, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, W. W. Robinson.



GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Editor*

The Historical Society of Southern California QUARTERLY for June, 1956

The Development of Science in Los Angeles and the Southern California Area (1850-1900)

By Henry Winfred Splitter

EVEN BEFORE THE TIME OF BENJAMIN FRANKLIN in America and of the Royal Society in England, historians tell us, science developed not primarily in the schools, but outside of them, in the workshops and laboratories of the layman. Laboratories for physical and chemical experiment were during the larger part of the nineteenth century as numerous among the educated and well-to-do as hobby-craft home machine shops are today. Collection by amateurs of specimens in botany, zoology, ethnology, geology and paleontology, was looked upon as an everyday affair and generally praiseworthy. A practical interest in science on the part of the common man and woman unconnected with institutions was an earmark of the alert and educated mind.

Typical of amateur interest here in the Southland, as elsewhere, in the gathering of scientific knowledge was Hugo Reid who, during the hectic days of the gold rush in the Sierras, calmly continued collecting information on the traits, customs and history of the local Southern California Indians. Arriving here years before the Mexican cession of California to the United States, he assiduously amassed data over a long period of time. These facts, carefully organized, were published in the *Los Angeles Star* in a series of newspaper articles beginning February 21, 1852. The articles were many years later collected and published (1930) in book form by a Los Angeles publisher. Such articles if written today would doubtless appear in a learned journal; in 1852 they found ample space in a newspaper read by the man on the street or on the farm.

During the years immediately following the entrance of California into the Union in 1850, Eastern scientists and institutions were anxious to obtain information about what might be new in their field of study here on the Southwest Coast. cursory exploration had revealed that new species in practically every department of science existed here, were indeed often plentiful.

The wide-spread interest of the common man in science was relied upon heavily by such institutional and private collectors. In 1852 Louis Agassiz in an open letter to W. S. King, Army surgeon at San Diego, called for the aid of Californians in the completion of his recent *History of the Fishes in the United States*. He declared himself willing to pay any expenses incurred in making collections at various points on the coast and upon various Californian rivers and lakes. Furthermore, he declared, "It ought to be a matter of pride for every American to see that the natural curiosities of the Pacific Coast, which have remained for centuries unknown to the European powers, should now be illustrated in the handsomest manner. Anything toward such an end would truly be an act of patriotism."¹

The collections of the Smithsonian Institution at Washington were largely augmented by aid of amateurs. Major McKinstry, of the Army Quartermaster's Department at San Diego was in 1854 stated to be in receipt of official orders to receive and forward

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

to the Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution any specimens of natural history deposited with him for that purpose. The editor publishing this statement remarked: "We trust that a single announcement of this fact will induce our readers to aid the cause of science, and lay before the assembled wisdom of the nation at Washington at least a small-sized epitome of California's natural history."²

An editorial in an 1861 issue of the *Los Angeles News* cites an article by Dr. J. G. Cooper of the Smithsonian Institution expressing desire for help in the compilation of his *Sylva of the North American Continent*. The editorial quotes Dr. Cooper: "It is in the power of our readers, wherever they may be, and especially if in the distant western or southern States, to assist, with very little trouble, the efforts of the Smithsonian Institute. Collections of the leaves, fruits, bark and wood of our native trees are particularly desirable, and from as many localities as possible, in order to determine both their range and abundance, and also to decide those knotty points as to their specific distinctions which perplex the most skilful botanists.

"The specimens for each tree," directs Dr. Cooper, "should be carefully kept together, and the name of the locality and collector given in full. Obtain two pieces of the thick bark of the trunk about a foot square, taking care not to rub off the mosses or lichens, which are often characteristic of the tree. Specimens of bark from the branches and twigs with leaves, flowers and fruits may be pressed between the trunk bark, with paper to absorb the moisture."³ Apparently this appeal was printed in newspapers all over the United States, especially in the West, thereby reaching common men John Jones, Henry Brown and all their friends.

The science departments of colleges and universities consistently received generous amateur cooperation. The University of California at Berkeley in a letter to the head of Wells, Fargo & Co., dated December 1, 1873, declared itself interested in receiving the following types of specimens: (1) mineral, (2) botanical, (3) zoological, (4) Indian antiquities, (5) early books, pamphlets, photographs and maps. "Full directions," stated the letter, "will be given to anyone interested in making collections, and every object

received will be gratefully acknowledged to the donor, and will be accordingly entered on the University records. Specimens should be distinctly labeled, especially as to the *place* from which they were originally taken. (signed) D. C. Gilman, President of the University." A head office circular approving this letter, together with a copy of the letter itself were posted at the 600 offices of the Wells, Fargo company, with good results. All material handed in at the offices for this purpose was transported to Berkeley cost free.

In 1881 copies of this letter, with a new circular, were re-posted in express offices, including the one in Los Angeles. The 1881 office circular contained the following directive: "Post publicly in our office this and the letter referred to, and from time to time receive and forward such offerings as will be tendered by all classes of people, for there is no walk of life in which knowledge (which is power) has not earnest votaries."⁴

Governmental agencies and associations also sometimes enlisted the potentialities of the common man scientist. The California Mining Bureau, in 1866, through Charles Potter, Los Angeles representative, caused to be printed in the *News* the following appeal.

Important to Miners! A thorough knowledge, theoretical and practical, of the geology of the Pacific Coast, is a matter of immense importance, as it differs very much from that of Europe in many respects. I would recommend to all prospectors or searchers after ores, oil, etc., to note carefully the rocks and soils they meet with, and if they are not perfectly aware of their nature, to send specimens to the nearest agent of the California Mining Bureau Association, so that they may be analyzed and identified.

I would also recommend to parties boring for any specific purpose to any depth, to keep a register of the various strata they may pass through. This register is simply a light case of wood two and a half feet long and three inches square, with a front of ordinary glass. In this, portions of the various strata which occur, are placed as they are extracted, and a note of their thickness, tenacity, and density, with any other needful remarks."⁵

Characteristic of this amateur scientific activity is Dr. Thomas H. Webb, who, a physician by profession, was much interested in geology, and accompanied, in behalf of his avocation, the U. S.-

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

Mexican Boundary Commission in its strenuous travels during 1850-51. In passing along the border area from the Gulf of Mexico to the Pacific he obtained many interesting rock specimens that he loaded on mule-back for transportation to the Coast. Unluckily, however, in the last stages of the journey, supplies, including water and forage, failed almost completely, his heavy laden animals died, and Dr. Webb was finally obliged to abandon his hard-won and precious specimens. The last 150 miles before arriving at the Southern California ranchos were traversed mainly on foot.

Dr. Webb was accompanied on this catastrophic trail by George Thurber, also connected with the Boundary Commission, who had during the same period been collecting botanical specimens. These specimens, fortunately, unlike Webb's, were light in weight, and were carried at last on his own back to the safety of San Diego.⁶

Many of the succeeding pages of this article will record achievements of the amateur scientist—in geology, botany, zoology, paleontology and Indian ethnology, as well as in science club and other activities. It is significant that most of our material has been drawn from the pages of local newspapers, which in the years under discussion at least, quite accurately reflected public opinion and interest. In newspapers of 1850 to 1900 a considerable percentage of non-advertising space was employed for the presentation of news of interest to amateur scientists.

In illustration, we may cite as ordinary practice a full column editorial in the Los Angeles *Express* of January 24, 1876, summarizing and evaluating H. H. Brancroft's newly published *Native Races of the Pacific States*. Columns, we should also recall, were much more precious then, when the four-page or side newspaper was standard, than with our modern inflated issues. The Los Angeles *Star* of February 23, 1871, devoted almost a full column to a description of the bird known as the California road runner, with details concerning its alleged killing of a rattlesnake. Astronomy was popular enough to claim the following notice: "On the last day of the present month there will be an occultation by the moon of the Pleiades or Seven Sisters. The moon will begin passing across this cluster directly after sunset that evening, and as she will be about nine days old the disappearance of the stars behind her ad-

vancing dark edge will be very interesting when viewed through a small telescope or even a good opera glass.”

We shall now discuss in some detail activities in the local area in various fields of science during the period, commencing with geology. Beginning in the sixties and early seventies, the revolutionary concepts of Lyell and Darwin were coming to be known more and more generally, playing havoc with traditional beliefs about the Deluge, the Seven-Day Creation of the earth, and the place of humanity in the long ladder of ascending life. A sufficient increment of the new ideas had become known to unsettle the opinions of the thinking element of Los Angeles society as elsewhere; nevertheless it is clear that tradition was still dominant.

An intelligent correspondent of the *Herald* in 1877 consequently, and we may assume him to be reasonably enlightened, in speaking of the ranges of mountains bordering the San Fernando Valley on the north and on the south, declares there is much there “to excite the wonder of the unlearned.” Their summits, he says, are covered with varied types of sea shells, proving that the waters of the ocean once covered these crests. “At what period of time this was is a mystery,” he continues, “but the indications are that it was not so very long ago.” This he seems to feel is made clear by the fact that the shells are in a perfect state of preservation, while a shark’s tooth recently found in one of the canyons was picked up perfectly sound.

“Of course,” he meditates, “all of Los Angeles valley was at this time submerged, and what caused the land to be elevated is a mystery.” Then becoming more boldly speculative, he resumes: “The change was possibly caused by volcanic action, as there is every indication of such a disturbance in Red Rock canyon and other places. The geologic composition of these mountains is almost entirely of sandstone, conglomerate rock and shale, indicating recent formation.” As further indication of diluvial action he cites the discovery of a whale’s bones in a formation near Spadra a few years previously, and other finds of a like nature.

Greatest mystery of all, announces the correspondent, is the recent finding by some workmen digging a well near the Camulos rancho, of a live frog 32 feet below the surface, completely em-



—Photo Courtesy Mount Wilson Observatory

THE SNOW TELESCOPE

This telescope built in 1904 was the first telescope erected by Mount Wilson Observatory.



—Photo Courtesy Mount Wilson Observatory

PACK TRAIN ON MOUNT WILSON TRAIL

*This photograph made in 1905, shows a pack train on the way up Mount Wilson.
Trail was blazed many years previously by Don Benito Wilson.*



—Photo Courtesy Mount Wilson Observatory

ANOTHER VIEW ON TRAIL

Machinery, materials and equipment used in the construction of Mount Wilson Observatory was moved to mountain top by horse-drawn conveyances as shown here.



—Photo Courtesy Mount Wilson Observatory

ANDREW CARNEGIE AT OBSERVATORY

The Mount Wilson Observatory, a branch of Carnegie Institution of Washington, D.C., was visited by Andrew Carnegie (extreme right) in 1910. Pictured with Carnegie on visit are (from left): A. Davidson, George E. Hale, J. H. McBride, John Muir, H. F. Osborn (rear), John D. Hooker, James A. Scherer (rear) and Carnegie.

bedded in hard ground. The frog was at first of a dark green color, but when brought into the light, this hue changed to pale green, while the heat of the sun seemed oppressive to the newcomer. Then doubtless with a reflective sigh, he concludes: "How it got there, and how it lived, are things that can only be conjectured. But things like this are not uncommon in this country. To the writer's certain knowledge, a live horned toad was found embedded in solid rock." Who shall be so bold as to say that our worthy correspondent was jesting, or that wonders are not wonders, even though the writer may have been blessed with Irish wit, his name being William A. Brophy?⁸

While in the mood for geological marvels we may as well consider the 1876 report in the *Express* of findings made in the Temple Street cut. It was while the grade of Temple Street was being reduced under the direction of Mr. Beaudry that, as reported in the matter-of-fact *Express*, an entirely new type of vegetation appeared at the surface of the excavation after the winter rains, plants hitherto unknown to the local area and to botany. It was assumed that seeds buried in the ground for geologic ages, had responded when exposed to the stimulation of water, air and warmth. "A vine," says the reporter, "peculiar in its conformation and character, with a berry, black, but resembling the current, is one of the novelties the excavating has produced. There is also a running plant, resembling the ice-plant, but of a variety hitherto unknown. Other plants and herbs not to be seen elsewhere in this section have made their appearance, the relics probably of vegetation which flourished in these parts thousands of years ago, before the accumulations and geological mutations of the time had raised our hills to their present altitude." The tone of this account is throughout sober, as is the general status and reputation of the *Express* at this time, and the story is therefore clearly no hoax, but a serious report for serious consideration.⁹

Also tinged with the rainbow of mystery to the common observer was the finding of well preserved sycamore bark at a depth of 398 feet, while boring for an artesian well six miles east of Compton. Mr Stewart, the well driller in question, said that in the course of his business he frequently came upon such remains, at

various depths.¹⁰ Artesian well boring likewise brought to the surface, on the Dominguez rancho, about 1875, from a depth of 250 feet well-preserved cedar wood, which upon investigation was found to have been from the buried trunk. Miners digging a shaft on Fir Mountain about this time found at a depth of 300 feet a well-preserved tree about three feet in diameter.¹¹

An *Express* reporter in 1880 details for us the following: "Mr. J. H. Blanchard showed us yesterday a piece of half-petrified wood taken out of an excavation 76 feet deep somewhere in the southern suburbs of Los Angeles. The workmen first encountered the branches of a tree, which seemed to be standing in an upright position, and as they descended farther they found the heavier limbs and trunk. The excavation is upon the level plain where there is not the slightest indication of volcanic action or of any other great disturbance of nature, and the query is a natural one: 'How came the tree so far beneath the surface?'"¹²

Though the scientist of today will have perhaps several ready explanations of the above frog-seed-wood anomalies which fit neatly into our modern theory of geologic evolution, such reports are more often ignored by professionals. However, we should note how seriously the anomaly or exception to standard geological and biological and botanical belief, was taken by common observers in the period we are discussing. The amateur scientist then, as perhaps today, was not usually case-hardened to ignore observations contrary to current theory, and was often even eager to discuss phenomena generally given the silent treatment in professional scientific discussion.

Less controversial is the report by another well digger, Jack Baysley, who bored a well for Mr. Nadeau, west of town, stating that beginning from a depth of 180 down to 212 feet the auger had pierced a layer of fossil fish and sea shells of various kinds. He further announced that while boring in east Los Angeles he had found 70 feet down a bed of lava of apparent recent formation, ten feet below the permanent water level of that part of the city. This, to his mind, went to show that Los Angeles was once in the crater of a volcano or on the edge of one. Today of course we are

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

aware that the Griffith Park area and eastward was in geological history a hot-bed of volcanic action.¹³

Geological knowledge, then as now, was generally sought for more utilitarian reasons than the proving or disproving of current theories, the introduction of new ones, or the simple contemplation of marvel. In everyday style for instance came Dr. J. B. Trask, State Geologist, to the Los Angeles area in 1854 for a month's survey of the local substrata,¹⁴ and in 1880 Prof. E. T. Cox, the eminent geologist, who proposed ranging the mountains of Southern California, Arizona and Sonora, in quest of likely mineral formations.¹⁵

Mineral collections were popular during the period, and one of the best ever seen here was in the fall of 1880 brought from Arizona, mainly the Tombstone area, by M. H. Kimball, and his friend Mr. Peel, and displayed at the current Horticultural and Agricultural Exposition. Kimball, an artist, arranged the collection of silver, gold, lead and copper ores in the form of an artistic pyramid, crowned by a beautiful crystal of gypsum. There were three hundred samples of ore from as many mines, varying in richness from \$100 to \$10,000 per ton. Silver ore specimens were especially numerous.¹⁶

As an addendum to the geologic story for those who may wish to investigate, the Los Angeles *Star* for March 27, 1872, carried a long discussion of the history of earthquakes in the Los Angeles region up to that date.

In the field of botany, collectors were active from the outset. During the spring and early summer of 1853 our hills and plains were being assiduously explored for new species, by William Lobb, representative of a large nursery in Exeter, England. By August, the time set for his departure, he had collected some 800 specimens of local shrubs and flowering plants, some of them being species previously unknown to botanical science.¹⁷

Lobb had commenced his career as a gardener in Exeter, where he became interested in botany while employed by William Veitch, a nurseryman. Impressed by Lobb's ability, Veitch sent him to South America and to Mexico to collect seeds and plants. He next came, in Veitch's employ, to Oregon and California where he gathered seeds of the new species of trees discovered by Menzies,

Coulter, Douglas and others. He landed at San Francisco in the historic year of 1849 and was seized with gold fever for a time. Alerted by the discovery of the Calaveras Big Trees in the early 1850's, he sent specimens and seeds of these sequoia to England. Several species of plants are named in his honor, and numbers of new trees were first introduced to England and the Continent by his seeds.¹⁸

Another botany collector in and about Los Angeles in the early 1850's was William A. Wallace, who originally had been commissioned by the State to study local flora. But his attention was caught by other interests and he became successively editor of the *Los Angeles Star*, first newspaper in the city, and a member of the original teaching staff of the Los Angeles city schools, being in charge of the boys at School No. 1, at Second and Spring Streets, at its opening in 1855.

As to his capacities as a teacher, we know that he planted shrubbery about the grounds of his school, and had it nipped off by vagrant animals. We also hear that the boys under his guidance complained that he did not know fractions. His time seems to have been so taken up on week-ends and evenings with wanderings among foothill flora that little time remained for the boys' sums.¹⁹

His career as editor was rather happier, for his tastes and abilities seemed more fully expressed in this field. Even here, however, his botanical urge was clear, as evidenced by the following sketch in the *Star*, presumably written by him, in 1853.

Now in midsummer it is very refreshing to take an early morning walk before the heat becomes oppressive, to the bluffs along the river, some two or three miles above the city. The appearance of these hills, at this dry, scorched season which no moisture save the dews of heaven can have reached since the spring rains, is one of fragrance and bloom. The hills are red with the delicate flowers of the *Zauscheneria Californica*—a most singular shrub, in which several distinct species seem to be united. It has the blossom of the *Fuchsia*, the long capsule of the *Epilobium*, while the foliage and growth are similar to that of the *Artemisia*. There are other flowers there: the bright *Seline lascanati* still lingers; the *Dyplacus punisia* is there, and several varieties of the delicate little *Hosackia* are in blossom; and *Helianthus* rears itself in every direction. In the river bottom are many varieties of *Mimulus*, *Oenotheras*, etc. The

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

earth is full of beautiful forms; even deserts are never without some bright spot to gladden the heart.²⁰

A visiting botanist in 1873 was H. N. Bolander, California State Superintendent of Public Instruction at the time. He had been associated with Professor Whitney in the making of the California geological survey, and the friend and companion of Prof. Torrey during his scientific tour of the State in 1865 (Torrey pine). Prof. Bolander was also the author of a work on the forest trees of California.²¹

Not all botanical collecting was focused on the wild flora of our area. In 1882, E. H. Calkins was here from Burlington, Iowa, making a collection of Southern California fruits and trees for the Iowa State Horticultural Society. Its display at Burlington was said to have been much visited and much commented on.²²

One of our most ambitious botanizers was J. C. Oliver, in the early 1880's principal of the Eighth Street School. Previous to his election to this post, Mr. Oliver had taught school at Azusa, where he had made a considerable name for himself as a part-time botanist. Aided by his pupils, he had gathered specimens of about 200 species of plants around and in the canyons above Azusa. The roster of his findings, in the summer of 1883 was published in the Los Angeles *Herald*, by botanical name, filling the better part of a column, and was described as "the first list of the flora of the Azusa district ever published."²³

Later that same summer Oliver returning from an extended botanical visit to the San Gabriel and Dalton canyons, reported that including recent findings he had discovered in all about fifty varieties of plants hitherto unknown. He was planning, he said, to expand his list to include all Southern California plants, and requested the assistance of other amateurs in its completion.²⁴

During the next spring and summer, 1884, Oliver zealously continued his avocation. Two hundred more species were added to his collection, including again several previously unknown. One tiny plant he found growing in the streets of Los Angeles which appeared to have come all the way from South Carolina or Florida, being reported only from these two States. A thorny solanum,

hitherto heard of only in Mexico was found growing near Santa Monica.

His most intensive work that summer was done in the great cienega between Los Angeles and Santa Monica. Repeated trips were made there, and judging by results, this low swampy ground seemed never before to have been thoroughly explored. Here he found growing abundantly, the cardinal flower, *Lobelia splendens*, rated as "the most superb of our California flowers." Previously it had been known only in San Diego County.

Most spectacular of Oliver's finds in the cienega, however, was a *helianthus* not described in the standard *California Botany*. It grew from eight to fifteen feet high, having a long narrow leaf with a soft velvety surface. A specimen was sent to Prof. Asa Gray of Harvard University, who, "very properly and promptly" named it "*Helianthus Oliveri*." A number of other plants not found in *California Botany* were also sent to Prof. Gray for identification.²⁵

A collection of Southern California wild flowers was made for the World's Fair of 1893 in the Jamul mountains near San Diego, by George W. Dunn, Pacific Coast naturalist. One of the most gorgeous of his findings was the yellow bush poppy, growing on a bush seven or eight feet high, the petals yellow, very delicate, and almost as large as a good-sized rose. Its botanical name is *Dendromecon rigidum*. Dunn found also a white bush poppy in the pine groves of Soledad canyon, that the people of San Diego, sixteen miles away, had never before seen, its petals almost pure white. Another flower obtained was the *Garreya elliptica*, a pendant waxy flower eight to ten inches long, on a shrub ten feet high. The root of this shrub was said to weight from fifty to 200 pounds.

Said Dunn: "California by far excels any other State in the Union in the wonderful variety and beauty of its wild flowers. It is not too much to say that a great many of the wild flowers of California are larger and in all respects handsomer than the cultivated flowers of many other States."²⁶

The project for the establishment of a botanical garden in Los Angeles or vicinity was perennially hoped and worked for, during the 1880's and '90's, but never seemed to accumulate momentum enough for translation into actuality. In 1887 Prof. Emory E. Smith

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

stated the aim as follows: "The projected garden will be located on high frost-free ground. Here we will have almost the entire flora of the earth, correctly labeled. For horticulture and agriculture, pomology, floral culture, we will grow every grain, vegetable, fruit and flower that will thrive, saving the immense amount of time, labor and disappointment which always accompanies testing and experimenting by private parties. In connection with the garden we hope in time to establish a museum for the preservation of specimens, for a botanical and horticultural library, and with rooms where insects, diseases and structures can be examined and experimented on."²⁷

But this ambitious plan by some cause misfired. In 1893, once again a meeting was held to discuss establishment of a botanical garden, this time the site was to be Elysian Park. Hancock Banning saw no reason why we should not excel the famous gardens in Sydney, Australia; botanist Dr. Franceschi, a visitor from France compared our possibilities favorably with those at Kew Gardens in England. J. C. Harvey of the Southern California Horticultural Society, viewed such a garden both as a source of general enlightenment and a stimulant for development of economic and ornamental horticulture.²⁸

The fates frowned once again, and the next and apparently last such meeting for the century was held in 1895. Described as "not largely attended," it took place in the Mayor's office, with the Mayor, Park Commissioner and J. C. Harvey the chief persons present. Harvey, as chairman, explained that perhaps a garden could be established containing only the rarest trees and flowers, the Park Commission to furnish water, and care of the garden twice a year. It would also be a place to which privately owned rare trees and other plants in danger of destruction owing to improvements in the city, could be moved. Such destruction at the time was estimated to cause a loss of hundreds of dollars weekly.

The immediate purpose of the meeting was the organization of a botanical society, which should have as its main aim the establishment of such a garden. J. C. Harvey was elected president of the Society, Mr. Mendenhall, secretary, and E. R. Meserve was named curator of the proposed gardens when and if realized. Once

again there is silence, and up to the end of our period nothing definite seems to have been accomplished. Even today in 1956 a botanical garden commensurate with the wealth and educational need of Los Angeles is still a project for the future, and it would seem logical that such establishment, if for the sake only of our cultural reputation and dignity, ought no longer to be delayed.²⁹

Zoology is the field of science that perhaps attracts the interest of a larger proportion of mankind than any other. We need to instance only the present popularity of bird-watching, and the perennial fascination of zoos and natural history museums, on typical Sunday afternoons, over both children and adults.

In the 1870's Los Angeles' most popular place of entertainment for the whole family was the Washington Gardens and Menagerie, then somewhat out of town, near present Washington Boulevard, but available by street car or carriage. It was advertised as the only place in California outside San Francisco where a living menagerie of animals was on exhibition. Here lions yawned, tigers paced back and forth, leopards looked disdainfully at the gaping crowd. Bears dexterously ate peanuts, the porcupine and fox sunned themselves at the doors of their cages, monkeys performed their antics before the laughing onlookers, birds screamed in the aviary, and a host of white mice in a glass box fascinated the children. The animals and birds were fed at three every afternoon. There were also other cultural attractions at Washington Gardens: band music, dancing, songs by professional artists. Lunch tables were provided for family picnics.³⁰ Even today such a grouping of attractions would, we fancy, not go unnoticed.

Zoology collections were being consistently made during these years. In the summer of 1892, Edward Hyatt, an educator of San Jacinto and a scientific amateur of rank, spent two months gathering specimens for the great zoological laboratory at Stanford University. Accompanied on the expedition by his family, and by Charles Stoddard, a former pupil of his and then a student at Stanford, Hyatt explored the mountains bordering the Imperial Valley from San Jacinto south across the Mexican line, with side excursions into the desert and toward the seashore. His chief aim was



—Courtesy Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce

PART OF PALMER COLLECTION

A portion of the display section of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce housed the Palmer Collection of Indian artifacts for many years.

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

to make as complete a showing as possible of the birds, snakes and lizards of Southern California.³¹

A collection of Southern Californian horned toads and tarantulas brought together over a period of a number of years by Dr. C. F. Heinzeman of Los Angeles, were sent to the Paris Exposition of 1878, where they were displayed with the American exhibit.³²

When Mr. Stephens, an ornithologist, was in San Jacinto in May of 1893, he took a morning drive through a cottonwood forest north of town, where to the wonder of local residents, he used almost entirely not a gun but a field glass in his investigations of the high mesa bird life. His gun came into play only when a new or doubtful specimen to his mind required detailed study. Ornithologists, or those who called themselves so, were at this period considered bloody rascals by country folk and lovers of nature generally, and these were pleased to hear him declare: "The true ornithologist is a friend to the birds, and the last one to encourage their indiscriminate slaughter." Thirty different species were identified: cinnamon teal, killdeer, Carolina dove, valley quail, desert sparrow hawk, Nutall's woodpecker, Arkansas kingbird, road runner, black flycatcher, turkey vulture, red-winged blackbird, yellow-necked blackbird, Brewer's blackbird, western meadow lark, Bullock's oriole, house finch, Herman's song sparrow, California shrike, Audubon's warbler, summer warbler, western yellowthroat, least virio, blue gnat-catcher, western bluebird, mocking bird and red-shafted flicker.³³

An ornithological paper was read in 1895 before the Southern California Science Association by Joseph Grinnel, a young scientist of Pasadena. He discussed a single species of bird—the wren—in minute detail, and the whole paper was published in extenso in three columns of the *Los Angeles Herald*. Grinnel described the seven varieties of local wrens: Cactus, Tule, Vigor's (Bewick's), Parkman's, Western Winter, Rock Wren, Canyon Wren. A general discussion of wrens as a species is followed by details of the appearance, locale and habits of each variety, in interesting, semi-colloquial style.³⁴

The collection of birds' eggs has fascinated many of us, from the tree-climbing, nest-robbing stage up through adulthood. All

those who still retain the fascination of this primitive urge will recognize in Dr. A. Davidson of Los Angeles a master of the lodge. In 1892 his collection was held to be the finest in the State. For six years he had gathered, mainly by exchange, specimens of varieties from all parts of Europe and America, as well as from local nests. The grand total numbered more than 6,000 eggs. The specimens had their contents carefully "blown" or extracted, after which they were kept in "clutches" or nestfuls meticulously laid in little square compartments. Side by side, for purposes of comparison, were placed the eggs of European and American species of the same tribe. The European variety consistently showed, according to Dr. Davidson, a more prolific clutch, supposed to be due to climatic differences, the same European fecundity holding good, he said, in animals. His California birds' eggs were generally of brighter color than their European counterparts, but smaller in number. Dr. Davidson also had a total of 3,000 botanical specimens, and a fine showing of shells and insects.³⁵

Concerning stuffed birds—who of us in our youthful days has not seen in grandfather's front room the inevitable hawk, eagle or barn owl, poised on a tree branch, with eyes glaring as in life—relics of a Wild West, the real America of our ancestors? Many colorful species were nearly exterminated by the activity of hunters who killed, stuffed and sold the unfortunate winged creatures as parlor ornaments, as caged songsters, or as decorations for milady's hat and bonnet. Stuffed birds as parlor ornaments, unfashionable today, were quite the rage in the 1870's. An *Express* reporter in 1873 tells us of two large cases of stuffed birds which had been exhibited for some time at Thompson & Gerson's saloon, and were now to be raffled off at John Cashion's Shamrock saloon. Described as fine parlor ornaments, the set, valued at \$235 were to be raffled off for \$150, one dollar per chance.³⁶

Aquatic animals do not seem to figure as highly in science reports of the period as perhaps they should, but we do have a note concerning a paper on marine life read by C. F. Holder in 1895 before the Southern California Science Association. A full page in the *Herald* was devoted to the article, with illustrative drawings. According to Holder, the most valuable food fish in Southern Cali-

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

fornia coastal waters is the yellowtail, a migratory fish, appearing around Catalina from April to midsummer, moving southward by January. Next in value, he says, is sea bass (sea trout), followed in the order of their importance by barracuda and albacore. Mackerel runs, he declares, sporadic, swordfish (sole), halibut, mullet, rock bass, sheepshead, whitefish, flatfish (sole), halibut, mullet, perch, rays, shark, and sunfish; with general notes and statistics on Southern coastal fisheries.³⁷

Sea shell collections were reported from various places. At San Diego in 1871, Mr. Quackenbush placed on exhibition at the store of McCormick & McClellan a cabinet of shells containing 125 different varieties, all gathered in the vicinity of San Diego.³⁸ In Long Beach, Prof. Trowbridge, principal of the Long Beach schools in 1890, together with his wife employed many leisure hours in collecting and studying the mollusks of San Pedro bay. Many rare shells were said to have been found by them.³⁹

Most outstanding of the shell collections was easily that of Dr. Lorenzo G. Yates, of Santa Barbara, ranked as the most complete on the Pacific Coast, and worth between \$30,000 and \$40,000. The work was commenced while the doctor was resident in Centerville, Alameda County. The grouping contained shells from various coasts of America and of Europe, being accumulated chiefly through exchanges with correspondents. A mere catalog of varieties, we are told, would fill four full pages of the average newspaper.

The reporter remarks further:

It is a great pity that there is no suitable place in this city (Santa Barbara) for the display of this valuable collection, some safe depository, roomy and convenient of access. It is now stored in the doctor's rooms, where the greater part must remain out of sight. There has been too much work spent upon it to allow this to continue, too much information and beauty is stored away from public sight in these boxes. The collection should be brought to light and made available generally. Such a project would of course be too much for one man, and must be accomplished by the cooperation of kindred spirits, enthusiastic in the study of nature in her happiest moods."⁴⁰

Entomology also had its place in the sun in Southern California. From Needles on the Colorado River came the word in 1889 that a "government bug and insect hunter" had arrived via team

and wagon from Ogden, Utah. He was said to have come overland in this fashion from the East, making collections on the prairies, mountains and deserts as he went. His name is not recorded.⁴¹

An entomology exhibit was even displayed (1884) in a window of one of Los Angeles' swank department stores, the City of Paris. The collection was assembled and mounted by J. Taylor. Explained the editor in playful mood:

Most of the varmints are of California production and a good part of them Angelenos. There are several tarantulas about as big as small puppies. There are scorpions and centipedes of home growth. In the collection are also beautiful green-, blue-, and bronze-winged specimens whose scientific names would break the editor's pencil. Bugs never were in the editor's line, except when trying to sleep at some country hotel in the dog days.⁴²

In the 1880's vine and citrus pests were beginning to cloud the formerly bright blue sky of the agriculturist. The California State Viticulture Commission in 1880 decided that the State situation was serious enough to send F. W. Morse, Prof. Hilgard's assistant at the State University, on a tour of the vine-growing counties to determine the extent of phylloxera damage and to detect in the initial stage any other insect enemies of the grape grower. In the Southland, first he made the rounds of Riverside vineyards in company with G. W. Garcelon, president of the Riverside Fruit Growers Association, and two others. No mildew was found, and only minor sun damage, and Morse declared the Riverside grape crop the best in the State, considering the youthfulness of its vines. From Riverside, he went on to Orange and Anaheim, winding up in Los Angeles. No phylloxera had to this date been found in Southern California.⁴³

A collection of insects injurious to local fruit culture was made in 1880-81 by Alex Craw, foreman of J. W. Wolfskill's orchard. The notorious Red Scale was prominent in it, also the codling moth, both citrus pests. The collection also contained insects beneficial to fruit growers. This aggregation of unsavory insects, twenty or more species, were to be exhibited at the annual Citrus Fair of 1881, and Craw was also invited to read a paper discussing his find-

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

ings. Craw was considered by some as the best informed man in Southern California on this topic.⁴⁴

Southern California has yielded also its quota of extinct and other animals in fossil form. To the Philadelphia Centennial Exposition in 1874-75 went some specimens of sandstone found in the San Fernando mountains in which were embedded petrified forms of animal life, such as several species of fish, and in one, a bird's head. They were found by a man named Jenkins.⁴⁵

The remains of whales seem to be numerous about Los Angeles. One day in 1892 the men of a contractor named McGreal were at work grading at Pink and Jolucca Streets, in the hills west of Figueroa, near Second, they uncovered a large bony chunk about a foot in diameter, which had the general shape of a whale's vertebra. In their thoughtless curiosity, the workmen struck it with their picks and broke it into several sections. It was found about five feet below the surface of the ground, embedded in a distinctly marked stratum of mixed sand and shale. Other like remains were dug up here, all partially petrified and quite heavy, but with the bone formation perfectly plain. A colored man working with the graders said that he had noticed a number of similar pieces being excavated in other parts of the hills, but as no one paid any attention they were dumped and lost.⁴⁶

Several years later in one of these same hills an Eastern correspondent declares he saw something protruding from a freshly made street cut, which uncovered, proved to be the skeleton of a whale. "Its huge length," he said, "stretched across the street, its tail lost beneath the fashionable houses of the vicinity." The correspondent recalled a prospector friend who had, presumably somewhere east of Anaheim, found a whale's skeleton recognizably exposed in the steep red-earth face of a canyon, at an elevation of 2,500 feet. Another such skeleton he said had been found near San Juan Capistrano.⁴⁷

Not all of these fossils were at once identified; indeed, one collocation of massive antique bones were found by Harry Cole, a farmer near Westminster, was in the early nineties a full-blown mystery. It was found near Anaheim Landing, embedded about twenty feet above high water mark, having some of the character-

istics of a whale, but also furnished with what seemed short, stout legs. It was placed on exhibition at Cole's farm, where varied guesses were made as to its identity. Some thought it to be a whale, others a great sea serpent, still others a vast hitherto undiscovered amphibian.

A reporter described it as follows:

The skull is four feet across. At the back of the skull is a ball and socket joint, the only one in the whole body, where the first vertebra connects with the skull. The brain capacity is very large. There is no cavity in the skull for eyes, and the skull is free from fissures. The jawbones resemble those of a whale, are nine feet long, two feet four inches round in center, slightly curved, and have an opening about three inches wide along their entire length. Between these bones is a long flat bone extending the full length of the jawbones. Its use is obscure. The lower jaw is in two pieces, very thin, which fit closely together. The edges are very smooth and somewhat thicker than at the center of the bones.

Mr. Cole succeeded in securing 32 vertebrae, probably about half the total, as the last vertebra in the series is 12 inches across, and from tip of projections, five feet. There are 27 ribs, from 10-12 feet in length. In connection with this skeleton are two large flat bones resembling the shoulderblade of a mammoth, and two large bones shaped like the bones in a horse's fore leg from the knee to the shoulder. These bones are four feet long and measure four feet two inches around when taken together.

This scientific riddle may still be awaiting final solution.⁴⁸

In ancient days Southern California was apparently a popular grazing ground for the mammoth, a species of extinct elephant. As early as 1854 remains of this mammal were found on the Dominguez rancho near Los Angeles by S. N. Carvalho, artist of Fremont's expedition. They were uncovered near the ranch house, in a mound of earth several feet above the level of the surface. Four perfect teeth were found, the largest weighing six pounds, as well as several bones. The relics were viewed and identified by Dr. Trask, State geologist then stationed at Los Angeles. Two of the teeth were some time after presented to the State Geological Society.⁴⁹ The tusk of a mastodon was unearthed late in 1885 by John P. White, a well digger of Los Angeles, while boring on the farm to F. Borel, 18 miles east, in the Puente hills. It was embedded some forty feet below the surface. Mastodon remains, according to Dr. Yates of Santa Barbara

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

in 1886, had been recovered in some 30 recorded localities in California.

The best known local retrieving ground for the bones of mastodons as well as other prehistoric extinct animals was of course the La Brea rancho tar pits. As early as 1875 Mr. Hancock, owner of the place, found there a then disregarded sharp tusk, which nearly twenty years later was found to be from the sabre tooth tiger. In 1892 rumors got about that there were mastodon remains in the vicinity of the pits, and its discoverer was busy trying to secure a dime museum option on the find. Dr. Davidson gathered some unidentified bones there about this time, but it was 1901 before Prof. W. W. Orcutt found some relics of the sabre-tooth tiger, and the mysterious treasure house of the pits began to be consistently explored. In 1907 Prof. Merriam of the University of California received permission to excavate in the interests of the University for one year. The Southern California Academy of Science did some retrieving in 1908, and gathering of the great collection now at the Los Angeles County Museum was active by 1913. The flow of visitors to the pits was immense—three thousand crowding the area in one afternoon, and in one day 400 teachers. Found engulfed by the tar in primeval times were the remains of various species of unfortunate animals (or possibly fortunate, in respect to perpetuity): tigers, camels, elephants, mastodons and dinosaurs.⁵⁰

The relics of pre-historic elephants were in the 1890's dug up on Catalina Island, and some time prior a splendid specimen was unearthed from an ancient quicksand in a Santa Fe railroad cut near San Diego.

The mountains east of Anaheim and Santa Ana proved a rich field for paleontological researchers. The mines there were especially prolific sources for fossilized animal remains. As early as 1875, what was held to be the skeleton of a primitive horse was taken out of a ditch being dug at the mouth of the Santa Ana River canyon. It was embedded in very solid red clay that required blasting, about twelve feet below the surface, and was overlaid by glacial gravel. Its head was shaped like that of a horse, but had small horns. Col. W. R. Olden of Anaheim reported the find.⁵¹

Some traces of primitive man, too, were found here during

this time. Reports, to be sure, seem rather extravagant. Stanley Reeve, a Los Angeles engineer, whose MS of reminiscences is held by the library of the Los Angeles County Museum, tells how in the 1880's he accompanied Dr. Cannon to Catalina, and how bones and other remains were found, of a race of people of enormous size and height. Further, the bones of an ancient cave dweller were in 1880 reported found in Santiago Canyon.⁵² From the mountains north of Santa Barbara came rumors about the discovery of the skull and arm bones of an ancient man at least nine feet in height. The alleged Santa Barbara discoverers were C. W. Clark of the Morris House of that city, who had a small museum on display there, and Walter Steele, a well-known hunter and mountaineer of that region.⁵³

The discovery in Fresno County in 1891 of the alleged petrified body of a perhaps prehistoric man caused considerable excitement, the curiosity being brought, in tour, to Los Angeles where it was placed on exhibition at 142 North Main Street. It was the figure of a man six feet, six inches in height, with muscles, teeth and nails all intact. Controversy raged pro and con concerning its authenticity, this of course boosting the intake of the body's manager. During its appearance here, a letter was printed in the *Times* as follows:

Regarding the Fresno body, I would argue for its genuineness the fact of its being carbonate of lime, which cannot be moulded; furthermore its anatomical perfectness would preclude its being the work of a sculptor. A physician who examined the body carefully informs me that it would require over 60,000 hair lines to be drawn to imitate the left foot only, which could not possibly be done with a chisel, nor could these percolations be made with sculptor's tools, as they run in every conceivable direction, which attempted by an artist would cause stone to fly and chip.⁵⁴

Indian ethnology has enlisted a surprising amount of interest in Southern California from the time of Hugo Reid to that of our present splendid Southwest Museum in Highland Park. Description of the customs, traditions, and general culture of Southern California Indians during this period, however, is beyond the scope of this article, which will discuss Indian ethnology mainly as developed by archaeological methods.



—Will H. Thrall collection

A CABIN AT DELL'S CAMP

One of the original two built in 1886, which was first used as a stopping place for men on their way to the upper San Antonio mines. It was located across the stream from the present Camp Baldy.



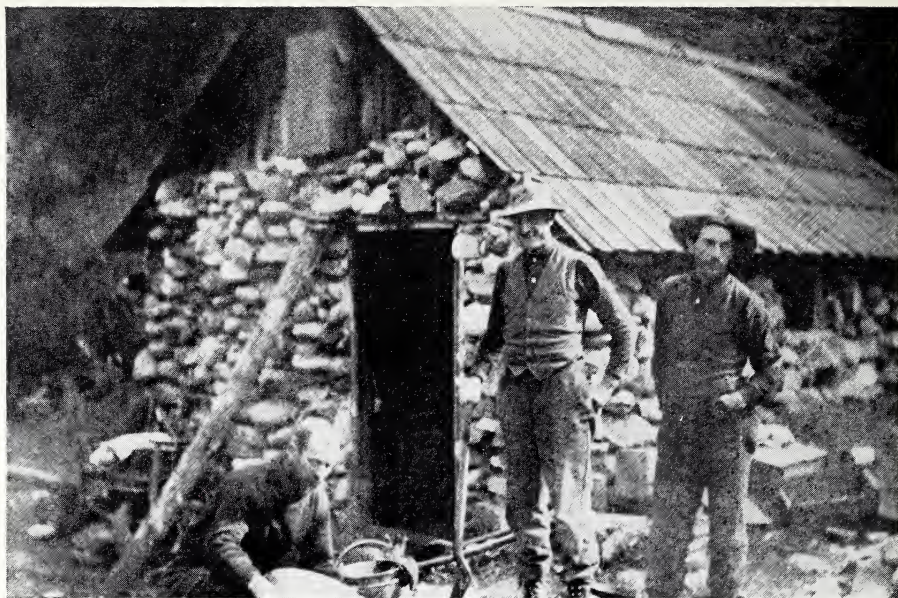
—Will H. Thrall collection

THE SAN ANTONIO CLUB
A later and firmer cabin, mountain headquarters for this active group, now stands at this location.



—Stuart O'Melveny collection

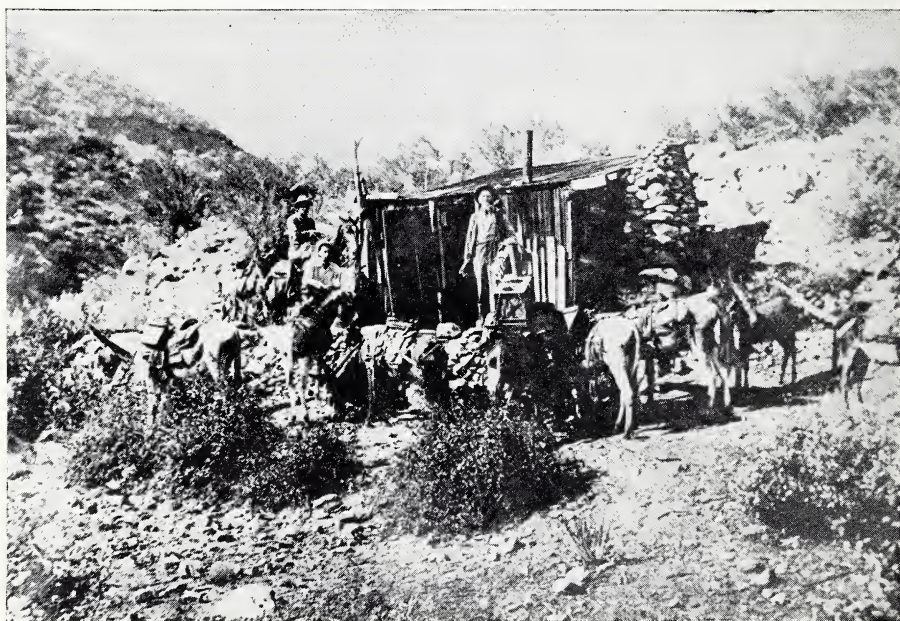
THE CREEL CLUB HEARTH
Creels, guitar, banjo, wine and logs in the fireplace all help convey the atmosphere that prevailed.



—Will H. Thrall collection

EAST FORK MINERS

These unidentified men are typical early prospectors. The Oliver Justice cabin is in the background.



—Will H. Thrall collection

HEATON FLAT MINE

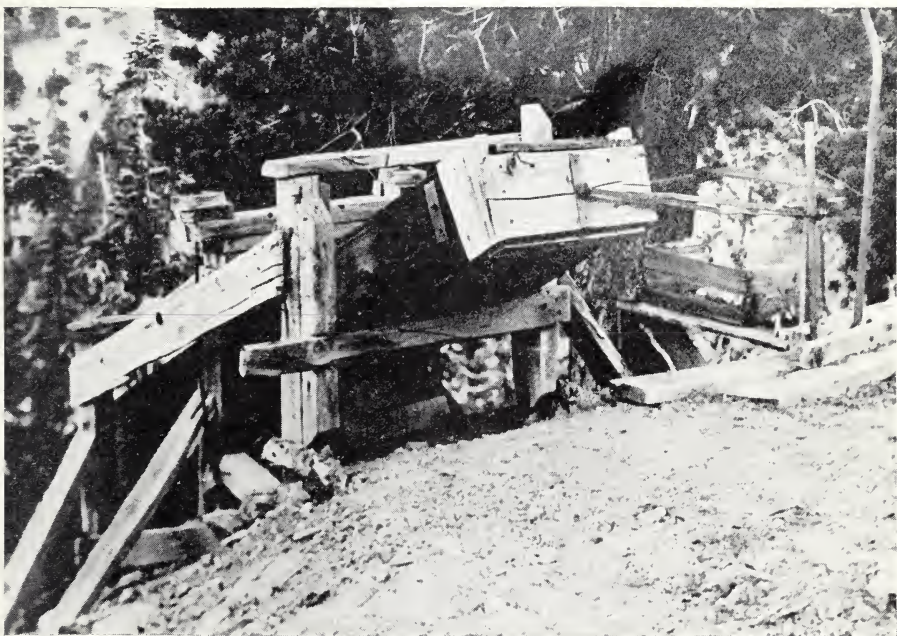
Ralph Follows, E. V. Lucas and William T. Heaton pose at cabin before unloading the burros, 1899.



—Will H. Thrall collection

MINERS' CABINS

Five cabins like these provided shelter for men working the Banks hydraulic mine. Built in the '90's, they remained until destroyed by fire.



—Will H. Thrall collection

DRY WASHER

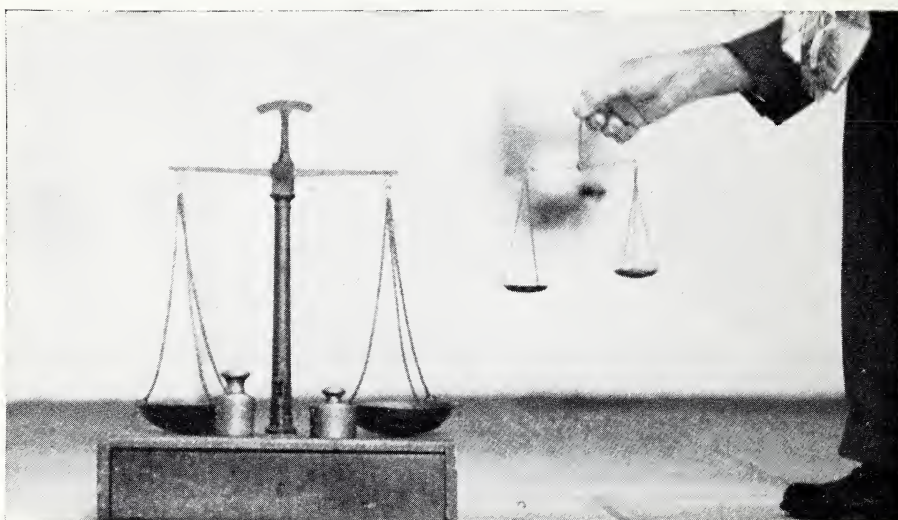
After suspension of hydraulic operations at Banks Gulch, mine owners constructed this dry washer which, they claimed, was the largest ever built.



—Cornelius Smith collection

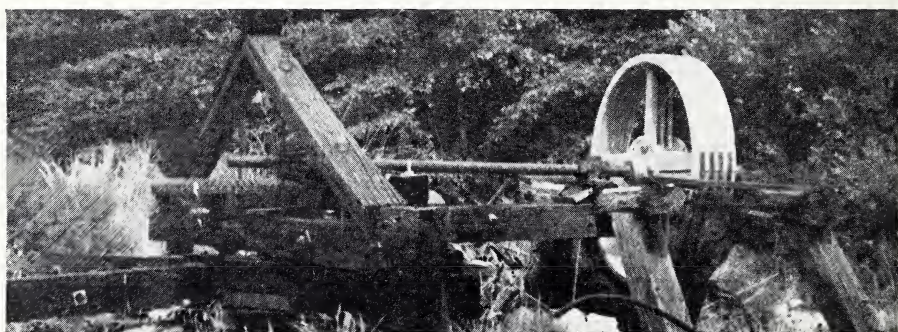
MONITOR USED AT ROBERTS MINE

This relic of the hydraulic era is at the San Gabriel Canyon home of Sedley Peck.



GOLD SCALES

The small set is of average size for weighing individual placer takes and the big set is for large amounts of gold. Weights are sixteen ounces each. Both scales are owned by Cornelius Smith.



ARRASTRE

A machine used for crushing ore to obtain the gold.

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

Though there are evidences of the existence of pre-discovery Indian life in Southern California almost throughout the area, outstanding none the less are certain spots where pottery, tools and other artifacts, and sometimes the remains of bodies are more common than in others, which spots generally correspond to the sites of Indian villages and burial grounds of ancient times. Such locations are found scattered along the Imperial Valley and the mountains bordering it on the west, along the Colorado River, along the coast from Santa Barbara to San Diego, especially on Catalina and the Channel Islands, and at certain places in the triangular mesa area from Santa Monica to San Bernardino and thence to San Juan Capistrano. The *Los Angeles Express* in the summer of 1873 records the comments of a Captain James who had just returned to town from an exploring trip into the Colorado Desert. After noting how the Indians there plait their long hair and dispose it on their heads in such a way as to make of it an effective sunshade, he speaks of the archaeological remains so plentiful there.

If all the crockery in the United States were broken up and scattered, it could not cover so great a space as the fragments of pottery of the lost inhabitants of the desert now cover. Not merely are the utensils of an extinct civilization to be found in these wastes, but the relics of great works of engineering, of aqueducts and embankments, and earthen lines that suggest villages and cities can be traces at various points in this region.⁵⁵

Perhaps the locality most convenient of access for the average amateur and semi-professional delver into Indian antiquities was the general area now occupied by the city of Pasadena. According to R. N. Rust, an enthusiast of the middle 1880's residing in South Pasadena, there was scarcely a sightly knoll in or about the city that did not bear an increment of archaeological value. Rust had gathered hereabouts for his collection an astounding variety of mortars and pestles, round and discoid stones used in playing games, medicine stones, beads and charms cut from stone, tobacco pipes, pottery, human bones and much more.

He recommended as prolific sources the territory beginning at the north end of Orange Grove Avenue, thence following the bluff overlooking the Arroyo Seco, southward to a distance below

the present Arroyo bridge, then eastward to well beyond the present center of town. In all this district, said Rust, scarcely an excavation had been made which did not bring to light some stone implement of a prehistoric people. He himself had picked up on one of the Arroyo Seco bluff sites from an area of about half an acre, thirty well made specimens of mealing stones. In making the Rapid Transit railroad cut, east of the Raymond Hotel, he declared, the workmen had ploughed up more than fifty specimens, and carelessly destroyed most of them. In North Pasadena, too, such articles were found, and even Owen and Jason Brown (sons of John Brown of Harper's Ferry) when excavating for their house on the crest of a spur far up on the mountain side found several articles of ethnological value. Mr. Rust urged all persons who then had or could find any likely specimens, to donate them to the Pasadena library, where such a collection was being formed. "Single specimens," he explained, "in private hands are not of much benefit to the general public, but a full and well-arranged collection is a valuable help to our public school teachers, and should, with the library, be an adjunct to the common school."⁵⁶

Mr. Rust was described in 1883 as "a gentleman of large experience among Western Indians, having spent many years in scientific research among them." He gave in January of that year a lecture on his favorite topic to an audience at the Pasadena Presbyterian church, at a church fund benefit.⁵⁷

Another amateur of Indian ethnology residing in Pasadena in the 1880's was Frank Healy, who was proprietor there of a so-called Natural History store. One trip which he made to the Coahuilla reservations, sixty miles beyond San Jacinto, netted him 93 baskets besides a number of other artifacts, including wash bowls, honey strainers, ollas and portable mills.⁵⁸

One of the most indefatigable of ethnologists in our area in the late seventies was Prof. Paul Shumacher. Shumacher had originally been a member of the U. S. Coast Survey, but for several years prior to coming here had been individually commissioned by the United States government to search for aboriginal antiquities and archaeological remains throughout North America, for deposit in the Smithsonian Institution at Washington. He also collected for

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

the Peabody Museum at Cambridge, Massachusetts. During the summer and fall of 1877 he and his assistants investigated ancient Indian burying grounds on Catalina Island, obtaining 24 cases of arrowheads, bowls and other artifacts, which were then shipped east by way of San Francisco.⁵⁹

In April of the next year Shumacher is again heard of as exhuming remains from Indian mounds on the Cerritos rancho. He spent several weeks here, then some time near Whitewater Station on the railway to Yuma, where he obtained in a few days about five boxes of ethnological material. From here he again went to Catalina Island for another strenuous bout of excavating, then on to Lower California, all in the interests of the Peabody and Smithsonian.⁶⁰

Another Smithsonian ethnology collector here about this time was Dr. Edward Palmer, who accumulated in a comparatively short time, in San Diego county, a comprehensive display of contemporary artifacts. Indian foods—even baked grasshoppers of the Agua Caliente region—were amassed, as were clothing, tools, weapons, pottery, with an exceptionally good showing of the last named. At the same time, Dr. Palmer was gathering here a collection of woods and of fibrous plants such as yucca and cactus with possible economic value, for the Department of Agriculture at Washington. After completion of his local work, he went to Utah to make a similar assemblage.⁶¹

At Santa Rosa Island, one of the Santa Barbara Channel group, Michael Crane, an English sailor, in 1895 found the skull of a gigantic man, seven feet tall, buried with a large woman and an infant. Prof D. P. Stoner, after examination, declared it to be the most perfect skull ever found on the islands. Stoner believed the relic to be Aztec for a number of reasons. First, by its shape and conformation, that compared well with admitted Aztec craniums. Furthermore, there were cultural linkages with the Aztec mode of burial: wrapping with coconut mat, presence of Aztec war clubs (round stones with central holes for the handle), while the body was buried in the Aztec manner under a mass of cactus to keep the wolves away. In general, he reiterated, the skull was clearly that of a race not found on the mainland.⁶²

The largest and best Indian ethnology collection gathered by a Los Angeles amateur for his own enjoyment was, in the 1890's, that of Dr. F. M. Palmer. Palmer was a dentist by profession, a collector by instinct, and an archaeologist by education. At this time there were in America three other collections of aboriginal relics from Southern California: that of the Metropolitan Museum, New York; the Smithsonian Institution in Washington; and the Peabody Museum at Cambridge. None of these, however, said experts, equaled the Palmer collection in coverage of the field or rarity of its specimens. All broken or marred articles he rejected, retaining only perfect examples. Each piece was carefully marked, and the whole arranged and classified with direct reference to their interrelationship. Dr. Paul Schumacher, mentioned above, was a personal friend of Dr. Palmer, and the two worked together much of the time until Schumacher's death.

Dr. Palmer, born in New York, early became interested in the Indians of the State of Michigan, and coming to California about 1875, began the study of local Indian archaeological sites. His active collecting in Southern California extended over a period of seventeen years, from 1877 to 1895, at which later date he declared himself willing to sell it, preferably to a California institution, at a small fraction of its estimated \$10,000 value. By this time the sites of all villages and burial grounds had been thoroughly explored, and all valuable remains removed either to Eastern museums or to Dr. Palmer's collection, making this latter irreplaceable.

Most of the articles were found by Palmer himself in the course of his researches, scouting the counties of Los Angeles, San Bernardino, Ventura, Santa Barbara and San Luis Obispo, as well as the Channel Islands. His most fruitful digging was on the Channel Islands and along the coast, especially between Santa Monica and Redondo Beach.

In primitive times the Indians were very numerous in Southern California, and lived mainly along the seashore and on the islands. Cabrillo remarks seeing either signal or village fires dotting the whole coast, indicating a large population at that time. These natives apparently used the valleys and mesas between the ocean and the mountains only as hunting grounds, no villages of

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

any size having been found by Palmer more than two miles from the coast. They formed, for practical purposes, a single tribe, and were strong enough to keep off the mountain and desert tribes.

Nearly all articles were found within five feet from the surface, though some lay much deeper. Only one tablet, from Catalina Island, showed any proficiency in graphic art, having several drawn figures on it, representative probably of scenes in some legend. A number of articles were decorated by rude diagrams and lines. The most powerful subdivision of the tribe seems to have occupied Catalina. These natives manufactured articles from local soap-stone, and as the workmanship was very good they were much in demand.

Dr. Palmer held in the middle nineties a more or less permanent exhibition of his treasures, first at his home at Seventeenth and Toberman, then in his new home on Forrest Avenue, then finally a partial one at the rooms of the Chamber of Commerce in the central part of the city. The exhibit arrangement at the Chamber of Commerce was: 1st case: mortars and pestles; 2nd: drinking cups; 3rd: mealing stones, hammers, flint points, saws, etc.; 4th; drills, files, pipes, fish hooks; 5th: arrow points; 6th: beads.

In the complete collection made of *stone* were large mortars and small ones, of various shapes and states of development, with their pestles; instruments too for making them; metates or mealing stones for grinding meal, cooking pots of varied shapes, bowls, griddles, cups, baking stones, pipes, mace heads, borers, spatulas, hammers, club heads, charm stones and fetishes, polishing stones, sinkers, drills, files, saws, medicine stones and spindle wheels. Stone ornaments, too, there were—beads, pendants, charms, and rings—all beautifully wrought, some ornamented by incised lines, and most of them with a fine polish.

In the *bone* section were knives, spears, barbs, daggers, awls, perforators, fish hooks, harpoons, sword blades, gilling hooks, shuttles, buckets, paint pots, whistles, hair pins, needles, vessels made from the vertebrae of fishes and ornaments of all kinds—all covered with a thin transparent coat of glue to preserve them from decay.

Made of *Shells* were beads, pendants, charms, pins, rings and

dress ornaments, many of them elaborately adorned—some with gold, some with carving, some inlaid with mosaic.

Chipped stone instruments included arrowheads, spear heads, drills, scrapers, saws and knives.

Of *wood* were made hair brushes (soaproot fibres), spoons, corks, dishes, knife handles, headdresses of twisted fibre, fragments of burial mats and of basket work, fish lines (fibre) and fish hooks.

In 1895 an effort was made to raise the \$1,500 necessary to purchase the collection as a nucleus for the museum that would one day be established in Los Angeles. Included on the committee were J. S. Slauson, E. F. Klokke and C. F. Lummis.⁶³ Eventually, at the founding of the Southwest Museum at the turn of the century, Palmer's entire collection was donated to this institution, where it is at the present time.

As an indication of the more humble amateur's activity we have a note from the Santa Ana *Blade* of 1890 to the effect that while Frank Dillon was digging a deep post hole north of Santa Ana, at a depth of some five feet he struck a mortar and pestle, both highly polished, the inside measurements of the mortar being seven inches in diameter by seven inches deep. The pestle was nine and one-eighth inches long, tapering from one and one-half inches thick on one end to three inches on the other. Their combined weight was 150 pounds.⁶⁴ Another mortar and pestle about the same size were brought in to the Pasadena *Star* office by Ed Gripper of that place. The pestle was found by Gripper at Smith's Mountain near Elsinore and the mortar at Lucerne.⁶⁵

Two discoveries were made by accident, the first at Santa Ana and the other in the San Gabriel canyon, which if valid, as they seem to be, carry astounding implications as to the age of mankind in this area. In 1883 John Sackman at Santa Ana, while boring an artesian well, took from a depth of forty feet a carefully chiseled stone hatchet. He exhibited the relic at his shop, and proposed to present it to the local fire department.⁶⁶

Even more startling is the San Gabriel canyon find. About sixteen miles up the canyon where the water course in that year, 1891, cut across an ancient stream bed now buried under a thousand feet of silt was found a large mortar embedded in the basic

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

rock, with the pestle still on it. It was discovered a hundred feet in the bank by some prospectors, who recognized its significance. The mortar and pestle came into the possession of B. C. Latlin of Alhambra, where in his dooryard the relics were scanned daily by curious passers-by. The reporting editor comments: "There is probably not today in the known world another relic of humanity as old as this, the genuineness of which is capable of such thorough authentication."⁶⁷

Interesting, too, is the mystery stone found in 1870, in Los Angeles, while some workmen were excavating for the new building on the Bella Union Hotel lot. The stone of granite, was seven and a half inches in diameter and two and a half inches thick, perfectly round, and resembling a small grindstone, except that there was no hole for an axle. The two faces of the stone were equally concave, the depression in the center was about three eighths of an inch deep. The edge or outer circumference of the stone, instead of being flat, was worked off in an oval form. The faces of the stone were highly polished, both of the faces as well as the rounded edge being remarkable perfect. No marks about the stone indicated any wear or suggested its use. Local authorities in these matters were baffled.⁶⁸

Another odd item of Indian ethnology is a small metallic pitcher of silver or copper dug up on the Sespe, near Ventura, in 1872. The workmanship was crude and evidently primitive. The weight of the pitcher was twenty-two ounces, and it held about a gill.⁶⁹ And final remark in our account here, the Santa Barbara Natural History Society in 1883 received as a gift from Dr. L. F. Dimmick a crude figure cut from sandstone, about one and one-half feet long, representing a seal. It was uncovered by a Mr. Hails at an old rancharia near Cathedral Oaks.⁷⁰

The beginnings in the 1870's of our present meteorological stations were modest. There being no official records, W. J. Broderick, a Los Angeles bookstore owner, undertook to record daily the highest, lowest and average temperatures on his own thermometer that he had obtained from San Francisco especially for that purpose. These temperature figures were published faithfully for some time by the *Star*.⁷¹

Of meteorological import also was an old building constructed in July, 1882, on the slope of the hill just above the new Normal School—square, rather small and unimpressive. There was only one door and no windows; the walls were extremely thick, and as in an Egyptian tomb the one entrance led to a small inner chamber. This was only twelve feet square and contained numerous strange-appearing instruments. The most interesting fact about the place, however, was that not a particle of iron was used in its construction, and that no one entering it was allowed to bring in any iron or steel in the form even of hair pins, shoe braces or walking stick.

It was the magnetic observatory that had just been established by the Federal government. The only institution like it in the United States was the observatory at Madison, Wisconsin. About twenty of these observatories in all were scattered over various parts of the globe, all in high latitudes of the northern hemisphere.

As to their purpose, it was none other than the discovery—or scientific disprovement—of the elusive Northwest Passage. It seems that in 1879 at the meeting of the International Polar Conference at Hamburg, Germany, the decision was made to establish a circle of observatories around the North Pole. Two of these were set up by the U. S. government outside the limits of the United States proper—one on Point Barrow, the most northern extremity of Alaska, the other on the northern tip of Greenland. The alleged object in view was “from a safe distance to study facts regarding this mystic region so as either to prove the fallacy of the Northwest Passage or to point out the proper time and manner of making it.” As the advantages of a more southerly station had become apparent to the government, Los Angeles was chosen as its site.

The chief practical activity of the observatory, as of all the others, was the checking of magnetic Polar influences, particularly in reference to the deviation of the magnetic needle from true north, and the effects of solar and other atmospheric disturbances upon such deviations. An instrument similar to the modern seismograph was used to detect, by tracings on a long roll of paper, variations from the norm. Magnetic disturbances, it was eventually found, seemed to be caused by, or at least were simultaneous with, the appearance of aurorae and sun spots. The station was operated by

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

the U. S. Signal Service, and employed one or two workers. In 1890, the instruments were reported moved to San Antonio, Texas, where a similar observatory had been built to house them.⁷²

Astronomy, considered by some the most popular, and certainly the most sublime of the sciences, also received its share of attention. Astronomical phenomena such as the fall of large meteors and the appearance of the seldom seen and almost mythical "Star of Bethlehem," were reported in the newspapers.⁷³ And on June 30, 1881, a comet was discovered by Jerry Long, a local Southern Pacific railway conductor.

It was described as in the northern part of the sky, "sailing toward the western sun in the evening and in the northeast in the morning." Mr. Long in the course of his run between Los Angeles and Tulare early in the morning of that day when he first noticed the comet, was passing over the high mesa between Alpine Station and Tehachapi at an elevation of about 4,000 feet. Two nights later, while passing over the same section, he saw the comet again, and enthusiastically roused the passengers to look at the visitant, and a large number, indeed, did actually get up to see it.

The discovery was telegraphed to San Francisco, where it was published in the *Commercial* of June 23. During the early part of July, however, it faded rapidly, and soon became invisible to the naked eye. Astronomers found it to be a visitant with a 74-year cycle.⁷⁴

The "sidewalk astronomer" was conspicuous in Los Angeles. One such gentleman in the late 1870's and early '80's was Mr. Grosser by name, who, for a small fee would allow the passerby to gaze not only through his sizeable telescope but also through the illumined microscope he carried. Grosser from time to time entertained and instructed the high school classes in astronomy by talks and informal views of the starry heavens.⁷⁵

A large telescope costing \$700 was in the eighties one of the attractions of Jake Phillippi's Buena Vista resort on Fort Hill, from whence daylight views of the city, valley and mountains could be had, as well as celestial wonders at night.⁷⁶

At Ventura, in the late '80s a fine telescope was purchased by Dr. Bowers and K. P. Grant of that city, to be erected on the com-

manding hill back of the town. The instrument was to be housed in an observatory on the summit, and the whole made accessible by an easy carriage road to the top. The hill was owned by Mr. Grant.⁷⁷

The present observatory at Palomar was in a sense previsioned, when a party from San Diego was taken to the top of San Miguel mountain one night in 1890, and reported a remarkable view through a three-inch glass of the double stars *Antares* and *Arcturus*, for a like view of which a glass of from five to nine inches was said to be required elsewhere. They were also able to see the "fish-mouth" nebula at the head of *Orion's Sword*, as well as six of the octuple stars, also the beautiful double stars in *Orion's Belt*. These observations were said to be in the nature of tests, and the results conclusive proof of the wonderfully clear atmosphere of this region for astronomical observations.⁷⁸

The astronomical observatory at Mount Wilson has an interesting history, is in fact a kind of scientific success story where persistence, pluck and unselfishness at last found their due reward. It begins in 1887 when E. F. Spence of Los Angeles donated \$50,000 for the erection of a local observatory. Mt. Wilson and various other possible sites were discussed, some holding the view that Mt. Wilson was too often the gathering place for clouds and mist, and suggested instead "Pine Top," some five miles north of San Fernando, being higher than Wilson and far enough from the ocean to be free of fogs and vapor. It was assumed that San Fernando land owners, in the then booming times, would donate \$100,000 to have the observatory there.⁷⁹

In the spring of 1888, President M. M. Bovard of the University of Southern California interested Dr. W. H. Pickering, Harvard astronomer, in possibilities of observation from Mt. Wilson with Pickering's hand thirteen-inch telescope. Some months later, in January, 1889, an astronomical investigating party made its toilsome way, by the narrow trail, to the summit. In this group were President Bovard; Professor Pickering; Alvin G. Clark, the optical instrument maker; Captain Frasier, manager of the Lick Observatory on Mt. Hamilton, and others. There on the snow-capped peak, President Bovard was presented, in a surprise ceremony, with "a beautiful silk flag, bordered by a fringe of orange-colored silk and

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

fastened to a cedar stick." This in recognition by the others of his activities in behalf of the projected observatory.

Said Captain Frasier upon this occasion:

"It was only a few years ago that Wilson's peak was the home of the painted Indian. Here the bandits made their rendezvous and formulated their plans to make incursions into the peaceful valley below; but a great change has come, and here the sentinels of science will stand and watch the procession of the stars as they pass. Here the world will come to learn of that which is grand and sublime in the world, and the comets as they go down through the *Milky Way* will sound its praises through the remotest years."

On the twenty-ninth of the same month, January, an order was placed by the newly installed trustees of the Spence Observatory, as it was to be called, with Alvin Clark & Sons for what was then the largest telescope in the world, a forty-inch instrument, as well as a twenty-four-inch achromatic lens for photography. Meantime, while these lenses were being manufactured, it was decided that Pickering was to bring up Mt. Wilson the thirteen-inch telescope, which he had just used at Willows in the northern part of the State to photograph an eclipse of the sun.

A force of men at once set to work improving the trail to the summit—the trail originally built by Don Benito Wilson back in 1864 to track horse thieves and to get wood for orange boxes and barrel staves.

The Pickering instrument had two lenses, one for direct observation, the other for photography, and was in general made in such a way that it could be easily taken apart for transportation, the heaviest piece weighing only 600 pounds. So the telescope was dragged to the summit piece-by-piece by mules, on a wooden sled with an iron roller, underneath about half-way back, with a caster wheel and steering bar at the rear. On the summit a small dome was built to house the instrument, and a four-room house was built for the occupancy of the observers.

By the end of April the telescope had been set up, and in May star-photography was well under way. Stars in the constellation *Ursa Minor* were among the first subjects. In December, 1890,

however, this telescope was removed from Mt. Wilson and transferred by Harvard to Arequipa, Peru, in the South American Andes.

Then came difficulties. A financial crisis set in throughout the country, and it was found impossible to raise sufficient funds to pay for the instruments ordered from the Clark company. So finally this forty-inch telescope was purchased by the University of Chicago and installed in its Yerkes Observatory in Northern Wisconsin.

More than ten years passed before the Mt. Wilson project again could be seriously considered. Meantime, Professor Lowe, after whom Mt. Lowe, next to Mt. Wilson, is named, decided to purchase out of his own funds several telescopes and install them in suitable housing on the summit of Echo Mountain, back of Pasadena. The story is a remarkable one. Five telescopes in all were purchased—a thirty-seven-inch reflector for photography, and four refractors, one with a sixteen-inch lens, one twelve inches, and two of eight inches each.

Not only did this extraordinary man buy telescopes and provide housing on the mountain, but he also built an access railroad to Echo Mountain, together with the famous incline. During 1893 the railway to the summit was completed, ultimately by public aid, and by October, 1894, the observatory was finished and the sixteen-inch telescope ready for installation. The observatory was a substantial building thirty feet in diameter, and it was planned to cover the entire structure with some bright material so that it would "glisten in the heavens like a silver ball." Preparations were made to erect the thirty-seven and one-half-inch glass on Mt. Lowe. Dr. Lewis Swift, an outstanding stellar scientist, had previously been secured as head astronomer and superintendent of the Echo Mountain construction.

Resuming the story of Mt. Wilson, in 1902 Andrew Carnegie announced that he had donated the sum of \$10,000,000 for educational purposes. It was hoped, by local observatory sponsors, to obtain a part of this sum for the Mt. Wilson observatory. On June 25, 1903, the mountain was inspected by a group including Professor G. E. Hale of Yerkes. Andrew Carnegie himself became much interested, and in 1904 the fairy godfather waved his wand, the

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

Carnegie Institution voting the princely sum of \$300,000 to erect a Mt. Wilson observatory. A 100-inch glass, ordered from St. Gobain, France, in 1907, was installed in 1910. For some time prior to 1910 a sixty-inch reflector was used for photography, under the revolving dome.⁸⁰

Some notes on a few individual scientists of standing in the Southland are in order. In 1883 the publishers of the standard *Monteith's Physical Geography* decided upon a new edition of the popular text, and asked various scientists in England and the United States to furnish specimen chapters. Of these, the one submitted by Professor J. W. Redway of the Los Angeles State Normal School was considered the best, and he was consequently chosen editor.⁸¹

Dr. W. H. Masser of Los Angeles was an experimental physicist and chemist here in the 1890's. He was especially interested in the principle of the conservation of energy and in the then new elements or argon and helium. A graduate of Annapolis, he later took an M.D. degree at the University of Pennsylvania. He came to California in 1884, and since 1887 devoted most of his time to investigations in molecular physics.⁸²

Dr. Lorenzo G. Yates of Santa Barbara ranked high as a natural history collector in this period. Born in England in 1837, he came to America and studied medicine and dentistry, being constantly active in his profession, joining with it a continuous pursuit of science. He came to California early, and in this then unlimited field began his collections, which in 1890 were held to be the largest on the Pacific Coast, with printed catalogues for each department. His first large collection of minerals, shells, fossils, etc., was sold to Wabash College, Indiana. He was an expert, too, in ornithology, anthropology and botany. Author of several books, in 1891 he had a MS ready for publication entitled *Aboriginal Weapons*, illustrated by 200 figures from drawings by the author; also a MS entitled *All Known Ferns*.⁸³

Clubs and associations for the encouragement of scientific knowledge were quite active. In 1881 a Natural Science Club was organized in the Los Angeles High School. It met once or twice a month to hear talks by prominent persons of scientific attainments. A collection, mainly of minerals and plants, presented to it by the

Board of Education was added to from time to time by members of the club interested in field work. Its zoological specimens by 1882 numbered fifty, botanical 180, mineral 350, fossils, sixty-five, miscellaneous 350.⁸⁴

The Southern California Academy of Sciences has been widely influential ever since its organization in 1891. On November 6 of that year about twenty persons interested in scientific theory and research met in the parlors of the Hotel Lindley in Los Angeles. Here was formed the Southern California Science Association, which some years later (1896) reorganized under the present name. The aims of the Association were stated to be the interchange of scientific thought and opinion, and to "elicit and diffuse a taste for such studies where yet unformed," and to aid in the practical extension of science facilities.

The first meeting was called to order by M. H. Alter, who was elected first president. He was succeeded by Dr. Anstruther Davidson, William H. Knight, W. A. Spalding and Abbott Kinney. By the end of its first year of existence membership had risen to seventy; by 1902, to two hundred. For the first several years the Association met monthly as a whole, devoting each meeting to a different phase of science. In January, 1893, for instance, the evening was devoted to ornithology, the month after to geology, and so forth. By 1896 an astronomical section had been formed, with twenty-three active members, which met once a month in addition to the general Academy meeting. The turn of the century found four sections formed: astronomy, biology, botany and geology, each with a separate monthly meeting, as well as the general one.

At each meeting one or more papers were read by members, often describing their own scientific experiments and activities. To illustrate, Dr. Davidson read papers on his researches in insect life, the origin of California fruit, and the flora of Los Angeles County. Judge Minor gave a lecture on petroleum and theories of its origin; Professor Coquillett read papers of the painted lady butterfly and other enthomological themes. B. W. Griffith presented facts on insects injurious to fruit trees, and Dr. L. C. Yates discussed ocean currents along the Channel Islands. Alice J. Merritt's subject was California wild flowers, Abbott Kinney spoke on eucalyptus, George

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

E. Franklin on the U. S. Weather Bureau. Other topics were hydrography, iron deposits, oil geology, ornithology, sea shells, fish, thory of storms, star clusters and nebulae, X-rays, cosmic evolution and applied electricity.

In 1896 a camera section of the Academy was also active. At the August camera section meeting of that year interesting photographs that had been made the month before were exhibited. These were of historic and picturesque interest: the twin palms, fifty feet high, at the corner of upper Main and Alpine Streets; the adobe of Francisco Ygnacio Garcia on Bellevue Avenue, showing the aged don in his accustomed position, propped in the shade against the side of the old adobe. Though hale and hearty, Garcia was 114 years old, having been born in Hermosillo, Mexico, in 1782. There was also a picture of an old ice-cream vendor, of a native California family, standing before his palm embowered home at 740 Castelar Street, dressed in his best suit of clothes, his ice-cream freezer balanced, as customarily, on his head, his hands at his side.⁸⁵

There was also a Society of Natural History in Ventura. A note dated December 18, 1884, tells of a meeting of this society, at which Rev. A. D. Seward presented a paper on "Instinct," which is said to have precipitated an animated discussion.⁸⁶ A club of the same name flourished in Santa Barbara in the late 1870's. The program of a typical meeting was as follows:

"Mrs. Ellwood Cooper read a paper on ferns. Monsieur L. de Cossac, a French savant, exhibited a number of Santa Cruz Island relics and spoke in French upon them. Prof. Gunning also made a few remarks."⁸⁷

Though actual establishment of a city or county museum in Los Angeles was delayed until thirty years later, John B. Niles in 1881 made a stirring appeal for a municipal museum. Says he:

"The advantage to our city of a collection of specimens of the natural history of this section, as well as relics of its Indian and prehistoric inhabitants, would be great. Gathered together and preserved, they not only excite curiosity and stimulate research, but add to the mass of material out of which one day will be written the history of early and prehistoric races in this country. Many interesting local relics have been absorbed by Eastern museums, but enough are left to form a museum of great value and interest. Santa Barbara has taken the lead in Southern California here, and possesses several large individual collections of

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

great merit. We should call a meeting to organize a Southern California Scientific Association or Los Angeles Museum Society on a sound and permanent basis. Southern California geology and mining specimens can and should also be collected, since none of any value yet exists."⁸⁸

The movement for the establishment of the present Los Angeles County Museum of History, Science and Art thus had an early advocate. The Museum grounds on Exposition Boulevard from 1872 to 1898 was called Agricultural Park and used as a fair grounds and race track. Beginning in 1898 strong support, led by William A. Bowen, was given the idea of converting so-called Agricultural Park into a bonafide park. This once achieved, the *Historical Society of Southern California* joined with the Southern California Academy of Sciences, the Fine Arts League and the Cooper Ornithological Society to persuade the County Board of Supervisors to erect a building there to house the united collections of these societies. This building was accordingly begun in July, 1910, its cost to be about \$250,000.⁸⁹

The fact that Los Angeles had no public museum up to such a late date was certainly not because of a lack of specimen materials or of persons eminently qualified to gather these and to organize such an institution. Not always are such persons found in wealthy and highly educated surroundings. Consider the case of Mrs. John A. Kline, a housewife, in 1874 living on the outskirts of town in an old adobe house, who had collected under her humble roof the makings of a museum of which the city in those early years could have been proud.

One day a roving reporter happened to be wandering near what was then the Macy Street covered bridge over the Los Angeles River. Not far away was the well-known Alden fruit drying establishment, while scent from the surrounding orange groves hung sweetly heavy upon the air. The reporter, being thirsty, happened to knock at Mrs. Kline's door and was invited to enter. His hostess was a modest woman in an apron, encircled by a bevy of children. Following a glass of cold water with a bit of conversation, the reporter noticed the large chests that were piled high at one end of the long room. What was in them?

In answer, Mrs. Kline lifted the lid of the nearest. The report-

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

er gasped. There lay scientific treasure indeed; the skins of beautiful birds of paradise with sweeping golden plumage; Australian pheasants with gaudy feathers; and an egret, or "crane of paradise," with a most exquisite sweep of snow-white plumage covered round with a gauzy drapery of feathers enveloping the body like a crepe shawl. In other boxes were more birds, all ready for the taxidermist's hand, a great variety, many of them natives of Southern California.

In still other chests was a fine and extensive collection of insects, including tarantulas, centipedes, scorpions, as well as less sinister insect species. There were two trays of butterflies and moths, all the insects impaled and perfectly prepared.

The reporter went back to his office and wrote glowingly about Mrs. Kline, suggesting that the City Fathers or some other group aid Mrs. Kline in making her collection available to students and amateurs of zoology throughout the city.

The scene changes. It is now 1882. Mrs. Kline is no longer hostess, and we are introduced to widower John A. Kline. The intervening eight years have not been wasted—the birds now preen themselves on stick and bough, endowed by the taxidermist with fullness of specious life. The collection, too, has been greatly enlarged.

Of domestic species there are golden orioles, many varieties of humming birds and of owls, fifteen varieties of ducks and geese, two species of mocking birds, ten of hawks, three of pelicans, four of bluebirds. There are three varieties of quail, seven of woodpeckers, many warblers and wax-tips, five kinds of swallows, two of honey-sucker, thirteen of wrens, five of sea-gulls. There are individual specimens of the condor, ibis, eagle, yellow-hammer, white turtledove and California magpie.

There are foreign birds also: The Australian hart pheasant, six species of parrots, two of the velvet bird from Sidney. There is a very fine display of foreign humming birds; there are Indian pheasants, Brazilian red-birds. The trays of butterflies have multiplied, as have the other species of insects.

"All in all," concludes the reporter, "it is a rare and choice collection in natural philosophy, and speaks well for the industry

and refined taste of one of our citizens. Such a selection of the beauties of nature properly displayed in a good hall would make a museum that would add much to the attractions of our city."⁹⁰

Finally, there is the museum-minded doctor in Ventura. The years was 1889. Dr. Bowers' scientific library was believed to be the largest at the time in Southern California, occupying one side of a 23 foot room, with eight tiers of shelving. His collections comprised minerals, fossils, shells, Indian antiquities and other items, totaling 50,000 specimens. His display of California arrowheads was said to be the finest in the world.

"The Doctor's fossil collection," says the observer admiringly, "ranges from microscopic infusoria to giant ichthyosaurus. There are the head and teeth of a sea lion found in the Santa Paula Mountains; vertebrae of monstrous sharks with teeth six inches in length and five in breadth; teeth of the mastodon and fossil elephant; bones of the extinct llama found near Ventura, the animal being one third larger than existing camels; also the fossil horse found in this vicinity."⁹¹

And so we conclude our remarks on the development of science in Los Angeles and Southern California during the first fifty years of American occupation. It is a record that proves that though our region was still young and preoccupied with building and organizing a new industrial, cultural and social system, nevertheless much was accomplished in the field of science, especially by enthusiastic amateurs, much that does credit to the intelligence and far-sightedness of our predecessors.

NOTES

1. San Diego *Herald*, Nov. 5, 1852.
2. San Diego *Herald* Apr. 24, 1854.
3. Los Angeles *News* Jan. 25, 1861.
4. Los Angeles *Express* Mar. 26, 1881 (p. 2 col. 3).
5. Los Angeles *News* Apr. 27, 1866.
6. San Diego *Herald* Feb. 14, 1852.
7. Los Angeles *Herald* Jan. 28, 1879.
8. Los Angeles *Herald* June 20, 1877 (p. 3 col. 3).
9. Los Angeles *Express* Aug. 20, 29, 1876.
10. Los Angeles *Express* Mar. 18, 1873.
11. Los Angeles *Herald* June 20, 1877 (p. 3 col. 3).
12. Los Angeles *Express* Apr. 8, 1880.
13. Los Angeles *Herald* Nov. 23, 1883 (p. 3 col. 3).
14. Los Angeles *Star* Sept. 21, 1854.
15. Los Angeles *Commercial* Aug. 8, Sept. 19, 1880.
16. Los Angeles *Commercial* Oct. 7, 26, 1880.
17. Los Angeles *Star* Aug. 6, 1853.

Development of Science in Los Angeles and Southern California

18. Alice Eastwood: "Early Botanical Explorers on the Pacific Coast"; *Calif. Hist. Soc. Quart.* 18: (1939) 343. Lobb died in San Francisco in 1863.
19. Laura Evertsen King: "Pioneer Schools and Their Teachers"; *Pub. Hist. Soc. So. Calif.* 4 (1898) 149. See also the present author's sketch of education in Los Angeles in the same publication 1951.
20. Los Angeles *Star* Aug. 27, 1853.
21. San Diego *Union* Apr. 9, 1873.
22. Los Angeles *Herald* Feb. 3, 1882.
23. Los Angeles *Herald*, July 12, 1883.
24. Los Angeles *Herald* Aug. 26, 1883 (p. 3 col. 2).
25. Los Angeles *Times* Sept. 26, 1884. Los Angeles *Herald* Dec. 4, 1884.
26. Los Angeles *Herald* Mar. 6, 1893 (p. 5 col. 4).
27. Los Angeles *Herald* Jan. 1, 1887 (p. 3 col. 3-4).
28. Los Angeles *Herald* Aug. 20, 1893.
29. Los Angeles *Herald* Oct. 20, 1895 (p. 11 col. 2). That there was considerable interest among amateurs in botanical collection is demonstrated by an advertisement offering a complete line of flower, fern, and moss books, shell albums, and moss boxes. all manufacturer in this city. They were recommended as gifts for sending to Europe and the East.
30. Los Angeles *Express* Jan. 12, 1876.
31. Los Angeles *Express* July 27, 1892 (p. 8 col. 4).
32. Los Angeles *Herald* May 22, 1873.
33. Los Angeles *Herald* May 22, 1893 (p. 4 col. 3); San Jacinto Register.
34. Los Angeles *Herald* Jan. 13, 1895 (p. 19 col. 3-5).
35. Los Angeles *Express* May 20, 1892.
36. Los Angeles *Express* Oct. 10, 1873.
37. Los Angeles *Herald* Nov. 24, 1895 (p. 28 col. 1-7).
38. San Diego *Union* July 13, 1871.
39. Los Angeles *Express* Feb. 15, 1890 (p. 8 col. 3-4).
40. Santa Barbara *Independent* Dec. 23, 1883.
41. Needles *Bazoo* Mar. 23, 1889.
42. Los Angeles *Express* Mar. 23, 1883.
43. Riverside *Press and Horticulturist* Sept. 11, 1880 (p. 2 col. 3).
44. Riverside *Press and Horticulturist* Feb. 5, 1881 (p. 2 col. 5).
45. Los Angeles *Herald* Oct. 15, 1874.
46. Los Angeles *Express* Apr. 26, 1892.
47. Los Angeles *Herald* Feb. 5, 1895 (p. 8 col. 7); Corr. Philadelphia Times.
48. Los Angeles *Herald* Apr. 6, 1892 (p. 6 col. 1).
49. Los Angeles *Star* Sept. 21, 1854. Los Angeles *Express* Jan. 2, 1886 (p. 8 col. 8).
50. Florence Josephine Seaman: "A Brief History of Rancho La Brea"; *Pub. Hist. Soc. So. Calif.* 9 (1912-14) 253-6. Los Angeles *Express* Sept. 15, 1892.
51. Los Angeles *Express* Nov. 9, 1878 (p. 2 col. 3); Anaheim *Gazette*, Los Angeles *Herald* May 7, 1875 (p. 3 col. 3).
52. Los Angeles *Commercial* Mar. 9, 1880.
53. Santa Barbara *Independent* Sept. 8, 1883.
54. Los Angeles *Herald* Feb. 5, 1891. Los Angeles *Times* Mar. 4, 1891.
55. Los Angeles *Express* Aug. 27, 1873.
56. Pasadena *Star* Dec. 22, 1886.
57. Los Angeles *Express* Jan. 18, 1883 (p. 3 col. 5).
58. Los Angeles *Express* July 3, 1889 (p. 6 col. 2).
59. Los Angeles *Herald* Nov. 13, 1877 (p. 3 col. 3).
60. Los Angeles *Express* Apr. 6, 1878 (p. 3 col. 3). Los Angeles *Herald* May 4, 1878.
61. San Diego *Union* Sept. 23, 1875.
62. Los Angeles *Herald* May 9, 1895.
63. Los Angeles *Herald* Nov. 8, 1895 (p. 12 col. 1-2). Los Angeles *Herald* Nov. 15, 1893 (p. 4 col. 4). Los Angeles *Herald* June 30, 1895 (p. 8 col. 1-2).
64. Los Angeles *Express* June 23, 1890 (p. 7 col. 2); Santa Ana *Blade*.
65. Los Angeles *Express* Feb. 6, 1889 (p. 3 col. 3); Pasadena *Star*.
66. Los Angeles *Herald* Aug. 21, 1883 (p. 2 col. 2); Santa Ana *Standard*.
67. Los Angeles *Herald* Jan. 5, 1891.
68. Los Angeles *Star* July 9, 1870.
69. Ventura *Signal* June 15, 1872.
70. Santa Barbara *Independent* Dec. 2, 1883.
71. Los Angeles *Star* June 12, 1870.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

72. Los Angeles *Telegram* Aug. 21, 1882. Los Angeles *Express* Mar. 16, 1883. R. E. Halter: "The U. S. Magnetic Observatory at Los Angeles"; *Pub. Hist. Soc. So. Calif.* 1 (1888-89) 30-32.
73. San Bernardino *Times* Dec. 16, 1881. Los Angeles *Express* Mar. 18, 1873.
74. Los Angeles *Commercial* June 28, 29, July 3, 1881.
75. Los Angeles *Express* Jan. 23, 1880.
76. Los Angeles *Herald* Aug. 31, 1883 (p. 3 col. 3).
77. Los Angeles *Express* Oct. 26, 1889 (p. 9).
78. Los Angeles *Express* Sept. 26, 1890 (p. 6 col. 1); Pomona *Times*.
79. Los Angeles *Herald* June 19, 1887 (p. 8 col. 1).
80. Sources for the Mt. Wilson-Echo Mt. story: William R. Staats: *California Yankee* (Claremont, Calif. 1946) 56-66, 122-5. Los Angeles *Herald* June 19, 1887 (p. 8 col. 1). Pasadena *Union* May 25, 1889. Los Angeles *Herald* Sept. 13, 1893. Los Angeles *Express* June 21, 1894. Los Angeles *Times* Jan. 28, 1889. Los Angeles *Times* Feb. 5, 1889. Los Angeles *Express* Apr. 3, 1889. Los Angeles *Herald* Oct. 14, 1894.
81. Los Angeles *Herald* June 14, 1883.
82. Los Angeles *Herald* May 12, 1895.
83. Santa Barbara *Independent* Feb. 21, 1891.
84. Los Angeles *Commercial* Oct. 8, 1881. Los Angeles *Herald* Mar. 4, 1882. Los Angeles *Express* Mar. 3, Apr. 11, Oct. 14, Nov. 4, Nov. 22, 1882.
85. Sources for Academy of Sciences: *Bulletin So. Calif. Acad. Sciences* I no. 1 p. 3: "History of the Academy." *Constitution and Bylaws of the Southern California Science Association* (Los Angeles n. d. 1892). Los Angeles *Herald* Jan. 27, 1893 (p. 8 col. 1). Los Angeles *Herald* May 13, 1896 (p. 5 col. 1-2). Los Angeles *Herald* Aug. 2, 1896 (p. 5 col. 2).
86. Ventura *Democrat* Dec. 18, 1884.
87. Los Angeles *Express* May 3, 1878 (p. 3 col. 1); Santa Barbara *Press*.
88. Los Angeles *Express* Sept. 10, 1881 (p. 3 col. 5).
89. J. M. Guinn: "The Museum of History, Science and Art"; *Pub. Hist. Soc. So. Calif.* 8 (1909-11) 5-8.
90. Los Angeles *Express* Sept. 26, 1874 (p. 3 col. 2). Los Angeles *Commercial* Apr. 14, 1882.
91. Los Angeles *Express* Oct. 26, 1889 (p. 9).

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

(Continued from the March issue)

By Charles Clark Vernon

Chapter II

EXPLORATORY ACTIVITIES



AS INDIANS WITHDREW FROM THE SAN GABRIEL MOUNTAINS to take their place under the missions, a new era in the story of the range began. To the White man, Spanish and American, the mountains were new and unfamiliar, and what lay concealed deep in the canyons, behind the front range, or under the earth's crusty surface was a mystery.

To the first white men who came into Southern California, the San Gabriels served as boundary, barrier and shelter. They provided a landmark or boundary which separated the Los Angeles plains from deserts north and northeast. As a barrier they forced early explorers and later travelers to make long journeys, both east and west, and to skirt the mountains by the Cajon or San Fernando Passes, since there are no natural passes across them. And finally, it is clear that the southern valleys have always benefited from both the shelter from desert climate afforded by coast range mountains, and from their streams which are so important to California life.

Spanish Californians, the first white arrivals, put the mountains only to limited use. They took out a little timber, did some hunting, and relied upon the range for much of their water. The latter was probably the most important resource of the San Gabriels, and in those early days prior to the coming of the American, was relatively plentiful on the plain south of the mountains. A number of streams from the foothills ran all summer, and the water table lay close to the surface. Several year-round streams were located where the Oak Knoll district of Pasadena is now situated. In fact,

it was to this area that the Mission San Gabriel ran water tunnels for the operation of their mill, and the rumored mission-to-mill tunnel would then have been impossible because of the abundance of ground water.¹

On the San Gabriel River, or Rio de San Miguel as it was first called,² was the original site of the Mission San Gabriel. The location was near the present intersection of Rosemead and San Gabriel Boulevards, on the right bank of the river. Fages described it as "on a hill down the slopes of which flow numerous streams of water . . ."³

Hunting was never vital to the Spanish. Yet they did hunt in the mountains, or more especially in the foothills and canyon mouths, for sport and for pleasure. One sport which their hunting made possible is so notable as to be recounted in many stories. Among the best of these is an account, in Bell's *On the Old West Coast*, of a bear and a bull fight in Los Angeles about 1800.

Tied to a huge post in the center of the old adobe-walled quadrangle he [the bear] stood almost as high as a horse . . . His hind feet were tethered with several turns of strong rawhide reata, but were left about a yard apart to give full play . . .

By the time the bear had stormed around long enough to get well limbered up . . . the signal was given . . . and in dashed a bull through an open gate . . . He too, like old bruin, had been captured with the noosed lasso in a sudden dash of horsemen on a little flat . . .

No creature is so ready for immediate business as is the bull turned loose in an amphitheatre of human faces . . . now . . . he rushed across the ring directly at the enemy as if he had been looking for him all his life.

With wonderful quickness for so large an animal the bear rose on his hind legs . . . Then up went the great paws, one on each side of the bull's head . . . as bull and bear went rolling over together. In a twinkling the bear was on his feet again, but the bull lay limp as a rag, his neck broken.

In rode four horsemen and threw reatas around the feet of the dead bull . . . as they dragged the body of the vanquished victim out one gate, the runway to the bullpen was opened once more and a second bull . . . charged into the arena . . . over went both in a swirl of dust while the crowd roared and cheered . . .

This time the grizzly rose more slowly than before, nevertheless he rose while the bull lay still in death.

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

Soon another bull shot toward the center of the arena . . .

Again the horsemen rode in to drag out a dead bull. But the grizzly now looked weary and pained . . .

The crowd yelled more loudly than ever for another bull . . .⁴

The sport continued until an exhausted bear could no longer ward off the attack of furious bulls, and succumbed to one of the charges, usually by the third or fourth longhorn. Only then was the crowd satisfied.

A favorite spot for vaqueros to obtain the grizzly for this barbarous sport was the Arroyo Seco in the vicinity of the present Rose Bowl and Devil's Gate Dam. In this relatively flat and open area, they could get their ropes into play while keeping at a safe distance from bruin.

Capturing bear for use in these fights is the most important example of Spanish hunting in the San Gabriels. There was doubtless some other hunting, but generally the Spanish depended upon the products of their ranchos.

Although the mountains have always influenced San Gabriel and San Fernando Valleys, and though the Spanish Californians depended upon them for water, they apparently did not feel that the range was important land. The pattern of land grants in Southern California was indicative of this point of view. Large portions of the San Gabriel Mountains were never included in the ranchos that bordered them; in fact the rancho enclosing more mountainous area than any other, San Francisco, had a relatively small proportion of mountain land compared to its pasture.⁵ Grazing land was regarded as so much more important than timbered slopes that the Spanish started fires in the foothills to clear them of brush. These fires were set at will and allowed to burn themselves out. On more than one occasion fires are said to have burned steadily for several months before running their course.

Another use to which the San Gabriels were put was as a refuge for *banditos*. Whether they carried on their activities in the area northeast of the mountains or in the San Gabriel and San Fernando Valleys south of the range, bandits and the later American robbers often turned to the mountains for escape or refuge while waiting for things to cool down.

The most famous *bandito* to escape or hide away in the mountains probably was Tiburcio Vasquez. While his best known hide-out, now called Vasquez Rocks, lay just outside of the San Gabriel Mountains, he frequently used the top country in his operations.

It was told that Chillia [Jose Gonzalez, for whom Chilao was named] became a herder and guard for Tiburcio Vasquez and that the Flats became a hide-out and pasture for stock stolen in the San Gabriel and San Fernando Valleys, and brought to the lush feed of those mountain meadows over almost impassible trails. Old brands were blotted out or made over into something different and the animals sold north or east in the mining country.⁶

Lou Newcomb has stated that when he first came to Chilao (about 1888) the ruins of Chillia's crude shelter, "a pile of sticks down by the creek" was the only sign of former habitation. "Vasquez had many friends who hid him from the law, and he knew the mountains very well himself."⁷

Later, American robbers also used the mountains in their escapes. About 1895, the Johnson gang, escaping from a train robbery, put a bullet through the door of the George Schneider camp which was on the route of what was to be the Mount Wilson Toll Road, about half way to the top.

The only timber obtained from the mountains in appreciable quantity by the Spanish, as far as existing records show, was that taken by Joseph Chapman for building the Plaza Church in Los Angeles. Until nearly 1900 there were signs of other timbering, probably done in the Spanish or Mexican period, in some southern canyons. There has been considerable speculation about other operations, but no records remain aside from a few accounts by men who saw what they believed was evidence of early timbering. More details of this and the Chapman venture will follow.

On the whole, the chief value of the mountains to Spanish and Mexican Californians was water supply. Occasionally these first white Californians sought other resources offered by local canyons and foothills (as shown by those who sought timber, game, pasture, refuge and perhaps gold), but for the most part, the range remained unknown.

In a range like the San Gabriels, trails are an absolute neces-

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

sity. Significant travel has always been impossible without paths of some sort, for the nature of the mountains permits little random wandering. The Indian, Spaniard and American, each in his turn, has established new trails or followed old ones according to his purpose.

The first trails were the work of Indians who went directly across the range and did not skirt them by eastern and western passes. No one has ever traced out all these old paths; however several of those used most have been known up until the last decade or two. They are now very faint, and only traces of them may still be found.

One Indian trail seems to have gone up Millard Canyon, behind Mt. Lowe to the Red Box Divide, down the West Fork of the San Gabriel River probably to Valley Forge Canyon, up to Barley Flats, across and down to Big Tujunga, up that canyon almost to its head, then northward up the mountainside to Pine Flats, and across to the west end of Chilao. Then the trail followed through the high country until it dropped into the south fork of Little Rock Creek and out on to the desert.⁸

A variation of this trail could have been made by taking a left fork at the west end of Chilao rather than climbing on toward Horse Flats, dropping down to Alder Creek where Loomis Ranch is now located, then going along the well known trail up Indian Ridge from the canyon bottom, around the west side of Pacifico Mountain by Sheep Spring and on down Santiago Canyon to Little Rock Creek and out to the desert. This would have brought the two trails together again at the junction of Santiago Canyon and Little Rock Creek unless the Indian headed away from the south fork before such a junction was made, which might have depended upon the location of desert rancherias. The difficulty in tracing canyon or stream bed trails is that they were never very clear and have since been washed away.

The Santiago Canyon Indian trail was used by the bandit Vasquez as a getaway trail on more than one occasion and perhaps by Joaquin Murietta also.

A third distinct Indian trails was one which ran up the north fork of the San Gabriel River, climbed directly over the Islip saddle,

and then dropped down the backslope of Mount Islip and Mount Hawkins into Big Rock Creek, from where it went out on the Mojave. This one probably began in the Gabrielino settlement on the San Gabriel River near the present Rincon Camp.

There were doubtless many shorter trails; however the three described are well known, having been seen by a number of people familiar with the San Gabriels, and were characteristic of the paths used. They were all steep by comparison to the white man's foot trails, and took the most direct route wherever possible, even though it was a near-vertical ascent.

The first white men to see the San Gabriels were the Spanish. With their coming, their bloodless conquest of the native population, and their subsequent settlement here, it might be expected that they would pioneer trails across or at least into the mountains. This was not the case. The Spanish used Indian trails exclusively. When the earliest Spanish explorers skirted the range by its bordering passes, they often had Indian guides. Later, when trips into the mountains were necessary, Indian trails were used.

While Portolá seems to have made his own way,⁹ Garcés was nearly always accompanied and guided by Indians.¹⁰ In crossing the San Bernardino Mountains in the Cajon Pass area, Garcés sought the Indian "road."¹¹

"Another Spanish pioneer, Fray José Maria Zalvidea, almost encircled the Angeles National Forest area in 1806."¹² He, too, was guided by the Indians.

When the Spanish needed timber, which they obtained through the services of Joseph Chapman, an old Indian trail was used which had been the first leg of an important lane across the mountains to the desert.

After California became American territory and after Americans became plentiful in Southern California, there still were no important paths either crossing or going into the San Gabriels except for those followed by the Indians.

The first trail built in the American period was Benjamin D. Wilson's trail. Wilson (Don Benito) revamped an old Indian path in his timbering venture to the pine and cedar stand on the mountain that now bears his name. He cleared and cut the way so it

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

would be suitable for pack animals; thus the first white man's trail was completed in the year 1864.

Later other trails were laid out and cleared for animal use. These were necessary because the Indian paths were faint, steep, and did not provide the room or footing necessary for packing. Also, they did not always follow the best route.

In the years following Wilson's work, William Sturtevant, Lou Newcomb, Arthur Garter, and John Hartwell were the most important trail makers. Sturtevant and Newcomb broke trails and laid them out while Hartwell and Garter did much of the actual construction.

William Sturtevant, known to his friends as "Sturde," pioneered more miles of trails than any other man in the San Gabriels. He first came to California from Colorado in the early 1880's, landing in Acton with forty burros and a "pay pack."

The ancient town of Acton was the first settlement contacted on this side of the desert and by a miner friend in Colorado he had been told of trails and a short way across the San Gabriel Range to Los Angeles. From Acton he took the trail up Aliso and Tie Canyons, crossing the main divide at a pass just west of Mt. Pacifico, down into Alder Creek to Tom Clark's Cabin, then up across West Chilao to Pine Flats (now Charlton Flats), down into Big Tujunga and down stream near Wild Cat Canyon.

Here he found, as he told it, an old Indian trail up over Barley Flats and by Short Cut Canyon down to the West Fork of the San Gabriel. He has told that on his descent into Short Cut Canyon he encountered about eighty Indians who treated him royally to a feast of barbecued bear meat¹³ and acorn meal bread. From here he turned up the West Fork, around the west slopes of Mt. San Gabriel and Mt. Lowe to Millard's Canyon and down that old Indian trail to the valley near Pasadena. Many of these old trails are now gone, other and better ones having taken their places, but United States Forestry maps as late as 1917 still listed this route as a good "pack animal trail."

On Sturtevant's second trip from Colorado he found the old Indian trail we now call the Rattlesnake Trail, crossing the ridge just west of Mt. Wilson, and landed late one evening with twenty-three burros at the future location of Carter's Camp in the mouth of Little Santa Anita Canyon, above Sierra Madre.¹⁴

The importance of these routes across the mountains lay in the fact that before this time it had been necessary to make the

long trip around the range to get from one side to the other. After Sturtevant proved that a path for a passable pack trail existed, a transverse route was opened up, which became significant for travel into the top country and interior. Before Sturtevant crossed the mountains, most people did not know that the old network of trails reached from the desert to the valley. Instead, they treated the numerous faint paths as parts of a mysterious maze.

Sturtevant took a liking to the San Gabriels and decided to settle in Sierra Madre. Soon his services were in constant demand.

With resorts, camp-grounds and fishing and hunting clubs opening up all through the mountains, pack animals and mountain information were badly needed and Sturtevant was the man to furnish both. Sturtevant's became almost a name for packing and there was a constant demand for his four-footed transportation service.

The pack stables and corrals at the head of Mountain Trail Avenue, commonly known as the Mt. Wilson Stables, though at various times neither owned or operated by him, were always in some way associated with Sturtevant . . .

In the spring of 1905 it was the Sturtevant Pack Train which packed up the Sierra Madre Trail the material and equipment for the first Mt. Wilson Hotel and Cottages . . .

William Sturtevant knew more about the San Gabriels than any other, except possibly Louie Newcomb. He felt a great responsibility for them, almost a sense of proprietorship.¹⁵

Another heavily traveled trail laid out by Sturtevant is the one over the ridge from Winter Creek to the resort which still bears his name in Big Santa Anita Canyon.

During his years in the San Gabriels, Sturtevant was connected with many mountain enterprises. He founded one resort and ran several, established camps, did some prospecting, held considerable land including a toll road and planned the cutting and operation of a toll trail across the range. These were not all of his activities, but the list gives a picture of the doings of this mountaineer.

A second pioneer trailmaker of the days prior to 1900 was Lou Newcomb. He went into Chilao before 1888, built his first cabin in 1890 and homesteaded a quarter section there in 1898.

At the time Newcomb built his cabin at Chilao, the shortest route into the back country followed Don Benito's trail to "Wilson's Peak," as it was called in honor of that prominent Californian.

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

This early trail over Mt. Wilson did not end at the peak, but continued down the back side to the West Fork of the San Gabriel and up the canyon to where Valley Forge Camp is now located, thence up to Barley Flats, Pine Flats (Charleton Flats), Chilao, Horse Flats and the Buckhorn country. This trail from the West Fork to Barley Flats was one of the steepest trails I have ever traveled; a pack burro hardly knew whether his next lunge would carry him forward or tip him over backwards.

In the spring and early summer of 1893 in order to get rid of this bad stretch of trail, John Hartwell, one of the first rangers in the San Gabriel Reserve, and the writer, built a new trail along a route which had been laid out roughly by Louie Newcomb . . . This trail . . . eliminated a long, tiresome trip up the West Fork and over Barley Flats. "Shortcut" was the name given to both canyon and trail.¹⁶

The Shortcut Canyon trail saved much distance over the original route, but other changes were to take place later on the track into the top country.

In 1886 the Burlingame brothers built a road up to Winter Creek planning to cut timber and haul it down; however the mountains were proclaimed a reserve before they did any cutting, thus ending their venture.

Sturtevant established a camp in Big Santa Anita that was to become, in a few years, the Sturtevant resort. He built a path over the ridge to Winter Creek which connected his camp with the Burlingame timber road; and since a rough path already existed from Sierra Madre around the mountain into Big Santa Anita, it was possible to travel, by the end of 1896, from Sierra Madre into upper Big Santa Anita Canyon.

In looking over the trails already completed, Lou Newcomb noted the feasibility of putting one in from Sturtevant's Camp over to the West Fork, which would connect with Shortcut Canyon and on to the top country. In 1897 Newcomb, taking Carter with him, laid out this trail. "I hired ten men," he said, "Sturtevant sent two men to help and Hartwell worked one day."¹⁷ A saddle where the path crosses the front range of the San Gabriels is still called Newcomb's Pass; it remains the easiest way into the West Fork, for the trail is well beaten, even today.

With two new sections into the top country completed—Short-

cut Canyon and Newcomb's Pass trails—Sturtevant and A. G. Strain incorporated the "Sierra Madre and Antelope Valley Toll Trail."¹⁸ They planned to collect from hikers going across or into the mountains and probably expected some profit. It was agreed that the first fares collected would go to Lou Newcomb for his part in constructing the vital link in the new trail; however he was to do the collecting himself. Newcomb complained that no system of collecting would work except to keep a man on the trail at all times, collecting as hikers passed, and that "didn't pay wages, so I had to quit it."¹⁹ Many hikers are said to have preferred climbing the more difficult route over Mount Wilson, rather than pay the twenty-five cent fee. This apparently is the reason Sturtevant and Strain also dropped the idea of collecting tolls.

Good pack trails which crossed the mountains or led into the back country were by far the most important trails built, although they were not the earliest ones to be constructed. In the 1880's, a number of short paths were built into the south slope canyons by early settlers; and "on evidence we cannot doubt there were trails, of a sort, across the mountains before Wilson's time, used at first by the Indians, later by bandits, explorers, hunters and prospectors."²⁰ None of these, however, carried significant traffic until improved and connected with the major transverse routes.

A scarcity of forests in the San Gabriel Valley long ago caused men to look elsewhere for timber. Turning to the mountains, Californians could see promising stands of pine and cedar on the crest of the south range; and their first attempts to reach the trees led them up canyons and through more groves of the essential timber.

Spaniards, guided by Indians who knew the whereabouts of canyon stands, cut the first timber in the San Gabriel Mountains and transported it, via the Indian paths, to several construction sites.

There is a story among the oldest settlers that the cedar beams of Mission San Gabriel were cut in the Ice House Canyon, brought in summer by high-wheeled ox-carts over an old road, evidences of which were plentiful in the '80's, to the head of the falls at Hogsback, then floated in high water to a point where they could be picked up and taken to the Mission. The carts on which they were hauled over this road must have been packed over Hogsback in pieces and assembled above.²¹

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

While this story is not substantiated by written records, it is probable that the lumber came from a near-by area, well known by the native neophytes.

The first timbering activity on which there are good records was the cutting of lumber in what is now Millard's Canyon, for the building of the Plaza Church in Los Angeles. This is a story not only of timbering, but of a man notable in California history; namely, Joseph Chapman.

Chapman had been one of Bouchard's insurgents, and was captured in a raid at Monterey in 1818, from where he was brought to Los Angeles as a prisoner of the governor. At the time he arrived in Los Angeles, riding behind Don Antonio Maria Lugo, his surety, construction had begun on the Plaza Church and Lugo and Chapman went to the mountains to help get the necessary lumber.

Once in the mountains, Chapman proved to be a most valuable ward, and shortly was in charge of timbering operations. Like many New Englanders, he was skillful with tools, an accomplishment which soon won him recognition as he worked with Indian laborers high up in Millard Canyon. Moreover, his particular abilities made him the ideal man to run the lumber camp.

The Indians themselves could only hack a tree down and let it fall where it happened to—and then hagle it into imperfect square shape just where it lay, working very slowly and at great disadvantage. But Chapman could chop a tree down and make it fall whichever way he wanted to, which was a marvelous thing to most of the Spaniards as well as the Indians. In their ignorant and superstitious minds it was magic or "black art," and they called him "Diablo Chapman." Then by getting his logs up onto blocks . . . and marking them with a bit of burnt wood and a stretched string . . . for the hewers to work by, the work went on easier and better and faster than before.

The logs having been hewed square up in the mountains, were dragged on different faces alternately so that all sides might be scoured and smoothed alike. On reaching the public road the timbers would be loaded onto heavy carts . . . and conveyed across the Los Angeles River and up to the Plaza.¹²

Later, Chapman continued to make himself useful by constructing a mill at Santa Inés for which he was given a document certifying that he was included in the governor's amnesty for all Anglo-

American prisoners.²³ In that same year, 1821, the governor ordered that the "pilot prisoner" be sent to build a mill at San Gabriel like the one he built at Santa Inés.²⁴ Chapman was the third anglo-saxon resident of California, and the first to reside in Los Angeles.

After 1830 when the Plaza Church was completed, there is no record or indication that any notable lumbering was done for the next three decades. In 1864 however, a well known early resident of Pasadena, observing from his home the fine stand of pine and cedar atop a prominent near-by mountain, resolved to seek a way to obtain and use those trees rather than depend upon wood imported by boat, and train to local yards.

Early in that year, 1864, in order to obtain wood for fence posts, pickets, shingles, wine barrels and other uses on his ranch, Benjamin D. Wilson (Don Benito) set his Indian and Mexican help to work on a trail that would follow the course of the old Indian path up to the peak which now bears his name. The trail began at the present site of Sierra Madre and was to be adequate for pack animals to carry out the products which were finished at the top.²⁵

During the construction of the eight mile trail, which was finished that same year, Wilson built the first Halfway House as a work camp. Later, when timbering was no longer carried on, the Halfway House and the trail remained. The original path is still used today.

In the period following Wilson's timbering, people knew that lumber could be obtained in the San Gabriels, and it was legal to cut it until the mountains were proclaimed a reserve in 1892. Once again the record becomes dim, but perhaps this is because there was no extensive or commercial cutting in the forest during these years. However there is evidence that some timbering was carried on.

W. B. Dewey states that an old sawmill was operating just above Camp Baldy long before the mining days; that part of the buildings were still standing, west of the stream about 200 yards above the present stone, in 1883 and were washed away when the stream changed its channel in the flood of 1884. He states that all of the larger trees were cut from that part of the canyon between Camp Baldy and Ice House and there were many big stumps and, until the flood, big logs scattered over this flat, a few logs remaining there as late as 1902.²⁶

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

The last attempt to take timber from the mountains was by the Burlingame enterprise which built, in 1884, a good trail up Big Santa Anita Canyon and into Winter Creek. However the mountains were made a forest reserve before cutting began.

The only timber claim now operating is one with a peculiar background. In the late 1880's Joseph Crosland took up a claim in Lytle Creek which has a beautifully forested floor and slopes, especially in the upper part of the canyon. Crosland didn't cut any timber at first, but homesteaded the land in 1895. Apparently, this was all that was to come of the claim, but in 1949 cutting finally began under the rights held from the original claim before the establishment of the Timberland Reserve in 1892.²⁷

The timbering done in the San Gabriels has been important from time to time. Some incense cedar and several varieties of conifer grow in sparse, intermittent groves above the four thousand foot level. Settlers, squatters, homesteaders and bandits, in short all people requiring shelter or a building have used the native materials at hand; and before fires and floods destroyed these old structures, there were many left standing throughout the mountains. Timber is plentiful (by Southern California standards) in certain spots and over many areas in the mountains, and is a source of beauty, yet its growth is not extensive enough to withstand much commercial cutting. It is therefore protected in Angeles National Forest.

The story of mining in the San Gabriel Mountains dates possibly from the Spanish period in California, and continues down to the present day. Mining activity has, from the first, been almost exclusively for gold, although a limited amount of prospecting of other metals and even gems has taken place. There has been little mining on a paying scale, however, except for gold.

There is romance in this part of the mountain's history, and tragedy too. Canyon walls have watched Indians labor on a slave level, "gophering" along the pay streak, have seen a fabulous boom town rise, live a short and lusty existence, then fall before the rush of flood waters, and have felt the water from high pressure nozzles washing away at their sides in large scale hydraulic operations. During all this time, streams of prospectors have come and gone

with every rumor of a new strike, leaving behind them scarred hillsides, scattered implements and tales of bygone days.

Persistent rumors, usually originating in and about San Gabriel Canyon, tell of early mining by the Indians for their Spanish masters. One such story places this mining as far back as 1772, while others indicate that no mining at all was done before the early 1840's. Unfortunately, there are not records of gold discovery before 1841. However certain evidence indicates prior mining work by Indians, but it is known that the native people never made use of gold in aboriginal times. The conclusion would seem to be that Indian help was used as labor in some mining operations; but when and for whom they worked may always remain a mystery.

Until the 1938 flood, a large flat rock of blue porphyry rested on a spot in the East Fork of the San Gabriel River where free milling has been found. This rock, the hardest kind found in this area, had twelve to fifteen mortars formed in its immense hard top, and was probably used by Indians for grinding ore.²⁸ The amount of labor it must have taken to form these mortars may be understood when it is realized that even equipped with sledge and star drill, American miners found blue porphyry rock nearly impossible to work.

More evidence of Indian mining was discovered in the hydraulic period when tunnels about a yard wide were found following along the pay streaks in the hillsides. These tunnels were hidden, as their openings were caved in or brushed over, but hydraulic operations uncovered them again. This kind of mining was called "gophering," and had been done on such a scale, deep into the hill, as to greatly reduce the profit in hydraulic mining. In fact it was a combination of unfavorable State laws and the reduction in profit due to early "gophering," that caused hydraulic operations to close.²⁹

An exact date for the earliest American mining in the mountains has not been established. It is difficult to discover such a date because prospectors singly and by pairs, working small placers, drifted from place to place getting little attention unless they made a real strike.

A number of Southern Californians say that gold was mined

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

in the San Gabriel Mountains prior to the early 1840's. Whether they are correct or not, the discovery of gold in Placerita Canyon, in 1842, is now a matter of history. Francisco Lopez made the initial find there, quite by accident, and a year later made a second strike in San Feliciano Canyon, a few miles to the west. Shortly thereafter, California's first gold rush took place. It preceded the Kern River rush by several years, but was on a far smaller scale.

The Mexican War interrupted digging in the San Fernando placers as did the big rush to Northern California, but new discoveries were destined to cause more activity in the San Gabriels than anyone dreamed. A series of quotations by well-known writers paint a vivid picture of the progress of early mining.

Gold was discovered in gravels of San Gabriel Canyon in 1855, and soon after at Santa Anita Canyon and in the hills back of Monrovia. In the following fifteen years about \$8,000,000 worth of the yellow metal was worked out and marketed, the total production from 1855 to the present time being estimated at about \$13,000,000. One interesting fact developed in research of those early mining days is that the average production per miner working in the San Gabriel diggings during the five years from 1858 to 1863 was 25% greater than the average in the northern diggings in 1853, the peak year of their production . . .³⁰

. . . the first American miners known to have worked in the San Gabriel Canyon . . . were miners from the Kern River diggings who had drifted on South . . . These early miners were typical "boomers," the type of gold "snipers" who drift from place to place, following each new rumor of a "strike."

There was nothing permanent about the lives of these early comers to the Canyon, and there are no monuments or cabins existing which date from them. The records of the Wells-Fargo Express Company and some of the United States Mints, along with some few references in print—plus the fact that they persisted in their work, are the only proofs that they were actually getting that which they sought . . . Among the few earlier miners who left written evidence were Baker and Smith, partners, who worked between Iron Fork and the Narrows, and took out \$800 worth of gold in one eight-day period. Tom Driver working on a claim just below the Narrows on property which is still being mined by the San Gabriel Mining Company, took out \$350 in two hours.³¹

A mountain boom town, Eldoradoville, sprang to life on the East Fork of the San Gabriel . . . This prosperous boom town lay at the junction of Cattle Canyon with the East Fork. It boasted three general stores, and a half dozen saloons with their gambling and dance halls

running wide open. John Robb, who spent more than sixty years of his life in the canyon, claimed that he made more money by running the sawdust from the floor of the Union Saloon through his sluice box than he was able to make from real mining, so prodigal and careless of their pokes were the miners and gamblers of those days. On November 6, 1860, four hundred votes were cast in El Doradoville, nearly all for Lincoln.³²

The Los Angeles *Star* of March 10, 1860, stated that eight companies were engaged in bringing water to the camp called Eldoradoville, "so as to ground sluice or hydraulic wash." This article also included a very long and elaborate set of mining laws, embracing some twenty-seven items, and concluded by saying, "The writer of these laws is confident that . . . the returns of gold dust from the San Gabriel will be second to those of no other river in the state."³³

In 1861 the Wells-Fargo Express Company was shipping an average of \$12,000 per month in gold nuggets from San Gabriel Canyon sources to San Francisco . . . It is logical to assume that at least an equal amount was sent by other agencies or carried by private parties.³⁴

During the course of the next few years, the canyon's innumerable bars and gravel beds yielded considerable quantities of gold; and mining camps, similar to those of the Northern Sierra, sprang up and died away almost as rapidly as Jonah's celebrated gourd.³⁵

The largest and best known of the canyon's mining camps was destroyed at the height of its glory. In 1862, angry flood waters prevented Eldoradoville from ever becoming a ghost town by sweeping away every building, all supplies and equipment and virtually everything man made that was on the canyon's floor. It is inconceivable that anything placed on the bottom of the San Gabriel Canyon could long remain, for as far back as records exist, floods have periodically swept it clean.

As time went on, and as mining continued to pay, in varying degrees, some men began to get ideas about bigger operations. Individual takes were sometimes good enough to suggest that heavy equipment might separate correspondingly larger amounts of the valuable metal from the dirt and sand of the canyon. The installation of hydraulic mining equipment seemed the logical answer, and by 1870, a new type of mining was under way. In that year, H. C. Roberts and William G. Fergusson took up claims on adjoining properties, each hoping that his would be the first producing hydraulic mine in the canyon.

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

It became a race between the crews of Roberts and Fergusson as to which would first complete the ditches and flumes to bring the water from six miles up stream to the artificial lakes constructed in gulches and draws high above the mines. The volume and pressure thus acquired was needed to force the water from the hydraulic nozzles with sufficient power to tear away the high gravel bars and wash rocks, gravel, clay and all through the long sluice boxes where gold could be trapped.

The building of these ditches, which may still be traced along the mountain-side, was a tremendous undertaking. Dams were built to divert the river water into settling basins where the sand, which would have quickly clogged the ditches, was removed. Conduits were blasted and hewn from the rock-walls of the canyon, flumed on steel supports driven into sheer cliffs, carried on high trestles across gulches and canyons, through clay lined ditches across high mesas, by gentle grades which soon raised the level, until water was finally brought to the storage lakes a thousand feet above the rapidly falling canyon floor.

. . . The lakes were full, the monitors ready, four hundred feet of sluice boxes installed, and hydraulic mining began in the fall of 1870. For the next four years, in spite of endless trouble with the flumes, and the fact that their crude process retained only the heavier pieces of gold, these two hydraulic companies recovered \$1,000 per month in nuggets. Small scale miners still mine the trailings of these hydraulic workings, recovering more gold per cubic yard than was taken out originally.³⁶

Hydraulic operations came to a close in 1874 due to adverse State laws which were enacted because of the reddish clay carried down into the domestic water supply, and to decreasing pay as a result of earlier mining.

Just as the first Americans known to have worked San Gabriel Canyon were miners who drifted south from the Kern River, so, too, were the first Americans to work Lytle Creek. These men turned north into that canyon to prospect rather than following the base of the range west of Cajon Pass (through which they entered) to the better known San Gabriel Canyon.

Once in Lytle Creek, sourdoughs proceeded to placer mine, many making up to forty dollars a day. The Texas Point Mine, one of the most productive of the hydraulics, was located here where the largest nugget found in the San Gabriel Mountains was uncovered. From the year gold was discovered in Lytle Creek, about

1860, until the flood of 1891, the local diggings regularly supported up to one hundred miners. The year following the flood, pieces of flume, rockers and other equipment were left scattered above high-water mark in abundance.³⁷

San Antonio Canyon had its share of activity. Although never as popular as San Gabriel Canyon, mining was carried on with vigor from about 1862 until 1900. ". . . it is told that tunnels and placer mining equipment were thick along the canyon in 1877. W. T. (Tooch) Martin had said that as early as 1866 about 400 men were camped below hogsback."³⁸

The mining trend in San Gabriel, Lytle and San Antonio Canyons was first placer, with activity increasing to a frenzy in the 1860's, then larger scale hydraulic operations from the 70's into the 90's, followed by a marked decrease in all kinds of mining as the hydraulic period came to a close.

The amount of mining carried on for a while in San Antonio Canyon is indicated by the fact that in 1886 Fred Dell built his camp, famous in those days, for the sole purpose of establishing a stopping place for miners headed up the canyon. Its location was across the stream from the present Camp Baldy, well below the mines located in the upper canyon.

Best known of the upper San Antonio mines was the Banks claim located just below (south of) the Lytle Creek Divide. While there were a number of claims being worked in this area for a time, they were soon all consolidated and the whole gulch worked as a hydraulic project, first under James Banks in the 1880's and later by a Nebraska company which bought out the interests in the gulch and renamed the mine the Hocumac.

The large scale activity of the 90's in the Banks gulch area began in 1891 . . . The summer of 1893 was a period of great activity and saw construction of the most interesting project of the whole area—the two mile pipe line bringing water from the reliable stream in the west fork of San Antonio Canyon . . .

J. E. Adamson, a pioneer Pomona resident, stated that in 1894 and 1895 thirty to forty men were employed at the Lytle Creek Divide, work-

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

ing enough gravel to return a small profit to the operator of the mine. They were living at Miner's Camp, a cluster of cabins just below the lowest point of the divide.³⁹

Hydraulic mining was forced to stop in San Antonio Canyon somewhat in the same way it was ended on the San Gabriel.

The large scale hydraulic operations were sending down floods of muddy water discoloring drinking water, clogging irrigation pipes, and interfering with the proper percolation of water from irrigation ditches into orange groves. On this date [July 6, 1895] the San Antonio Water Company received an injunction from the Superior Court of San Bernardino County to prohibit the Hocumac Company from polluting or discoloring the water of San Antonio Canyon in any way.⁴⁰

In both San Gabriel and San Antonio Canyons, the pay streaks were imbedded in a reddish clay which was washed down into the water supply where it remained suspended rather than settling to the bottom. This circumstance brought about unfavorable legal action in each case, although limited operations were still possible and would have continued for some time had they paid.

The San Gabriel hydraulic mines became unprofitable as the veins returned less and less gold; and "it is questionable whether the San Antonio mines were ever profitable, even before the injunction, and curtailment of operations in 1895 certainly was a blow."⁴¹

Free milling quartz was mined on the west fork of San Antonio Canyon, starting in 1893, at the Gold Ridge mine, the operation of which depended upon a steam driven crusher. However, mining in this area never paid, in spite of some furious activity, and "chances are . . . that all mining except small time summer adventures ceased by the year 1900."⁴²

The word mine is often thought of as practically synonymous with gold, for not only has gold been the object of most prospecting in the West but also there is a sort of attraction or romance about the yellow metal which has often caused other mining to be overlooked. Also, gold has received the attention of more men because its high value per ounce permits its mining to be done on an individual scale with a minimum of equipment.

For a time, in and about Los Angeles, optimism ran so high that the talk about town had the San Gabriel Mountains very rich in a number of minerals and gems besides gold. Such talk was not entirely unfounded, for other minerals are found in the range, but rich is hardly the word to describe these deposits. Operations extensive enough to cause considerable excitement in the early '90's began on two silver claims in San Gabriel Canyon. By far the largest of these was the Victoria, which was financed by British capital.

The Victoria was an installation of greater-than-average size for the canyon, and consisted of cook house, dining room and bunk house, like most company mines, in addition to which were mill and mill pond for processing the ore on the premise.⁴³

Above the Victoria, on the east slope of the canyon wall, the Kelsey was located. While working another outcropping of the same silver-bearing vein, the Kelsey was never as large or elaborate as her sister mine, and did not possess a mill until some years had passed, during which Henry Roberts hauled out the ore for shipment and subsequent milling elsewhere.⁴⁴ Soon after a mill was finally installed, the company stopped mining; for like the Victoria, the Kelsey never paid, and both joined the procession of costly failures that began with the hydraulic mines and ended only when men quit attempting any sort of operations on a large scale.

Prospecting has been done in all the larger canyons on the southern face of the San Gabriels, and in many of the smaller ones. There is no canyon of any size from San Fernando to Cajon Pass that could not tell its story of the search for gold. This search continues today, although in much smaller proportions, for the modern prospector is often interested as much in recreation as in the uncertain returns of his labor.

Certainly little history is so colorful as the history of nineteenth century American gold mining, and the San Gabriel Mountains have given Southern California its share. The three regions of greatest activity were the San Fernando, the San Gabriel Canyon and the San Antonio areas, the latter including Lytle Creek.

Most of the mining was of the placer type, done along stream

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

beds, signs of which are gone with the devastating floods which have periodically swept the canyons. Signs of mining that was carried on away from the watercourses can still be found. While fire has destroyed most of the old cabins which were spared by flood, other indications remain.

In San Gabriel Canyon a bare, scarred mountain face stands out where it was washed away by the Roberts hydraulic operation. Old ditches cut high in hillside rock can be traced above the Ferguson and Roberts sites. A reservoir, still in fairly good condition, and sections of pipe that fed it from the west fork of San Antonio Canyon can be found as evidence of mining in Banks Gulch. The stone walls of the Gold Ridge dining room still stand; and below it, down by the stream, is the old crusher. None of these relics or signs of mining days are more than a few miles from mountain roads, and all may be easily found by anyone with an idea of what to look for.

Hunting and fishing have never been done on a large scale or commercially in the San Gabriels. They have been pursued for sport or recreation ever since the Spanish made permanent settlements in Southern California, but never to the degree that the Indians carried on these activities.

Deer and trout remain the chief lure for sportsmen. Indians found them an important food source, building weirs on the streams for trout, and hunting and trapping deer. At present, the mountain streams are stocked and re-stocked with fish to give enthusiastic anglers a bare minimum catch seasonally, while hunters are more plentiful than deer during hunting season in the part of the San Gabriels lying outside the game refuge. This area is the northern slope of the mountains from the top of the main range out to the desert, and the part of the mountains which lies northwest of Big Tujunga.

For a time during the Spanish period, grizzlies were hunted on horseback for use in the Sunday bear and bull fights in Los Angeles. Later a bounty was placed on them because they killed cattle; and they were always the favorite "big game" to local

hunters. As a result, bear disappeared from the mountains shortly after 1900.

Lou Newcomb tells an interesting story of two of the largest and most destructive bears—both grizzlies—known to him when he first went to Chilao. The first of these, called Clubfoot because of a twisted forepaw, had been killing cattle and scaring away game wherever he went; and he continued to elude hunters year after year.

One day a Mexican woodcutter, who had been working a ravine alone, came running excitedly up to a group of fellow workers, shouting that he had killed Clubfoot with his ax. They refused to believe him, jesting among themselves over the story; but on his insistence that they come and see, all followed him to the spot where, just as he claimed, Clubfoot lay dead of slashes from his ax.

Monarch, another grizzly, was the larger of these two weighing about eighteen hundred pounds. His capture was planned and executed by a group of horsemen who, after trapping him, hustled him into large wooden crate where he was allowed to cool off for eight days. Even in the crate ropes were kept on him for safety.⁴⁵

After considerable storming, Monarch calmed down and the crate was transported to the nearest railroad siding which was at Acton. There he was transferred to a specially built steel cage, bolted as well as tied to a flatcar, and taken to the San Francisco Zoo.

In the days before most of the San Gabriels were included in a game refuge, hunting was a popular sport. Deer and mountain goats were common prey for the hunter; bobcats and coyotes were shot on sight, and the mountain lion and particularly the bear were objects of special expeditions.

The back country—Pine Flats, Chilao and Buckhorn—supported much big game, and was known as the best headquarters from which to hunt any and all kinds of animals. Newcomb complained that bear of all kinds—black, brown, and grizzlies—were so thick when he first went in to Chilao that they chased other game away, causing it to be more scarce than it is today.⁴⁶

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

When the designation of the Timberland Reserve ended hunting in much of the mountains in 1892, fishing continued under controls.

The most notable fisherman's club of the early days was the Creel Club of San Gabriel Canyon. It was located just below the junction of the West Fork with the San Gabriel River, on the stream's left bank, and was most active in the decade prior to 1897 at which time its prime mover, H. W. O'Melveny obtained another piece of property farther downstream and ceased to be active in the organization.

The Creel Club was organized to give a number of prominent Los Angeles businessmen a retreat where rest, recreation and good fellowship would prevail. "In those days, the San Gabriel River ran all the way to the ocean and was the best trout stream in Southern California."⁴⁷ Needless to say, the beauty of the canyon and the good fellowship of the club combined to give all members many a happy week-end.

At one time there were trout in all the streams of moderate size which flowed in the mountains, but the San Gabriel River was undoubtedly best, its name standing for good fishing as late as the early thirties.

At present, government fish hatcheries make an effort to keep most streams stocked, but fisheries are inadequate for our Southern California population, and Roger Dalton claims that the top quota is about eighteen trout per fisherman each season.⁴⁸

Fish and game, while vital foods to the Indians, have been mainly a source of sport and recreation for the white man. Their abundance has never warranted commercial activity, just as the mountain timber could not sustain such enterprise. However both contributed to the livelihood of Indians in their day and pioneers in theirs; and contribute to the recreational pleasure of more recent Southern Californians.

From the time the Spanish recognized the mountains enough to call them by some name, until pioneers and miners had covered nearly all of the range in their various pursuits, a period of explor-

atory activity was in progress. This era lasted until about 1900 when the San Gabriels were becoming well known. Most exploratory activity was over then, and there was someone who knew about almost every part of the mountains. Foot and pack trails crossed the range, United States Geological Survey quadrangles were completed in 1903 and left no parts unmapped, the resources were no longer a matter of question. Timber had been taken, and gold had been found and removed in large quantities.

Exploratory activity had opened up the entire range. It had made the mountains well enough known so that an increasing interest, on the part of people living in the populated valleys to the south of the range, was to grow to such proportions that a whole era of resorting and hiking would follow.

(To be continued)

NOTES

1. Will H. Thrall, interview, August 21, 1950. Mr. Thrall's knowledge and understanding of the history of the San Gabriel Mountains from Indian days to the present are precious things, since pioneers of the mountains wrote little without special impetus. In the early 1930's Mr. Thrall, long a student of the San Gabriels, discovered that the men who made the history of the mountains and who pioneered the trails were either quite old or already dead; and that they were not leaving to the future an adequate story of early days in the mountains. He resolved at that time to concentrate on the history of the range so that the record of the fascinating events should not be lost forever. So it was in the years following, especially those during which he was editor of *Trails Magazine*, he sought to gain all the first hand information available, directly from the men who made that history; and to learn everything he could from their descendants and relatives, and other old timers familiar with the mountains in the early days. This task he has pursued up to the present (1951), and now that nearly all of the pioneers of the forest are gone, he is the man who has a real grasp on detailed or comprehensive history of the range. He has talked to most of the old timers himself, having gone into the San Gabriels since 1893. Fortunately, his knowledge will not perish, for Mr. Thrall, a writer of note, has carefully recorded much of this history in published and unpublished material over a period of many years. This material may be found in *Trails Magazine*, the *Historical Society of Southern California Quarterly*, and many of his later original manuscripts in the Huntington Library.
2. Fages, *op. cit.*, p. 18.
3. *Ibid*, p. 18.
4. Major Horace Bell, *On the Old West Coast*, William Morrow and Company, New York, 1930, pp. 108-113.
5. See map of *The Old Spanish and Mexican Ranchos of Los Angeles County*, Title Insurance and Trust Company, Los Angeles, 1936.
6. Arthur N. Carter, "Early days in the Chillia Country," *Trails Magazine*, Spring, 1938, p. 14.

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

7. Louis Newcomb, interview, September 6, 1950.
8. Path of old Indian trails described to the author by Will Thrall on August 21, 1950. Mr. Thrall has traced many sections of these trails personally and has had contact with people also familiar with them in days when they were not so faint as they have been for the last few decades.
9. Fages, *op. cit.*, makes no mention of Indian guides for the expedition as it went into San Gabriel Mountain area.
10. Carcés, *op. cit.*, p. 265.
11. *Ibid.*, p. 244.
12. Robinson, *op. cit.*, pp. 6-7.
13. The fact that Sturtevant shared bear meat with the Indians is an interesting side note to his story since authorities agree that the local Indians seldom hunted bear in aboriginal days. Lou Newcomb claims that the Indians he and Sturtevant met in the back country were not local Indians at all, but Paiutes that had ranged down from their territory to the north.
14. Will H. Thrall, "William M. Sturtevant, Woodsman, Miner, Packer and all around Mountaineer," (MS. ca. 1942), pp. 1-2, was written from notes after interview Mr. Thrall had with Sturtevant, prior to the old mountaineer's death.
15. *Ibid.*, pp. 3-5.
16. Arthur N. Carter, "Mt. Wilson and Sturtevant Trails from Sierra Madre," *Trails Magazine*, Winter 1937, p. 6.
17. Newcomb, *idem.*
18. Carter, "Mt. Wilson and Sturtevant Trails from Sierra Madre," *op. cit.*, p. 10.
19. Newcomb, *idem.*
20. Will H. Thrall, "Mount Wilson," *Trails Magazine*, Summer 1937, p. 7.
21. F. H. Manker and Dan Alexander, "At the Foot of Mt. San Antonio," *Trails Magazine*, Spring 1937, p. 9.
22. Hiram A. Reid, *History of Pasadena*, Pasadena History Company, Pasadena, Calif., 1895, p. 46.
23. Hubert Howe Bancroft, *History of California*, Vol. II, The History Book Company, San Francisco, 1886, p. 444.
24. *Ibid.*, p. 568.
25. Hiram A. Reid, *op. cit.*, p. 336.
26. Manker and Alexander, *op. cit.*, p. 9.
27. Thrall, interview, September 5, 1950.
28. Sedley Peck, interview, September 20, 1950. Mr. Peck has lived or mined in San Gabriel Canyon for nearly fifty years.
29. *Ibid.*
30. Will H. Thrall, "The Days of Gold," *Trails Magazine*, Summer 1935, pp. 9 ff.
31. Sedley Peck, "Colorful Old Days on the Upper San Gabriel," *Trails Magazine*, Summer 1938, p. 5.
32. Robinson, *op. cit.*, pp. 19-20.
33. Robert Glass Cleland, *The Cattle on a Thousand Hills*, The Huntington Library, San Marino, 1941, p. 201.
34. Robinson, *op. cit.*, p. 20.
35. Cleland, *op. cit.*, p. 201.
36. Peck, *op. cit.*, p. 7.
37. Thrall, interview, September 16, 1950. Mr. Thrall made his first trip into Lytle Creek in 1893 when this equipment still lay where high water had either deposited it or passed it by.
38. Manker and Alexander, *op. cit.*, p. 9.
39. Muir Dawson, "Mining in Upper San Antonio Canyon," *Historical Society of Southern California Quarterly*, March, 1948, pp. 11-14.
40. *Ibid.*, p. 14.
41. *Ibid.*, p. 15.
42. *Ibid.*, p. 16.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

43. Dalton, Roger, interview, June 16, 1951.
44. *Ibid.*
45. Newcomb says bear, although they try repeatedly, are unable to bite themselves free of rope because their teeth do not contact in a way that would enable them to do so.
46. Newcomb, *idem.*
47. Stuart O'Melveny, interview, October 2, 1950. All information on the Creel Club is from this interview with Mr. O'Melveny, son of the club's founder and a San Gabriel Canyon enthusiast himself.
48. Roger Dalton, interview, August 11, 1950.

Information Wanted

Dear Dr. Arlt:

I am interested in locating, if possible, the brass howitzer abandoned by Fremont on January 29, 1844, on the eastern slope of the Sierra.

I have heard recently that a Southern California woman, who makes a hobby of following up old pioneer trails, has recently found this howitzer—or found its site, or something like that. My informant could not recall her name, but said she was well known and the author of several books on the subject.

I am writing to ask you if you know anything about this subject. Do you have anything in your file, or the Society's files?

Sincerely yours,
RAYMUND F. WOOD
Principal Reference Librarian,
Fresno State College

Wilshire Boulevard Temple: *Congregation B'Nai B'Rith* 1862-1947

By Marco R. Newmark



TRADITION HAS ESTABLISHED THE CUSTOM of depositing in the cornerstone of a new structure to be dedicated to a public or semi-public purpose, items of possible public interest.

Having this in mind, Rabbi Magnin asked me to prepare an outline of the history of the congregation to be placed in the cornerstone of Wilshire Boulevard Temple. With this request it was my pleasure to comply and the results of my investigation is herewith submitted.

For all facts antedating October 13, 1895, I have been compelled to rely on the oral testimony of old members of the congregation who survive; on the descendants of others who have passed on; on a few gleanings from historical sources, and to a slight extent on my own recollections. For the subsequent period, I have had access to the minutes of all the meetings both of the Board of Trustees and of the members. The latter part of the account will therefore be more continuous and complete.

The earliest known Jewish gathering in Los Angeles was a service, started in 1851, which was conducted Friday evenings and Saturday mornings at the home of Mr. and Mrs. Ephraim Greenbaum. The names of all those who constituted the minyan are not on the record, but we do know that among them, in addition to Mr. Greenbaum, were Wolf Kalisher, Morris S. Goodman, Maurice Kremer, Solomon Lazard, Joseph P. Newmark, Herman Schlesinger and Tobias Therwinsky.

In 1854, Joseph Newmark, a relative of J. P., who had been ordained a rabbi, although he never professionally occupied a pulpit, joined the little community.

During the year, he organized the Hebrew Benevolent Society, of which Jacob Elias became president, but since there was no poverty among the handful of Jews here at that time, its original purposes were the care of the sick, the paying of proper respect, according to the ancient ritual, to the departed, and the supervision of the cemetery.

Under its auspices, also, Mr. Newmark began conducting formal Sabbath and Holy Day Services in an adobe owned by John Temple.

Then in 1862, Congregation B'nai Berith (later changed to B'Nai B'Rith) was organized, Wolf Kalisher being elected president, and Abraham Edelman, a well known hebraic and talmudic scholar, was called from San Francisco to take spiritual charge.

The first services were held in Arcadia or Stearn's Hall on Los Angeles and Arcadia Streets, next in Leck's Hall, on Main Street, between Second and Third, and still later, by courtesy of Judge Ygnacio Sepúlveda, in the one court-room of the town.

On April 19, 1865, the congregation took part in the memorial procession, after the death of Abraham Lincoln, later meeting at the home of the Rabbi, where a special service was held and suitable resolutions adopted.

The first marriage ceremony performed by Rabbi Edelman, in Los Angeles was that of Samuel Prager; and by a weird coincidence, his last funeral service was at the interment of that same worthy pioneer.

March 10, 1872, was a red-letter day in our history. On that date, the ladies of the congregation held a meeting for the purpose of devising ways and means for the erection of a house of worship. We have no record of the proceedings of this and the subsequent gatherings, but we do know that the little flock worked with zeal and determination, for on August 18, 1872, the cornerstone was laid. It has also come down to us that Elias Lavalentha and David Solomon, on a special trip to San Francisco, collected from the merchants of that city, as a contribution to the construction of the synagogue, the sum of one thousand dollars, at that time, no doubt, a substantial percentage of the total cost.

There was, at the solemn rite of placing the stone of the found-

Wilshire Boulevard Temple: Congregation B'Nai B'Rith

ation, on that summer day of the long ago, no Ezra to record the particulars for the information of future generations; but an eye-witness has written that, as a part of the program, Isaias W. Hellman, who had succeeded to the presidency of the congregation, and as its representative, received from Joseph Newmark, a golden key.

On August 8, 1873, the new synagogue was proudly dedicated. At this ceremony, Miss Fanny Kalisher, daughter of the first president, presented Mr. Hellman with a symbolic golden key.

A few of us still survive who carry the agreeable memory of the little structure in which the patriarchal rabbi taught us the rudiments of our faith and instructed us in its elemental ethics. Located on the east side of Fort Street (now Broadway) between Second and Third, it was of unique architecture. Two sets of steps, one from the north, and the other from the south, rose about fifteen feet above the ground to a little platform which served as a sort of vestibule to the interior, in which the services were conducted, the Sunday School occupying the ground floor.

The first confirmation class consisted of Fanny Kalisher (Mrs. Samuel Lingstone); Teany Laventhal (Mrs. Issac Kauffman); Estelle Newmark (Mrs. Leon Loeb), and Mary Cohn (Mrs. Harry Adler).

The first marriage in the synagogue was that of Daniel Uhlman and Sarah Lehmann in 1874. The second united Isaac Norton and Bertha Greenbaum, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Ephraim Greenbaum, and parents of our present president. A double wedding, always, but especially then, an unusual event, was conducted on December 6, 1885, when Jeanette Lazard became Mrs. Louis Lewin and Ella Newmark changed her name to Mrs. Carl Seligman.

On October 19, 1881, Joseph Newmark died. During his lifetime, in deference to him, the ritual was conducted according to orthodox prescriptions. Many members of the congregation, however, had begun to change their views; and in 1884, when it had become evident that the adoption of a more liberal ritual was inevitable, Rabbi Edelman, rather than sacrifice his convictions, resigned the pulpit. He then officiated for some years as rabbi of an orthodox congregation, which had recently been established, (now no longer in existence), and after the completion of this service, he

spent the remainder of the time allotted him, with a devoted family to solace and the recollection of a life of service, to sweeten his latter years. His death occurred on July 24, 1907.

After the resignation of the esteemed rabbi, I. W. Hellman, then on a trip through the East, and at the request of Harris Newmark, who, in 1881 had succeeded him in the presidency, made investigations regarding a new spiritual leader, and while in Denver, being impressed with Dr. Emanuel Schreiber, of Congregation Emanuel, he invited that gentleman to take charge of our congregation. The invitation was accepted; and the first services under Rabbi Schreiber were held during the High Holidays of 1884.

The officers at that time were: President, Harris Newmark, Vice-President, Michel Levy; Secretary, Jacob Schlesinger; Trustees, Herman W. Hellman, Leon Loeb, Leopold A. Harris, Kaspare Cohn and Isaac Norton.

Dr. Marcus Jastrow's prayer book, in which English was substituted for Hebrew in many passages, was adopted. The custom, however, of wearing hats, was discontinued until 1888.

On Thanksgiving of that year, at the invitation of Rev. Eli P. Fay, the Unitarians and the Jews held joint services in the Fort Street Synagogue.

At that time, the rite of confirmation was conducted only in behalf of the girls, the boys being Bar-Mitzvah; but as time passed, the boys were more and more included in the confirmation classes, and the ceremony of individual induction, after some years, came to be practically never used; although, according to a suggestion of Rabbi Magnin in 1919, it is still occasionally conducted, at the special request of parents.

In 1885, H. W. Hellman took the place of Mr. Newmark as president, and Leopold B. Saunders succeeded Jacob Schlesinger as secretary.

In 1889, Rabbi Schreiber resigned the pulpit and Reverend Abraham Blum was called from Galveston, Texas, to succeed him.

On January 9, 1895, Andrew J. Copp bought the Fort Street home of the congregation; a year later it was razed, and until a new place of worship was completed, the congregation held services at the Unitarian Church at the corner of Hill and Third Streets.

Wilshire Boulevard Temple: Congregation B'Nai B'Rith

In 1895, also, Rabbi Blum severed his connection with the congregation; and on October 12, Rabbi Moses G. Solomon was chosen as his successor. On the same date, the Union Prayer Book, later revised, was adopted and is still in use; and a committee consisting of Jacob Baruch, Isaac Norton and Jacob Loew was appointed to supervise the construction of the new Temple on the lot at the northeast corner of Ninth and Hope Streets, which had recently been acquired.

On November 7, 1895, Abraham M. Edelman, son of our first Rabbi, was appointed architect of the new Temple and on January 17, 1896, W. S. Mills and Company were awarded the contract for its erection. In the same year, Jacob E. Waldeck succeeded Mr. Saunders as secretary.

On Sunday, March 16, 1896, the cornerstone ceremony was conducted. Harris Newmark was Master of Ceremonies; President H. W. Hellman placed the cornerstone, and Rabbi Solomon delivered the principal address.

In 1896, the congregation, for the first time, conducted, a Thanksgiving service.

On September 6, 1896, the Temple was dedicated. The officers at the time were: President, H. W. Hellman; Vice-President, Michel Levy; Treasurer, Herman W. Frank; Secretary, Jacob E. Waldeck.

The speakers for the occasion were: Rev. A. W. Edelman, Rev. M. G. Solomon and Herman Silver, a benevolent representative of the old school, who had held office under Abraham Lincoln and later had been President of the Los Angeles City Council.

On December 20, 1896, occurred the first marriage in the new Temple, that of Henry W. Louis and Miss Rosalie Lazard.

On May 5, 1899, Reverend Solomon resigned, and in June, Rabbi Sigmund Hecht, spiritual head of Congregation Emanuel, of Milwaukee, at the invitation of the congregation, arrived in Los Angeles. On Friday evening, June 14, he conducted services, and on August 6, during a trip to Milwaukee, was elected Rabbi. Following his election, he returned to Los Angeles and on November 8, 1899, assumed the duties of his office.

In the same month, George N. Black succeeded Jacob E. Waldeck as Secretary.

On October 28, 1900, H. W. Hellman, who had given unstintedly of his time and ability to the affairs of the Temple, declined re-election to the presidency and Kaspere Cohn was elected to succeed him.

At this point, the cemetery comes under consideration.

In 1854, the Jewish people of Los Angeles established a burial place in Chavez Canyon, in the northwest part of the town, hard by the location of the present police range and club house. It was named "Home of Peace Cemetery."

In 1891, in order that it might receive more constant attention, the ladies, under the leadership of Mrs. Maurice Kremer, organized the Home of Peace Society, whose mission it was to fill that need, to which for over a decade its members devoted themselves with loving solicitude.

In the beginning of this century, the desirability of a larger and more convenient location having become apparent, the Board of Trustees, on January 30, 1902, authorized the purchase of thirty acres on the present Whittier Boulevard (then Stevenson Avenue). On May 18, the dedication took place, the remains of those who rested in the old cemetery later being transferred to the new one.

It was at this time that the congregation took over the responsibility of caring for the cemetery.

The old burial ground, many years ago, came into possession of the New Social Service Bureau (in June 1946, changed to Jewish Family Service), which, in the beginning of World War II, sold it to the government for use as a training camp.

On October 25, 1903, the congregation joined the Union of Hebrew Congregations.

In January, 1905, Samuel Wolfstein succeeded George N. Black as Secretary.

On August 21, 1907, Dr. David W. Edelman, second son of the Rabbi, was elected to membership in the congregation, and on October 30, of the same year, was made a trustee.

On October 26, 1910, Kaspere Cohn, to the deep regret of the congregation, refused re-election as President and Dr. Edelman was chosen as his successor.

On March 16, 1911, George Mosbacher, formerly a citizen of

Wilshire Boulevard Temple: Congregation B'Nai B'Rith

Oakland, who had recently established his residence in Los Angeles, became a member of the congregation.

In January, 1913, William T. Barnett took the place of Samuel Wolfstein as Secretary.

As early as 1914, it had become evident that the rapidly growing demands on Dr. Hecht were becoming too severe, and the suggestion that provision for an assistant rabbi was made and favorably received by the congregation. It was not, however, until nearly a year and a half thereafter that final action was taken. On October 27, 1915, Edgar F. Magnin, Rabbi of Temple Israel of Stockton, California, was elected Associate Rabbi.

On October 15, 1915, the Board of Trustees authorized the publication of a monthly bulletin concerning the affairs of the congregation and of the Sunday School. Thus came into existence the Temple Bulletin, which has become so welcome and now a weekly visitor to our homes.

On October 31, 1917, at the suggestion of Rabbi Magnin, the Board, in order to alleviate the tenderest feelings of mourners, decided that thereafter, the entire congregation should rise during the recital of Kaddish, instead of only the mourners.

April 22, 1919, marked the bestowal upon Dr. Hecht of a richly earned honor, when he was elected Rabbi Emeritus for life.

On November 23, 1920, George Mosbacher was elected Vice-President, succeeding Benjamin J. Schwob.

By 1921, the Temple having become inadequate, Trinity Auditorium was engaged for the Holidays, and was so used until Wilshire Boulevard Temple was completed.

March 23, 1921, marked the beginning of a new era. On that date, a resolution was passed authorizing the purchase, as a site for a new Temple, of a lot 125 feet on Wilshire Boulevard by 205 feet on Hobart, and on October 25, 1922, the purchase of an additional lot 65 by 150 feet, north of this property was ordered.

On January 8, 1924, the following building committee was appointed: George Mosbacher, Chairman, Meyer Elsasser, Maurice H. Newmark, Louis M. Cole, Mrs. Florine Wolfstein.

On February 28, 1924, A. M. Edelman and S. Tilden Norton

were appointed to serve as architects; and on May 20, 1925, the preliminary plans were approved.

On June 27, 1925, in the midst of the preparations for the erection of the proud new Temple, Rabbi Hecht laid down the burden of his earthly existence.

High was the esteem in which he was held, not only by his own people but by the entire community. He set a lofty ideal, and by his inspiration, his sincerity and his own example, he endeavored to lead us toward it's fulfillment.

During his rabbinate, he was the accepted representative of and the recognized spokesman for the Jews of Southern California; and as such won for them the good will and for himself, the veneration and affection of his fellow citizens of every denomination; while his talents and ripe scholarship earned for him a distinct and enduring place in American Judaism.

On August 26, 1925, Rabbi Maxwell H. Dubin, who was spiritual leader of Beth Israel Temple of San Diego, was appointed Director of Religious Education. His special duties are the superintendence of the Sunday School and the direction of the special service activities of the Temple; and in his capacity as Rabbi, he alternated with Rabbi Magnin, and Rabbi Wolf, in the occupancy of the pulpit.

In 1927, he prepared a series of mimeographed text books on the history, culture, religion, customs and traditions of the Jewish people. These books have received wide recognition and are used in many Sunday Schools in the United States and in some foreign countries.

In 1933, under the auspices of the Sisterhood, he began a course of book reviews which proved popular and are well attended.

On October 8, 1925, S. Tilden Norton resigned as architect and was appointed to the building committee. He was also subsequently elected honorary consulting architect.

On February 16, 1927, the sale of the property at Ninth and Hope Streets to E. L. Smathers was ratified by the congregation.

On February 28, 1927, D. C. Allison was appointed consulting architect of the new Temple.

Wilshire Boulevard Temple: Congregation B'Nai B'Rith

On May 10, 1927, the Board of Trustees was authorized to purchase the lot 95x147, adjoining the Temple on Harvard Boulevard.

On December 22, 1927, Dr. Edelman and Rabbi Magnin were added to the building committee.

On February 2, 1928, the building contract was awarded to the Herbert M. Baruch Corporation.

It was about this time that Rabbi Magnin began to broadcast on the radio. During the many years of this service he made widely acclaimed contributions toward the development of good will and understanding between the Jewish and the general community.

On May 30, 1928, it was carried that the old Temple be vacated within a month and that the offer of the Congregational Church of their house of worship, until the completion of the Temple, be accepted.

Our new home was initiated on October 7, 1928, when the Sunday School was conducted in the Sunday School building, and on February 15, 1929, divine service was held for the first time in the Temple, temporarily in the Temple-House auditorium.

On February 20, 1929, in appreciation of their generous courtesy and manifestation of fellowship, the Board of Trustees authorized a gift of one thousand dollars to the Congregational Church.

The formal dedicatory ceremonies were conducted on Friday evening, June 8th.

After a processional with the Torah, the depositing of the scrolls in the Ark and the lighting of the perpetual Light in memory of Harris and Sarah Newmark, the regular Sabbath evening service was held. Mr. Mosbacher then presented the new Temple, which Dr. Edelman accepted in behalf of the congregation.

Marco H. Hellman next presented the Herman W. and Ida H. Hellman Memorial Ark.

The ceremony closed with the presentation by Jack Warner for Warner Brothers of the Warner Memorial Mural painting in memory of Mr. and Mrs. Benjamin Warner and Samuel and Milton Warner. These beautiful and impressive paintings, which portray scenes from the Old Testament, are the work of the distinguished artist, Hugo Ballin. They have become world famous, and many visitors to Los Angeles come to inspect them.

After greetings from members of the rabbinate, the ceremony concluded with an organ recital.

On Saturday morning and Sunday afternoon, lay and clerical leaders of other faiths deliver addresses of felicitations, to which Rabbi Magnin responded.

Thus was dedicated Wilshire Boulevard Temple as a house of worship in Israel and a great communal institution.

The congregation had for many years maintained a library, which, after occupancy of the Temple, had been greatly enlarged by purchases, largely through the exertions of a committee of the Sisterhood and partly by the voluntary gifts of members. Following this dedication, it was named Sigmund Hecht Library.

On June 5, 1930, after seventeen years of able and devoted service, Secretary of the Congregation, William T. Barnett, son-in-law of Rabbi Edelman, passed away; and on July 11, Judge Harry A. Hollzer was elected to succeed him.

On February 26, 1933, a resolution authorizing Malinow and Simons to build a Mausoleum at Home of Peace Cemetery, under mutual arrangements with the congregation, was adopted. Dedication took place on April 8, 1934.

On May 25, 1933, Nathan Malinow was made Managing Director of the cemetery.

On August 6, 1933, the congregation and the community suffered a grievous loss, for on that day, after twenty-three years of zealous and distinguished service as President, Dr. Edelman passed away.

He had for many years been in the forefront not only of religious and philanthropic but as well in the civic activities of the city.

He reached a high place in his profession of medicine, and served as Chief of Staff of Cedars of Lebanon Hospital in 1919, 1920 and 1921 and again in 1930 and 1931.

On October 25, 1955, George Mosbacher was elected as his successor: Judge Hollzer was made Vice-President and Alfred T. Kingsbaker, Secretary.

On December 13, 1933, the name Wilshire Boulevard Temple was officially adopted, B'Nai B'Rith being retained as the corporate

Wilshire Boulevard Temple: Congregation B'Nai B'Rith

designation of the congregation, the title of the institution becoming "Wilshire Boulevard Temple (Congregation B'Nai B'Rith)."

In 1935, the Sisterhood presented to the congregation a bronze plaque inscribed with the names of men of the congregation who served in World War I. This plaque was placed in the foyer; and the Sisterhood at the present writing is having prepared a similar plaque honoring those who served in World War II. (It was dedicated May 28, 1948).

On November 9, 1935, at a special meeting of the membership called for the purpose, a resolution commemorating the fortieth year of able and faithful service of James W. Hellman as a member of the Board of Trustees was passed. (He died April 20, 1940).

On October 11, 1943, Nathan Malinow resigned as Assistant Secretary; and on November 8, Samuel Tierman was elected as his successor; and because of additional responsibilities assigned him was given the title of Assistant Secretary and Office Manager.

On June 27, 1944, George Mosbacher departed this life, and on August 15, Judge Harry A. Hollzer was elected to succeed him.

During the years of his presidency, "Uncle George" as he was affectionately known, devoted himself faithfully to the responsibilities of his office. He administered the affairs of the Temple with a skillful hand and guided it through an era of notable expansion.

His services were distinguished, also, in other communal activities. Elected its president in 1915, in the third year of its existence, he led the Federation of Jewish Welfare Organizations of Los Angeles through fifteen years of a development which established it as one of the important eleemosynary institutions of the city.

His name will live in memory, as the pattern of his life will continue as an inspiration through the years.

In 1944, the National Conference of Christians and Jews honored the congregation when it selected Rabbi Magnin to join a representative of the Protestant and of the Catholic faiths in a tour of the military camps of the Aleutian Islands, where they addressed thousands of men, bringing them messages from home and strengthening their morale.

In the same year, the Rabbi was appointed to serve as a rep-

representative of the Jewish Welfare Board on the Committee on Army and Navy Religious Activities.

During his later years, Mr. Mosbacher had initiated a plan for the liquidation of the large remaining indebtedness of the Temple.

He did not live to see the fulfillment of this ambition, but in April, 1945, partly from the revenues of the Temple and largely because of the liberal contributions of many members, responding to an appeal by Rabbi Magnin, the objective was attained.

It seems fitting in this connection, to express appreciation to the Union Bank and Trust Company and to its president, Ben R. Meyer, for their generous financial cooperation with the Temple for sixteen years.

In August, 1945, the number of children had so increased that the Board decided to institute a Saturday morning session, primarily for the children of non-members and those whose parents might prefer the Saturday session. This arrangement would allow for the accommodation of a minimum of one thousand pupils.

In October, 1945, in recognition of his spiritual leadership and manifold services in communal and national activities, Rabbi Magnin was awarded the honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity by Hebrew Union College.

On January 14, 1946, after but seventeen months of exemplary service, Judge Harry A. Hollzer passed to eternal rest.

As Judge of the Superior Court of Los Angeles County from 1924 until 1931 and thereafter as Federal Judge for the Southern District of California, he attained national distinction.

As president of the Jewish Community Council from its beginning in 1933 to the end of his life, he made contributions beyond calculation to our own community, and he was often called to the council tables of our national organizations.

On February 12, 1946, S. Tilden Norton was elected to the presidency of the congregation and fulfilled the duties of that office according to the fine standards and ideals of his predecessors until 1955.

On February 12, 1946, the Board adopted the Blue Cross Plan, whereby it was agreed that the Temple pay two-thirds (later raised

Wilshire Boulevard Temple: Congregation B'Nai B'Rith

to three-fourths) of the expenses, in the event that the employees of the Temple, or the employees or manager of the Cemetery require hospitalization or surgery.

In 1946, also, the Union of Hebrew American Congregations established a Western Regional Office, whose jurisdiction covers Washington, Oregon, California, Arizona, Nevada and Idaho. Rabbi Alfred Wolf, who had occupied the pulpit of Temple Emanu-El in Dothan, Alabama, and served as director of the Southeastern Regional Office, was appointed director.

The purposes of the office are to represent the Union in this area; to coordinate the work of existing congregations and organize new ones as the need arises.

Rabbi Wolf, in addition, directs the activities of the Youth Group and serves as advisor to the other auxiliaries of the Temple.

On March 31, 1947, the Membership and Seating Committee adopted a recommendation that consideration be given to the matter of providing for an auxiliary high holiday service in the proximity of the Temple for the accommodation of members who did not have seats in the Temple; Post-Confirmants, Religious Teachers and non-members.

This report was adopted, and Immanuel Presbyterian Church, in token of good will, generously offered their house of worship for this purpose, an offer which was accepted with deep appreciation.

In 1947, the Union founded the Los Angeles College of Jewish Studies. Its program includes schools for the training of teachers and for pre-rabbinical and adult education.

Rabbi Magnin is president; Haskell W. Kramer was chairman of the Board until his death on November 18, 1948, when he was succeeded by Leonard Chudacoff.

Rabbi Leonard Greenberg was the first director, and, when he resigned in June, 1949, Rabbi Wolf served as acting director; and, when he was elected as third Rabbi of the Temple, Rabbi Phineas Smoller, who had been director of the Chicago Union Office, was selected as director of the Los Angeles Union Office and acting director of the College.

On November 17, 1947, the Temple celebrated its eighty-fifth anniversary under the joint auspices of the Temple, the Sisterhood

and the Men's Club. The program of the affair, which was held in the Cocanut Grove of the Ambassador Hotel, consisted of addresses by Rabbis Magnin and Dubin, entertainment and a dinner-dance.

At the meeting of the Board of Trustees on March 8, 1949, a plan for Junior Membership was adopted. Its provisions were: 1. That Confirmants be presented with complimentary Junior Membership cards granting seating by application, and the rights of membership, with the exception of the privileges of voting or holding office. This right continues until the age of nineteen years is attained, when the complimentary membership ceases and Junior Membership becomes effective. 2. Any Jew or Jewess, whether single or married, between the ages of nineteen and twenty-eight, upon payment of \$12.00 per year, will be granted one or two seats and the rights of membership, with the exception of the privilege of voting or the holding of office. Upon reaching the age of twenty-eight years, Junior Membership will automatically cease, and regular Senior Membership will become effective.

It now remains to render an account of the three auxiliaries of the Temple, which are so significantly supplementing its activities.

Wilshire Boulevard Sisterhood was organized in 1913. The first president was Mrs. Cora Prenzlauer; and, under her administration, which extended through 1914, were laid the foundations of an organization which has performed an invaluable service in behalf of both the Temple and the Community. In appreciation of her services, the Sisterhood, in 1915, conferred on her the title of President Emeritus.

Her successors have been Mrs. Berthold Baruch, who served two different terms; Mrs. Herman Levi; Mrs. Kelley Roth; Mrs. Albert Ancker; Mrs. M. J. Finkenstein; Mrs. Jules Kauffman; Mrs. Florine Wolfstein; Mrs. Leo Hirshfield; Mrs. Sylvain Lazard; Mrs. Albert Shauer; Mrs. Edward A. Melczer, who was instrumental in bringing the Braille System to the Jewish blind of Los Angeles; Mrs. Sydney K. Irmas; Mrs. David Jacobs; Mrs. Harry B. Seltzer; Mrs. Samuel Kuhn and Mrs. William Roseman.

The purposes of the Sisterhood are well summarized in the following statement: "The purposes of this organization shall be

Wilshire Boulevard Temple: Congregation B'Nai B'Rith

to foster and further the highest ideals of Judaism; to promote closer fellowship among its members; and in cooperation with the Temple and the Congregation, be a mentor for religious, social and educational activities."

It is now in order to mention the many services the Sisterhood has rendered.

In both World Wars it worked with other organizations in the bond drives; welcomed and entertained our men in the armed forces on the holy days and cooperated with the Jewish Welfare Board and the Red Cross.

During World War II, it established in the Temple a Red Cross unit; conducted canteens for soldiers and sailors, arranged for them social affairs in the Temple, in private homes and in camps.

Since World War II, it has maintained a Serv-a-Committee of the National Red Cross, which furnishes Hannukah gifts and magazine subscriptions to veterans in hospitals.

At the time of the twenty-fifth anniversary of Dr. Hecht's occupancy of the pulpit, it presented the Congregation a portrait of the rabbi, which hangs in the Sigmund Hecht Library.

The Sisterhood takes an interest in the University Religious Conference, to which it contributes financial support.

During the administration of Mrs. Irmas, a committee, whose mission it is to send, every Hannukah, bundles of gifts and dainties to inmates of penal institutions, was appointed.

Another service of the Sisterhood is its care of the Library. It supplies funds for the purchase of books, a function performed by Rabbi Dubin; and every Sunday morning, the late Mrs. DeWald Baum, chairman of the Library Committee, was in the Library, with a professional librarian to assist her in the discharge of her duties. Since her death on May 30, 1950, the latter has had full charge.

The year 1950 marks the twentieth anniversary of the instituting of classes in current literature and drama sponsored by the Sisterhood and conducted by Rabbi Dubin.

Subsequently, these classes were substituted by a series of

play reviews. Presented by the rabbi, they have become a popular feature of the Sisterhood program.

In conclusion, for many years, the Sisterhood has issued a monthly bulletin, at the present time being issued by Mrs. Louis H. Winer, which keeps the members in touch with its manifold activities.

The next auxiliary of the Temple had its beginning in 1925, when, at the suggestion of Arthur Rhinehart, an informal group, known as the Temple Men's Club, was founded under the chairmanship of Judge Harry A. Hollzer. Affiliated with the National Federation of Temple Brotherhoods, it held dinner meetings, at which cultural programs were presented.

In 1930, this undertaking fell victim to the depression; but somewhat later it was revived when the members began meeting periodically to discuss Jewish subjects.

Then, in 1932, Rabbi Dubin suggested that the meetings be transferred to the Temple, and Raphael Dechter acted as moderator. He served four years, his successors being: 1936, Jack H. Zucker; 1937, Ernest J. Armer; 1939, Leon Rothchild.

At the end of 1939, the group decided to devote itself principally to war service activities and Raphael Dechter became chairman.

A war bond drive was conducted under the chairmanship of Melbourne L. Leavitt, and a committee, headed by Edward A. Melczer sponsored a number of canteens.

During 1940, the group organized formally, Raphael Dechter being elected president. He served until 1945. His successors have been: 1946-1947, Jack Berman; 1948, Melbourne Leavitt; 1949 Edward Beckman; 1950, J. Robert Arkush.

The members give financial assistance to the Jewish Chatauqua Society. The Society furnishes speakers for meetings of university students and books on Jewish subjects for college libraries.

In 1949, a Welfare Committee was formed. In cooperation with the rabbis, it provides financial aid for members who are in financial or other difficulties.

In the same year, the Down Town Luncheon Club was established under the supervision of the three rabbis. At its meetings,

Wilshire Boulevard Temple: Congregation B'Nai B'Rith

which are held every third Thursday, Rabbi Magnin delivers a talk on the history of the Jewish people, his address being followed by a general discussion.

The club, which now has a membership of about three hundred fifty, arranges social gatherings and holds dinner meetings, at which prominent speakers talk on subjects of interest, after which a general discussion ensues.

It also cooperates with the Temple and the Sunday School, and supports the campaign of the Welfare Fund and the Community Chest.

For some years, the club has published Men's Club News, which contains information about its activities. It is edited by Bertram Harris.

The third auxiliary to be organized was Wilshire Boulevard Temple Young People's Group. It was started in 1940, with Jack Goldman as president. He served until the outbreak of World War II, when the members, both men and women, entered the service of their country; and it can be reported with pride, that the enrollment reached almost one hundred per cent.

This resulted in a temporary blackout, but, on February 10, 1946, the group was revived, Paul Behrman being elected president. His successors have been: 1947-1948, Manuel Goldman; 1949, Ernest Goldenfield; 1950, David Easton.

The program consists of classes in Jewish history; parties and entertainments; music groups; play and book reviews; discussions concerning politics; philosophy, current events, psychology and marriage.

Nor are the sports neglected. The group conducts tennis, bowling, pitch and put and golf tournaments; and, recently skiing has been added.

It is a member of Independent, Inc., an organization whose program, which is publicized in the press and on the radio, is designed to foster inter-faith friendliness and understanding.

Finally, it issues a bi-monthly pamphlet, *Newsette*, which was started in 1946. Under the co-editorship of Joan Hoffman and Mnuchin, its contents are made up of reports about the organization's activities, information concerning the doings of the members,

and a snappy gossip column, under the suggestive by-line "Saucy Sammy."

In 1949, the Sisterhood organized the Pharisees, a pre-confirmation group, of which Michael Braverman is president. Its purpose is to conduct educational, sport and social activities.

In the same year, T. A. G. was organized, also by the Sisterhood, the president being Thomas Redler. Its activities are religious, educational and social.

Early Los Angeles: *Mecca of Celebrities*

By Maymie R. Krythe



EVEN IN THE EARLY DAYS before the Chamber of Commerce had begun to function by advertising, the fame of Southern California's unrivalled scenery and climate had spread not only through the United States, but to other countries. Word reached Europe through tales told there by Americans, by returning travelers, and by means of a book written by a royal Austrian. Also, when the great ranchos of Abel Stearns were being subdivided and offered for sale, they were advertised in some European newspapers in order to attract good settlers. Therefore, it isn't surprising that Los Angeles, in its early times, became the mecca of members of the aristocracy and royalty.

For example, Angelenos were thrilled when an English woman, Lady Franklin, arrived with her niece by steamer from San Francisco. Her husband, Sir John Franklin, a well known explorer had lost his life while on an expedition to the Arctic regions. Then his widow spent much time and energy trying to discover the place of his death, and the circumstances surrounding it.

During her stay in Southern California residents vied with each other in entertaining her at such attractive estates as Lake Vineyard, the home of Don Benito Wilson (grandfather of General George S. Patton, Jr.) in Pasadena. Also General Phineas Banning honored the titled lady with a reception at his home in Wilmington, where "an elegant collation" was served the guests. No doubt Lady Franklin carried with her a fine impression of Southern California hospitality, when she left for the Orient on her world trip back to England.

Several distinguished guests reached here, during the seventies, including Lord Dunraven, "a real live member of the nobility of England." He came down on the steamer *Senator* from San Fran-

cisco. After a short stay in Los Angeles, he went bear hunting up near Fort Tejon. Another scion of an aristocratic British family, Lord Ebrington, in 1874, also visited Los Angeles valley; he, too, did some hunting around Fort Tejon.

Two years later—1876—so the local press reported, the Baron Osten Sacken, once the Russian consul-general at New York, was in the City of the Angels. As he was a distinguished entomologist, he collected many interesting specimens, while visiting the Centinela Rancho with George Hansen. Other interesting tourists in the vicinity at this period included the wife of Captain Lee, son of General Robert E. Lee, R. H. Dana, Jr., of Boston, U. S. Grant, and a daughter of Henry W. Longfellow.

The Los Angeles *Herald* of May 1, 1877, was quoted in *Frank Leslie's Illustrations* as saying that "a real live lord has been traveling alone in his own conveyance for health and pleasure. He is of great wealth, but his manners and general make up are simple and unostentatious."

Lord Vivian, for the benefit of his health has just made the trip from Canada to California in his carriage. The vehicle is a curiosity in its way, being fitted up with a bedroom, sitting room, and everything as complete as could be made in so small a space, and is in fact a small palace car. This conveyance Lord Vivian sold a short time ago at San Bernardino, and purchased a phaeton, which he now uses. His horse and dog, an English greyhound, are his only pets, and the manner in which he prefers to travel is extremely delightful to him. Having 'done' the races, he will soon start for Santa Barbara, being greatly pleased with the great trotting contest, his sojourn here, and our country in particular.

(According to the above news item, Lord Vivian may have been one of the early designers of modern trailers.)

In 1878, by a strange coincidence, two American generals arrived in town on the same day; General William T. Sherman came via the Southern Pacific Railway from Yuma. Also General Charles Frémont, and his wife, Jessie Benton Frémont, registered at the St. Charles (formerly the Bella Union). As it had been thirty years since the Frémonts had been in Los Angeles, they received a great ovation. That evening a large crowd of townspeople gathered in front of the hotel. Then from the second floor balcony, the general, the noted pathfinder, thanked them for their sincere welcome, and

Early Los Angeles: Mecca of Celebrities

compared the new bustling Los Angeles with the sleepy *pueblo* he had known in Mexican War days.

One of the most illustrious guests that ever visited this region was Ludwig Louis Salvator, Archduke of Austria, at that time 24 years of age. For four years he had been traveling incognito, after leaving his great estate on Minorca in order to continue his studies in many countries of the globe.

While in Southern California, the Archduke made a thorough and intelligent study of the country around Los Angeles: its geography, plant and animal life, products, transportation, industries, and people. He also was interested in the founding of the *pueblo*, the cattle industry, rodeos, riding, hunting, and local vineyards, estates, and ranchos.

Later he discussed all these things in a book, which he wrote in German. This was printed in the City of Prague. It seems strange that one of the best accounts of Southern California of this period was written by a foreigner, in another language. Later the work was translated into English as *Los Angeles in the Sunny Seventies*. One illustration, labeled "Hauptstrasse in Los Angeles," is a good view of Main Street, with the cupola of the Temple Market House towering up in the distance over the smaller buildings.

During his visit, the Archduke, accompanied by another Austrian and a Spanish valet, stayed at the Pico Hotel. He spoke several languages fluently: English, Spanish, French, Italian and German. The party was very unobtrusive, for tourists; and the Archduke by his gentlemanly manners made a favorable impression on all who met him. He declared that he was more pleased with Los Angeles than any other place he had seen in his wide travels, and that he would like to return some time and buy an estate in the vicinity.

He was also an accomplished artist, and spent much time making sketches of various estates he visited in the neighborhood. When he left by the railroad (promoted by General Phineas Banning) for Wilmington and San Pedro Bay to take his steamer, the Archduke described the journey in his book in this interesting fashion:

After departing from the Southern Pacific station, the train passes through fine orange groves, vineyards, willow hedges, walnut groves,

and masses of castor beans growing along the tracks. On the left, loom the majestic mountains. Once the orchards are passed, the country becomes flat and level, being varied only by occasional acacias and pepper trees . . .

After the train leaves Florence, flat plains used both for grain fields and pastures are passed; here and there this is varied by an occasional home, fields of corn, clumps of willow . . . Finally Compton, a small settlement, 12 miles from Los Angeles is approached . . .

Next is seen the distant range of mountains off toward the coast which was known as the Palos Verdes, and on the right, the Drum Barracks, where the soldiers were mustered out during the American War . . . On the right General Banning's house and what was formerly the military hospital appear . . .

(In his later years the Archduke continued to write monographs about the lands he visited, and altogether produced about forty volumes. His excellent work caused his election to the Austrian and Bohemian Academies of Science; he was also an honorary member of the Royal Geographic Society of Great Britain.)

Perhaps this enthusiastic account of Southern California by Archduke Ludwig Louis Salvator influenced other celebrities to visit the district. For a few years later—in the summer of 1881, the Dukes of Athol and Sutherland both arrived. The former traveled very modestly on the overland railroad (finished a decade before) and was accompanied only by his secretary. He enjoyed visiting the environs of Los Angeles, and was entertained here in true Southern California style. Before he left, he ordered a dozen copies of the *Los Angeles Illustrated Herald* (a special edition that extolled very highly the glories of the region) sent to some friends. The Duke of Athol also bought two copies for himself and his secretary to read on their way back East.

The other ducal traveler, the Duke of Sutherland, arrived on June 4, according to the *Herald*, with great eclat, in a special car. This genial young aristocrat's family home, Trentham Hall, was located "near the Staffordshire potteries, embowered in a fine park and invested with the traditional manorial dignity."

Before reaching Los Angeles, the Duke—so he stated—had been annoyed in San Francisco by newspaper men who wanted to interview him. He declared he didn't like this American custom

Early Los Angeles: Mecca of Celebrities

and hoped it wouldn't be introduced into England. In the Duke's party there was a foreign newspaper correspondent, Dr. Russell.

As customary, the Duke of Sutherland and his party were shown around the city and its environs. On a visit to Santa Monica by special train, the young nobleman was thrilled when allowed to drive the engine on this trip. He and his friends enjoyed bathing in the surf and they were charmed with Santa Monica. The *Herald* reporter wrote that the Duke was greatly impressed by Southern California; that he had seen nothing in Italy more beautiful than this region; and he predicted a brilliant future for Los Angeles. Before leaving for Yosemite the young nobleman said that he hoped to return and visit the San Gabriel Valley.

In connection with the stay of the Duke of Sutherland in the City of the Angels, an amusing story appeared in the *Herald* of June 26, 1881. The original discoverer of the famous Tombstone mining district in Arizona, Ed Schieffelein, was quite a character. He wore high top boots, had long flowing hair, and created much curiosity and attention wherever he went.

Since the Duke of Sutherland had heard much about him, he wanted to meet him personally. Therefore, he sent word to Ed that he was willing to receive him. But the frontier millionaire coolly replied to the messenger that he wasn't at all desirous of increasing the number of his acquaintances! So the Duke, in his turn, was as badly disconcerted as the San Francisco reporters had been while the Duke wouldn't see them.

(The *Herald* writer said this incident reminded him of something that happened to William IV—then the Prince of Wales—when he visited New York early in the last century. When the Prince was in a tailor shop, he grabbed the wife of the proprietor, stole a kiss, and said, "When your husband comes home, you can tell him you have been kissed by the son of a king.")

Unluckily for him, the husband, in the back room, had heard what had gone on. So he rushed out, gave the young man a vigorous kick on "his seat of honor," and said, "Now, when *you* go home, you can tell *your* family that you were kicked by a New York tailor!")

In 1882, the writer Helen Hunt Jackson, spent several weeks

in the city, staying at the Pico Hotel. She had come here to obtain more information about the Indians of Southern California. Each day Mrs. Jackson spent some time at the Coronel home, where Donna Mariana Coronel gave her much material that she later used in her famous book, *Ramona*. It was the Coronels who suggested that the author use the Camulos Rancho, north of town as the background of the novel that described the romantic life of early California. While at Pico House, Mrs. Jackson wrote an article about the Coronel adobe which was published in *Century Magazine*.

Among other celebrities who came to Los Angeles during this decade were the noted Polish actress, Madame Helena Modjeska, and her husband, Count Bozenta Chlapowski. She had been important as an actress in her own country, but because of the unhappy political life there, she came to California with a group of her countrymen to form an idealistic community. They did not make a success of this project; so Madame Modjeska decided to try to go back to her stage work. This wasn't easy, as she had to learn English in a few months. At her American debut in San Francisco in *Audrienne Lecouvreur*, she was acclaimed for her fine performance and was also very successful as the leading lady in *As You Like it*, *Frou Frou*, *Camille*, and *Romeo and Juliet*. During the next decades she starred both here and abroad, but often came back to visit Los Angeles. Here she was loved by her many friends; and outstanding social affairs were staged in her honor.

Other noted visitors here included the world-famous singer, Madame Adelina Patti. Since the opera house had been rented for another performance, she had to sing in a hall over Mott's Market. However, because of the supreme artistry of the singer, the Angelenos (who had paid \$7 apiece to hear her) didn't even smile—so the story goes—when the sound of crowing roosters came up from the room below, during the diva's rendition of a famous aria.

The year 1880 was an important one for Los Angeles, for then her citizens were thrilled by a visit by President Hayes. This was the first time the Chief Executive had visited town while still in office. The City Council had appointed a committee to make arrangements for the visit of the President and his wife; and the

Early Los Angeles: Mecca of Celebrities

Express (October 23, 1880) gave a full account of the proposed program.

However, the parade that had been planned had to be given up because of a change in the time of the arrival of the Presidential train. When this reached town at 7:00 a.m., Saturday, October 23, many citizens were on hand. But the official welcome was given at the Cosmopolitan Hotel at 9:00 a.m., by a committee that consisted of Mayor Toberman, the Council members, ex-Governor Downey, L. J. Ross, and other prominent leaders.

Factory whistles saluted, and Contrero's Band played spirited national airs. A four-in-hand barouche carried President and Mrs. Hayes along the streets, where the people greeted them respectfully. Then the party was taken to the Wolfskill Orange Groves; and to Agricultural Park, where the annual County Fair was in progress. Unfortunately, less than 200 people were on the ground at this time; and the party returned to the Cosmopolitan for a short rest.

At the hotel, decorations of evergreens and fine displays of fruits and flowers were tastefully arranged on sideboards. Many Angelenos attended a reception honoring the President. But the *Express* says that some disgruntled townspeople walked past Mr. Hayes without attempting to shake hands with him, as they still were convinced that he had usurped Tilden's place.

At the noon meal, attended by dignitaries, the menu was printed in French on white satin. After this dinner, the President spoke to the crowd, from a grandstand in front of the Baker Block, at Main and Arcadia Streets. He complimented the people of Los Angeles, and told of his journey from Maine to the Pacific Coast. Also the ladies gave a reception for Mrs. Hayes at the Cosmopolitan. (Then this hotel was a well appointed one, with fine red velvet carpets; but later it became a cheap lodging house, the St. Elmo. However on this day in 1880, it had its hours of glory.)

Carriages carried the distinguished guests to the Pavilion at the Fair, where Southern California products, cattle, sheep, grain, and fruits were exhibited. The members of the party were introduced to the crowd by J. de Barth Shorb (son-in-law of Don Benito Wilson) and president of the Fair Association. Both the President and General Sherman spoke to the audience.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

At three o'clock the group had lunch in the New England Kitchen at the Pavilion, where the ladies had prepared the food. (Previously the City Council had appropriated for this meal the sum of \$26; but when the ladies appealed through the *Herald* for more provisions, public-spirited citizens responded with gifts of fine turkeys, fruits, and vegetables, to help make the affair a gala one.) After the luncheon, the Presidential party was entertained by an Old Folks' concert, a husking bee, and rural dances.

Later the visitors saw the homes of J. de Barth Shorb, L. J. Ross, and General Sherman, before boarding their special train for the East, thus ending the first visit to Los Angeles of a President, while serving his term. So, while the West was still rather wild and woolly, Southern California was quite a mecca for celebrated visitors, both from our own United States and from foreign lands.

Belated Diagnosis

By Helen Rocca Goss



THE MYSTERIOUS DEATHS OF TWO LITTLE-KNOWN MEN, tragic as those deaths were to their families and friends, ordinarily would not be of sufficient importance to warrant an article on the subject nearly fifty years later. The incident I am about to relate, however, is one of those events which, though seemingly obscure at the time, are significant when added to other similar cases in helping medical science to inch its way toward a better understanding of some unusual malady. The episode has an added interest, too, because of a unique feature it had. By a strange twist of fate, a number of valuable animals were caught in the chain of unfortunate circumstances and thus needlessly sacrificed.

About six years after my father, Andrew Rocca, became superintendent of the Great Western Quicksilver Mine in Lake County in 1876, he and his friend, John Voluntine, bought a large tract of land near Middletown as an investment. Though not all acquired at one time, the piece of property eventually comprised 4,000 acres—large enough to be called a “ranch” even outside of California, where that term is frequently applied to very small farms. The “dairy ranch,” as the place came to be known, was located in the Guenoc area, about two miles from Middletown on the road to Lower Lake.¹ The Voluntines lived on the place in the 1880’s and early 1890’s, and during those years extensive improvements and development of the property were undertaken.

The dairy ranch was the first farm in the neighborhood to cultivate alfalfa, and it was a source of pride and pleasure to my parents when they drove down from the Great Western to inspect their lush green fields. My mother’s enjoyment of the ranch is reflected in many letters she wrote to her family in that era. In the summer of 1884, for example, she wrote:

We were down to the ranch last Friday . . . The alfalfa looks so

pretty and green. There is a large garden on the place (a man put it in on shares) and it has the nicest vegetables I ever saw.²

A few months later Mother wrote with enthusiastic interest of another addition to the dairy:

We have just bought a thoroughbred Holstein calf for the ranch. He is eight months old and weighs 700 lbs. How is that for a calf who *drinks milk yet*. His name is Buford and he cost \$300, so he ought to be nice.³

Unfortunately, Buford's promising career came to a sudden end less than a month later. "Too much alfalfa hay," my mother explained in writing sadly of the calf's death. "It is too bad for he was such a nice fellow and cost us over \$325.00."⁴

There were other thoroughbred calves to take Buford's place, however, and development of the ranch went forward rapidly in the following year. Early in the spring of 1885, Mother reported progress in some detail:

They are very busy on our ranch now. There is a large number of men employed grubbing out trees and clearing land and plowing besides the regular work. They are going to put out 10,000 grape cuttings, and a lot more alfalfa. The 31 acres put in last Spring was a great success. It was cut three or four times last Summer, and is almost ready to cut again.⁵

From time to time a serious recurring problem is mentioned in Mary Rocca's letters—great clouds of grasshoppers descending on the alfalfa fields and destroying them in a few hours. Thus, in June, 1884, she said:

Everything at the ranch is going on nicely except that the grasshoppers have taken one small piece of alfalfa, about 18 acres. The other piece is too far along to be hurt.⁶

A year later she wrote: "The Ranch is doing splendidly only we are threatened with another grasshopper invasion, which will cause us a great loss if it comes."⁷ Eventually the problem was at least partially solved by the importation of flocks of turkeys, which saved the fields from destruction on several occasions.⁸

In his gold mining days, Father had operated one of the larger ditches which supplied the miners in the Big Oak Flat area with water for their sluices. In that capacity he had developed great

Belated Diagnosis

interest in and considerable knowledge of water systems. Before long he had created at the dairy a rather elaborate irrigation system for artificial watering of the alfalfa fields and the large vegetable garden during the long dry summers prevailing in Lake County. Of that system my brother Andrew writes:

Dad filed on the water rights at the dairy ranch, collecting fifty cents a year from all who used water from Putah Creek in his area in order to perpetuate those rights . . . He ran a tunnel through the hill from the Putah Creek side to the dairy, and each year he had a workman scrape a dam or weir out to the creek and lead the water to the tunnel some 650 feet to the ditch system on the valley side, permitting the irrigation of about 200 acres of land. That provided fine green feed for the herd throughout the hot, dry summer months.⁹

That fine herd of approximately 125 carefully selected milch cows was the crowning triumph of the ranch. As I remember them in my early childhood, they were truly an ornament to the landscape, when they browsed in the lovely meadows where exquisite wild flowers grew. One of the cows wore a musical bell from Switzerland, and its tinkling little tune blended with the lilting song of the meadowlarks.¹⁰ The cows were not only decorative, though, since they produced quantities of delicious cheeses and pounds of golden-yellow butter. The butter sold for ten cents a pound, the cheese for four cents, and a tidy profit was made on both items!¹¹

Father visited the dairy at least once and often twice a week, usually taking some of us children with him.¹² Each time he would bring back several pounds of butter for his large family, as well as a generous pat of unsalted butter for himself, the only kind of butter he ever ate. A huge, milk-pan sized cheese came periodically, too, at least once every two weeks, oftener when, as was usually the case, our house was full of company. As for the quality of the cheese, although on European travels I have sampled some of the best of the French, Italian, Swiss and Holland varieties, I have never found any that tasted better to me than that made at our dairy ranch. Even allowing for the enthusiasm of a youthful appetite, I am sure that it *was* good cheese and would have been so recognized by a connoisseur.

John Voluntine was a frail man, and because of ill-health he sold his interest in the dairy to Andrew Rocca in 1894.¹³ Even be-

fore that time, however, it had become the custom to have the place managed by some Italian-Swiss family. First there was the Guilieri family, whose members make frequent appearances in my mother's diary after 1891.¹⁴ Guilieri's English was very limited, and my mother, who had the task of deciphering the books he kept, was often bewildered by some of the entires. Once, for example, she puzzled for a long time over an item spelled "musketyprew," until it finally dawned on her that he meant mosquito netting, which was universally used as a protection against flies in that era.¹⁵

The Guilieris were succeeded by another family of Italian-Swiss descent—the Salminas, who later opened the successful summer resort on Cobb Mountain which bears their name and is still owned by members of the family. It was under the management of the next family and when everything was running smoothly at the dairy that tragedy suddenly struck in December, 1908.

The dairy was operated at the time by a man in his early thirties, named Fulgenzio Morosoli, and he had as his assistant a man of forty-five named Felix Salmina. Shortly before Christmas, first Morosoli and then Salmina became desperately ill with symptoms which the local physician, Dr. G. G. Hawkins, found both baffling and alarming. Their illnesses began with great lassitude and general debility, accompanied by severe headaches and some nausea. Soon they were suffering from disturbed vision, they experienced great difficulty in talking or swallowing, and their tongues were swollen. On December 23, Morosoli died, and two days later, on Christmas Day, Salmina passed away. In each case death was preceded by gasping, labored breathing and by choking on saliva as the neck and chest muscles gradually became paralyzed. It became increasingly difficult for them to move their tongues, and finally all of the muscles of respiration and the vocal chords became rigid with paralysis. The cause of death was listed by the attending physician as "progressive bulbar paralysis."¹⁶

Dr. Hawkins had, of course, been questioning Mrs. Morosoli about every aspect of her husband's and Salmina's lives shortly before they were stricken. For the moment, at least, food poisoning was ruled out, not only because of the strange symptoms, but because there did not appear to be any source of such infection in

Belated Diagnosis

what the men had eaten. There had been nothing at all unusual in their diet, Mrs. Morosoli said, no sausage or canned fish, the foods most often under suspicion in the country in that era. She had served them just the plain fare they always had, meat, potatoes, bread, green salads, plenty of dairy products, home-grown vegetables and fruits, which she herself had canned the previous summer. But when Mrs. Morosoli remembered that on December 19, only a day or two before they became ill, Morosoli and Salmina had found and skinned a dead cow, the doctor thought that he might have stumbled on a clue to the mystery. Could it, he wondered, have been anthrax? And while he was careful not to state his fears as a positive diagnosis, anthrax was mentioned as a definite possibility.

An autopsy was performed on Salmina in St. Helena by Dr. A. J. Kahn of the Napa County Board of Health, and by a physician from the United States Marine Hospital in San Francisco.¹⁷ They confirmed the local doctor's diagnosis of "bulbar paralysis" as the immediate cause of death, without determining the reason for the paralysis. By the time their findings were reported in the local press, however, the story had been considerably embellished, and what was still mere conjecture, was now stated as fact. The *Sentinel* article stated categorically that Morosoli and Salmina were "dead as a result of skinning a diseased cow," adding that "doubtless the men were infected with anthrax." As for the dead cow, the article said: There was a large lump on the animal's jaw which was full of matter and when cut open emitted a frightful stench"—a statement which, so far as I have been able to discover, was a journalistic exaggeration of the actual facts.

The precautions taken in connection with the funerals of the two men suggest that all of the physicians involved in the case believed that their deaths had been caused by some highly contagious disease. On that subject, the *Sentinel* article reported: "Permission to hold public funerals in both cases was granted by the board of health, it being required that the bodies be wrapped in sheets saturated with formaline and incased in metallic lined and hermetically sealed caskets."

All of this, of course, had created intense excitement and terror, too, since the dairy supplied butter and cheese to a wide

area. In the meantime, the proper authorities had quarantined the dairy as a precautionary measure, pending further investigation. That action made it impossible for any one to care for the herd, even if sufficiently hardy souls could have been found to brave the dangers of contagion. As a result, the cows suffered untold miseries, when they were not milked as they should have been and were turned out to fend for themselves in the dead of what happened to be a very severe winter. Fate struck those usually well-cared-for animals a particularly cruel blow by placing the tragedy in the very period when record falls of rain and snow occurred. At the Helen Mine, where we were then living and which was nine miles from the dairy, Father kept accurate reports for the United States Weather Bureau. Both the highest monthly and annual precipitations while we were at the Helen were recorded in 1908, the total for the year being 136.86 inches, and that for January alone was 71.54 inches of rain and melted snow.¹⁸ Rainfall would have been considerably less in the valley where the dairy was situated, but it was very heavy there, too, and contributed materially to the high loss of animals from exposure and neglect.

Father, of course, had been summoned as soon as possible, and rushed to the dairy as soon as possible, arriving, I think, before Salmina died. He was skeptical of the anthrax theory from the first and began making some inquiries of his own. In particular, he questioned Mrs. Morosoli in minute detail about everything the men had eaten for several days before they were taken ill. Because he could speak to her in her native Italian, the poor woman, who was understandably frantic with grief and overwhelmed by all that had happened, found it easier to talk to him than to the various medical men who had questioned her. Thus, Father turned up several bits of information that had not previously come to light.

Andrew Rocca was a strong believer in the myth, then very popular, that it is dangerous to leave food in the can once it has been opened, so he went into that subject very thoroughly. When Mrs. Morosoli, who was apparently not conversant with that old wives' tale, readily admitted that the string beans she served to her husband and Salmina before they became ill had been left in the can overnight, Father was doubly sure after it became apparent

from further questioning that by chance only the two men had eaten any of that particular can of beans. There was a perfectly logical explanation for those facts, though I am not sure of the exact details now. As I remember it, however, the two men had worked late one evening, long past the usual supper hour. The rest of the family ate their supper, and when the men came in, Mrs. Morosoli opened a can of beans as part of their meal. The remainder of the beans was left in the can and served to Morosoli and Salmina for their lunch the next day. I remember hearing Father say over and over again after he came home: "It was the string beans that killed Morosoli and Salmina—I'm sure of it. They were left in the open can for many hours before they were eaten."

Although Father was on the right track when he suspected food poisoning and even hit upon the offending item, leaving the beans in the open can had, of course, nothing to do with the case. From a clinical standpoint, the important fact was that the beans had been home-canned. In the light of later medical knowledge, it became fairly obvious that the men had died of botulism, the deadly food poisoning caused by the "toxin formed by the growth of the botulinum microöganisms usually in underprocessed canned foods," a poison which was in the food before the can was opened and which could only have been destroyed by vigorous boiling over high heat for at least fifteen or twenty minutes.¹⁹ Actually, the beans may have been less lethal, perhaps even harmless, on their second appearance on the table, if they were really boiled the last time they were heated. However, it takes more than mere warming to destroy the botulinum toxin, and the string beans may have been served cold in salad on one or both occasions. In any case, since botulism does not necessarily manifest itself for several hours or even days after the toxin has entered the system, the fact that the men did not complain of illness until they had eaten the beans left in the open can overnight did not have the significance Father attached to it. According to Dack, although the symptoms of botulism may appear in two to four hours after the toxin enters the system, they usually do not do so until from twelve to thirty-six hours, and he cites one case where symptoms did not develop until 108 hours after the poisonous food had been eaten.²⁰

Botulism has been known in Europe for many years, the first recorded case occurring in Germany in 1735. It was originally associated only with the poisoning caused by eating spoiled sausage, the food from which it derives its name. Later, it was recognized that the same kind of poisoning could result from various preserved meats, fish, etc., and much more recently that underprocessed canned fruits and vegetables could also be a source of the toxin.²¹ Preserved meats have been the cause of most botulism in Europe, while home-canned vegetables have been the source of the largest number of cases of botulism in this country. In fact, 62.3 per cent of the outbreaks of botulism in California up to 1922 were caused by such home-canned vegetables and fruits as string beans, asparagus, corn, apricots and pears, and to commercially packed ripe olives and spinach, while only 24.4 per cent were caused by animal products.²²

Dack gives an interesting table, from data collected by K. F. Meyer, showing the number of outbreaks of botulism in the various states from 1899 to 1947. The table shows clearly how much more prevalent the malady has been on the Pacific Coast in general and in California in particular. Thus, of the 462 outbreaks reported, 170 were in California, 59 in Washington, 30 in Colorado, 25 in Oregon, 21 in New Mexico, and 11 in Montana. New York, with 24 outbreaks, was the only other state with more than nine, most of the others having only from one to five for the period.²³

Much has been learned about botulism in the past forty-eight years that the physicians at the dairy did not know in 1908. It would, I believe, have been unfair to expect even a well-informed country physician in California at that date to know that a vegetable might easily be the source of botulism, since it was at a later date that studies were made definitely proving that point. One of the earliest and most conclusive of such studies was reported in the *Journal of the American Medical Association* for August 7, 1915. In an article entitled "Botulism, an Experimental Study," Ernest C. Dickson of Stanford University reported the results of a series of experiments he had carried out which proved that the botulism toxin could be produced in various canned vegetables and fruits—notably string beans and pears. The study was undertaken when

Belated Diagnosis

in 1910 California had a series of fatal cases of "ptomaine poisoning" following the eating of home-canned pears, and the symptoms in those cases were observed to be similar to those in botulism.²⁴

Even during the war years of 1917 and 1918 when much food was home-preserved, the danger of botulism in fruits and vegetables was not fully appreciated. As a result of underprocessing, there were some botulism cases at that time, and research demonstrated that the cold-pack method of home canning then recommended by the government was not a safe means of preventing botulism. Research was also undertaken through grants at several universities to aid in controlling the disease in commercial canned products—such as spinach and ripe olives. Those investigations and valuable contributions from the United States Public Health Service have resulted in practically eliminating botulism in commercially canned products in this country, but it has not been so successfully controlled in home canning.²⁵

It would seem, therefore, that the physicians connected with the dairy incident of 1908 could be forgiven for their failure to associate the rather typical botulism symptoms of the two doomed men with the canned string beans they had eaten. Whether or not they could be excused for even a tentative diagnosis of those symptoms as anthrax is another question and one for physicians to answer. I myself have no more knowledge of anthrax than that gleaned from reading some encyclopedia articles on the subject, but it does appear that some of the symptoms, at least, of internal anthrax are similar to those Morosoli and Salmina had. According to the *Encyclopedia Britannica*, the symptoms in man include extreme prostration, inflammation of the lungs and the pleura, and sometimes intestinal disturbances, such as severe diarrhea and vomiting.²⁶ Death from collapse usually takes place in a few hours or from blood poisoning in three or four days.

Eventually it was acknowledged by the medical authorities that some form of food poisoning may have caused the "bulbar paralysis," and the herd was absolved from any relation to the deaths of the two men, but not before a terrible toll had been taken. The drastic quarantine resulted in the loss of about half of the animals. According to family memory, upwards of sixty of the

cows died, and the remainder were left in such a weakened condition that it was months before they fully recovered. And, of course, the unfavorable publicity practically destroyed the value of the dairy as a going concern for a long while.

Because he believed so firmly in his own theory of what caused the tragedy, Father was furious with all of the medical men associated with the case and never forgave them for what he considered to be their gross stupidity. The dairy had been one of his pet projects, but he was so disheartened over the death of his trusted employees and the loss of his fine animals that he was never again able to take the same interest and pleasure in it. When an opportunity came a few years later to sell the place, he was glad to accept the offer, even though he regarded it as far below the dairy's actual worth.²⁷

Because of the isolated location of the ranch, the fact that both men had probably eaten generous amounts of the botulinus infected beans, and the high fatality rate of such cases in that era, it is unlikely that either Morosoli or Salmina could have been saved, even if their illnesses had been correctly diagnosed. Although a fairly effective antitoxin serum has been developed since that time, even today the treatment of botulism is, as Dack points out, "unsatisfactory at best."²⁸ The mortality rate from botulism is low in Europe but high in the United States—about 65 per cent, death depending "on the amount of botulism toxin ingested and absorbed."²⁹ The sufferers from botulism who have the best chance of survival are those who have eaten only small portions of the infected food, whose symptoms are correctly diagnosed at an early stage of the disease, and who are in an area where the antitoxin serum is quickly available. The more time that elapses before the serum is used, the greater the danger that irreparable damage to the tissues has taken place.³⁰

One can readily understand Father's point of view without failing to appreciate the dilemma of the medical men in 1908. If the deaths at the dairy had been caused by some contagious disease among the cattle and the physicians had neglected to establish a quarantine, surely the public would have been justified in censuring them more severely than he did. To me the unfortunate episode

Belated Diagnosis

at the dairy is akin to those other tragedies resulting from maladies not understood at the time—like those, for example, where death resulted from what was diagnosed as “inflammation of the bowels” in the days before the urgency of an appendectomy was recognized.

NOTES

1. The dairy ranch first appears in my mother's letters to her family in the spring of 1884, but the references indicated that the property must have been purchased a year or so before that date. On March 16, 1884, Mary Rocca wrote to Amanda and John Thompson about a visit she had had from Mrs. Voluntine, adding: “The ranch is getting along nicely.” Among Andrew Rocca's papers there is a receipt dated July 13, 1883, and made out to Rocca and Voluntine for \$8,000 “as part payment on the purchase of the Read Mine and Greenfield ranches,” which evidently refers to the dairy ranch. Written statements from two of my sisters—Lillian L. Stewart of San Diego, March 18, 1945, and Florence G. McFarling of Ukiah, February 23, 1947—also indicate that Rocca and Voluntine began acquiring the dairy property in the early 1880's. Three other members of my family have helped me with other aspects of this article. My brother, Andrew Rocca, Jr., of South San Francisco sent me a statement dated May 10, 1947, and my sister, Idalene B. McCollum of Healdsburg, and my brother, Bernard T. Rocca of Berkeley, gave me their memories in conversations in the summers of 1949 and 1951. In subsequent notes these statements and conversations will be cited merely with the name and initials of the person supplying the information.
2. Mary Thompson Rocca to Amanda and John Thompson, Aug. 24, 1884.
3. *Ibid.*, Nov. 9, 1884.
4. *Ibid.*, Dec. 3, 1884.
5. *Ibid.*, Mar. 1, 1885. In a letter of March 15, 1885, she mentioned that sixteen men, half Chinese, half white, were regularly employed at the ranch.
6. *Ibid.*, June 23, 1884.
7. *Ibid.*, June 2, 1885.
8. L. L. Stewart.
9. A. Rocca, Jr.
10. I myself remember the dairy only after 1900. Old photographs bear out my memories of the charming scenes there, and I am indebted to my sister Lillian for mentioning the musical bell.
11. A. Rocca, Jr. In the summer of 1949, I had a conversation with our old friend, James Salmina, who gave me some of his memories of the dairy when he lived there as a young boy. There were usually about 125 cows being milked then, he said, and cheese was made at least once a day, sometimes twice a day.
12. For many years Andrew Rocca made regular inspection tours on Wednesdays and Saturdays to the dairy and another smaller ranch he owned in the neighborhood. It was on Saturdays, when the children did not have school, that they accompanied their father and a festive day was made of the occasion with a picnic lunch. As the family became larger, Mother was too busy to go except on rare occasions. On November 16, 1894, after reporting in her diary that she and her husband had spent that day at the ranch with Florence, Idalene, and Bernard she added: “Beautiful drive. First time I have been to the Ranch for years.”
13. Mary Thompson Rocca, *Diary*, Sept. 5, 1894; L. L. Stewart; F. G. McFarling.
14. Our Thanksgiving turkey in those years apparently came from the Guilieri flock, and on November 29, 1893, Mother wrote in her diary that “Guilieri sent a turkey tonight.” On November 30, 1894, she said: “Loda and Eda Guilieri brought us a turkey yesterday.”
15. L. L. Stewart.
16. *Calistogian*, Jan. 8, 1909, copied from St. Helena *Sentinel* of the previous week. The symptoms listed here are those remembered by different members of my family. My sister Idalene remembered the swollen tongues, an important symptom.
17. *Sentinel* article, as copied in the *Calistogian*. The name of the physician from the United States Marine Hospital in San Francisco is not mentioned in the article. I remember that Father spoke frequently of and had some correspondence with a Dr. Blue, who was probably connected with the quarantine regulations.
18. These are the official figures from the United States Weather Bureau in Washington, and I am indebted to Mr. Merrill Bernard, Chief of the Climatological and

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

- Hydrologic Services of that Bureau, for having them copied for me in 1950. In forwarding the report to me Mr. Bernard commented: "We feel that the work done by your father in voluntarily making weather observations has contributed substantially to the climatology of our country."
19. G. M. Dack, *Food Poisoning* (Chicago, rev. ed., 1949), p. 42. On pp. 66-69, Dack discusses the various studies made of "the resistance of *Cl. botulinum* to heat" and draws the conclusion that the only safe method of canning non-acid foods at home is in a pressure cooker with an accurate gauge or thermometer. If it is done by any other method, he says, "the food should be reboiled for 15 minutes before tasting or eating, counting time after boiling has begun." P. 69.
 20. *Ibid.*, pp. 51, 153. On page 47, Dack points out that while many foods, especially canned meats, have a bad odor as a result of the growth in them of *Cl. botulinum*, odor may not be noticeable in others, particularly in canned string beans.
 21. *Ibid.*, p. 43. Physicians of Southern Germany began using the term "botulismus," from "botulus," for sausage, in the early 19th century. While the disease itself has been recognized since 1735, the bacterium or toxin responsible for the malady was not isolated until 1895.
 22. Pp. 44-45. This information is from studies conducted by J. C. Geiger, E. C. Dickson, and K. F. Meyer.
 23. *Ibid.*, p. 45. On pages 62 and 63, Dack summarizes the studies made of the various soils and comes to these conclusions: *Cl. botulinus* may be discovered in soil almost anywhere, but it is more prevalent in the western states, rather rare in the middle western states, the Great Plains, and the Mississippi Valley, and found less frequently in the Atlantic coast states than in the West.
 24. *Journal of the American Medical Association*, Vol. 65, pp. 492-496.
 25. *Dack, op. cit.*, pp. 42-43.
 26. Diarrhea may be a symptom in the early stages of botulism, but constipation is more usual in the later stages. *Dack, op. cit.*, p. 51.
 27. The dairy was sold in 1912 to a Los Angeles man named Hall. At that time, Andrew Rocca was nearly seventy-seven years of age and had more than he could comfortably manage at the Helen Mine. The dairy property has, I believe, had several other owners since 1912, but according to my brother Andrew, it is still being operated as a dairy with "a fine herd of Herefords."
 28. *Dack, op. cit.*, p. 54.
 29. *Ibid.*, p. 57.
 30. *Ibid.*, p. 54. For an interesting and readable account of the successful use of the antitoxin serum in a botulism outbreak, see Berton Roueché, "Annals of Medicine, Family Reunion," *The New Yorker*, Jan. 3, 1953.

Book Reviews

SHORT LINE JUNCTION, *by Jack R. Wagner*. Academy Library Guild, Fresno, California, 1956. Pp. 266, photos, index. \$8.00.

Here is a beautifully bound book with copious illustrations containing the story of seven western railroads in California and Nevada. They are typical of the American junction line anywhere in the United States and are presented with enjoyment by the author who imbues his reader with the same enthusiasm for his tale. — A.L.C.F.

DAVID S. TERRY OF CALIFORNIA, *by A. Russell Buchanan*. The Huntington Library, San Marino, California, 1956. Pp. 238. Index. \$5.00.

Dr. A. Russell Buchanan, professor of history at the University of California at Santa Barbara, presents the biography of the dueling judge, David S. Terry. Terry was at one time a prisoner of the Vigilance Committee and was in active opposition to the Vigilantes. On September 12, 1859, at 5:30 a.m., Terry met with Senator David C. Broderick in a duel which was fairly conducted and fairly won by Terry. However, Broderick lay dead and Terry stood condemned as a murderer. This is a story of an exciting time in our State's history. — A.L.C.F.

Activities of the Society

MEETING

Tuesday, April 24, 1956

President John E. Fishburn presided. After welcoming members and guests, he called upon Honorable Oscar Lawler, dean of the legal profession, to present his story.

Mr. Lawler drew from his store of knowledge of an earlier day in Los Angeles. He told of the beginnings of financing in Southern California when we were on the gold standard; when pieces of gold passed from hand-to-hand. He told about the first bank, the Farmers and Merchants, with Isaias Hellman at the helm. He told about The Commercial Bank along with other pioneer banking institutions.

There was an extensive exhibit of photographs of pioneer bankers and banks of early Los Angeles.

Mesdames J. L. Plummer and W. E. Zimmerman poured at the refreshment table where members and friends gathered following the speaking to talk of by-gone days.

MEETING

Tuesday, May 29, 1956

President Gustave O. Arlt presided over the meeting, welcoming members and their friends. The speaker of the evening was one of our own members, Mr. W. W. Robinson. He took as his subject "Ten Events That Made Los Angeles." He had much to tell since he is an accredited author of California history and

Activities of the Society

land titles, and is a retired vice-president of the Title Insurance and Trust Company.

The exhibit consisted of seven large panels of photographs and documents pertaining to the subject.

At the coffee urns sat Mesdames W. W. Robinson and Alonso Bell. All present enjoyed the refreshments along with a pleasant evening.

Gifts to the Society

In each issue of THE QUARTERLY there appears a list of the donors and gifts made currently to the Society.

The Society is making an especial effort to build up its collection of historic materials, such as diaries, letters, account books, early newspapers, theatre and other programs, pictures of early-day life in California and costumes. We need your help.

Many members having treasured ancestral keepsakes were impelled to give them to the Society because of the realization that in private possession they would, sooner or later, disappear or deteriorate, whereas, in the custody of the Historical Society of Southern California they will be preserved indefinitely.

MARCO R. NEWMARK,
Chairman, Committee on Gifts and Bequests

HERBERT E. BROWN: A collection of photographs showing the El Dorado Vineyard which dates back to 1861. The photographs were taken during the 1890's and show the entire area at its best. Folsom Dam now stands in this area, where at one time the ranch house was destroyed by fire. Mr. Brown also presented a newspaper account of the building of Folsom Dam on the El Dorado Vineyard property where the donor was born.

Publications
of the
Historical Society of
Southern California

2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California

DUnkirk 2-5582



1892 — Annual Containing the Sutro
 Documents with translations . . . each \$3.00

1931 — One Hundred Fiftieth Anni-
 versary Special Publication
 (Annual for 1931) each \$5.00

All other numbers of Annual
 Publications each \$2.50

A limited number of sets of Annuals
 (1892 - 1934, inclusive) are
 available per set \$75.00

These sets do not include An-
 nuals for 1895, 1924 or 1933,
 which are out of print.

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to
 members per run \$8.00

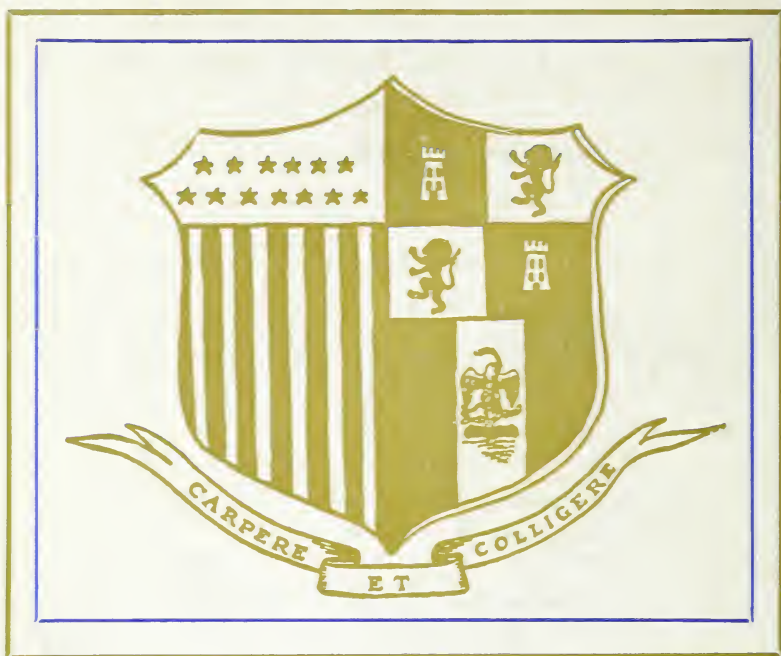
Individual single numbers to
 members each \$2.00

Individual double numbers to
 members each \$3.00

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to
 non-members per run \$10.00

Individual single numbers to
 non-members each \$3.00

Individual double numbers to
 non-members each \$4.00



September, 1956

Vol. XXXVIII — No. 3

The

Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY

LOS ANGELES COUNTY SUBSIDY.

WHICH SUBSIDY SHALL I VOTE FOR.

—OR—

SHALL I VOTE AGAINST BOTH?

DISCUSSED FROM A BUSINESS STANDPOINT

—FOR THE—

BUSINESS COMMUNITY.


—BY—

R. M. WIDNEY.

LOS ANGELES STAR PRINT, 15 SPRING STREET.

ELECTION PAMPHLET ISSUED IN 1876

See "Serape to Levi . . . Southern Pacific" on page 211

 THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA was organized in 1883, and has enjoyed a record of continuous activity for over half a century. Commencing in 1886, and each year until 1935, the Society issued an Annual Publication. In 1935 this *Quarterly* was initiated. It is published at Los Angeles, California, each March, June, September and December.

The purposes of this Society are to preserve and protect the archives and historic sites of the Southwest, with particular stress on Southern California; to publish material of permanent historic interest and significance; to assist and encourage all persons and organizations engaged in similar activities; to hold regular monthly meetings in Los Angeles, except during the summer months, and at least once a year to gather in a pilgrimage to some spot of historic significance.

The Society welcomes to its membership all persons who are in sympathy with its aims. It derives its entire income from the dues and gifts of members, and all regular publications are offered to members without further charge.

It is the aim of the Editorial Board to render this *Quarterly* a publication of general historical interest. Suggestions and criticisms will be welcomed, and all persons, whether members of the Society or not, are invited to submit for the consideration of the editors original articles, old letters, documents, maps and other material bearing upon the history and development of this region.

* * * * *

Address articles, stories, books for review, and all material to appear in the QUARTERLY, and general Society correspondence to:

THE SECRETARY,
THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA
2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California

The
Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY



HOME OF THE
HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

The
Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY

VOLUME XXXVIII

September, 1956

NUMBER 3

CONTENTS:

SERAPE TO LEVI . . . SOUTHERN PACIFIC	
<i>By Frank B. Putnam</i> - - - - -	211
THE RANCHO STORY OF SAN FERNANDO VALLEY	
<i>By W. W. Robinson</i> - - - - -	225
MY MEMORIES OF SAN FERNANDO VALLEY	
<i>By J. Benton Van Nuys</i> - - - - -	235
WHY JOSEPH CHAPMAN ADOPTED CALIFORNIA AND	
WHY CALIFORNIA ADOPTED HIM	
<i>By Paul T. Scott</i> - - - - -	239
ROUND HOUSE GEORGE AND HIS GARDEN OF PARADISE	
<i>By Maymie R. Krythe</i> - - - - -	247
GRACE FREEMAN HOWLAND	
<i>By Jo Hindman</i> - - - - -	255
A HISTORY OF THE SAN GABRIEL MOUNTAINS (Part III)	
<i>By Charles Clark Vernon</i> - - - - -	263
HISTORICAL PROFILES	
<i>By Marco R. Newmark</i> - - - - -	289
XXXV—HENRY M. ROBINSON	XXXVII—DR. WALTER LINDLEY
XXXVI—MAX MEYBERG	XXXVIII—MADAME CAROLINE SEVERANCE
BOOK REVIEWS - - - - -	297
ACTIVITIES OF THE SOCIETY - - - - -	300
GIFTS TO THE SOCIETY - - - - -	301
NEW MEMBERS - - - - -	302

The HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA QUARTERLY, official publication of the *Historical Society of Southern California*, 2423 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California, is issued four times each year during the months of March, June, September and December. Annual membership \$10.00. Entered as Second Class Matter at the Post Office at Los Angeles, California.

The Historical Society of Southern California

FOUNDED NOVEMBER 1, 1883

1956

OFFICERS:

GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *President*
EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Vice-President*
FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Treasurer*
MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Curator*
ANA BEGUE DE PACKMAN, *Secretary Emeritus*

DIRECTORS:

KENNETH L. CARVER	MRS. FREDERIC C. RIPLEY
MRS. EDWARD A. DICKSON	W. W. ROBINSON
FREDERICK F. HOUSER	MRS. MARSHALL STIMSON
OSCAR LAWLER	MISS GRACE S. STOERMER

STANDING COMMITTEES:

Executive Committee: GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; Edmond F. Ducommun, Oscar Lawler, Frank B. Putnam, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, W. W. Robinson.

Program Committee: FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Chairman*; Rev. Msgr. James E. Dolan, Colin M. Gair, John Plummer.

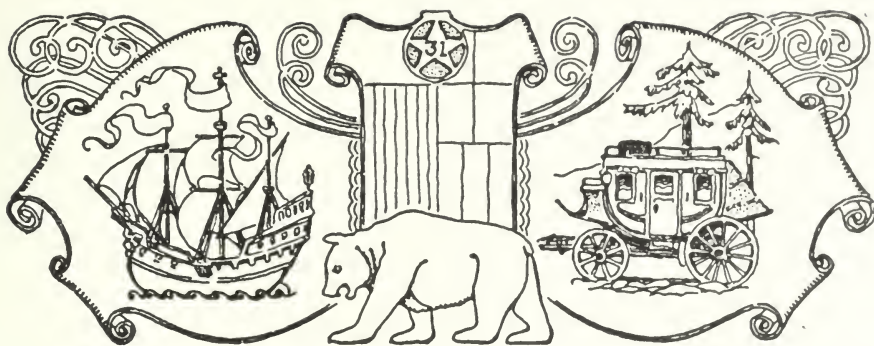
Publication Committee: Dr. Robert G. Cleland, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, W. W. Robinson, Dr. Henry Wagner.

Membership Committee: KENNETH L. CARVER, *Chairman*.

Gifts Committee: MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Chairman*; Richard O'Neill, Jr., Mrs. Lucy Gage Rand, Mrs. Marshall Stimson, Mrs. Robert Tipton, Miss Marguerite Winston, Mr. H. H. West, Mrs. John J. Wolfskill.

Landmarks Committee: EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun, Clement J. Gagliano, Marco R. Newmark, Frank B. Putnam, Edward P. Ripley, Robert Raphael, Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman, David I. Worsfold, Ernest Yorba.

Hostesses of Social Hour: MRS. EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, Mrs. B. Sabichi Mitchell, Mrs. Ernest Yorba.



GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Editor*

The Historical Society of Southern California QUARTERLY for September, 1956

Serape to Levi . . . *Southern Pacific*

By Frank B. Putnam

WHEN EL PUEBLO NUESTRA SENORA la Reina de Los Angeles celebrated its 95th birthday on September 4th, 1876, it was still largely a Mexican aldea or village although it had been under the Stars and Stripes for a quarter of a century. True, in the late Sixties it had begun to evolve from the land of the fiesta and siesta with increasing transfusions of Yankee blood, building of the Los Angeles and San Pedro Railroad, the break-up of the huge ranchos into smaller farms and concomitantly the rapid change from cattle raising to agriculture, the advent of banking by Isaias W. Hellman and Remi Nadeau's extensive freighting operations between el Pueblo and the Cerro Gordo mines in Inyo County.

El Pueblo was something of a rail center, in a very small way with lines to Wilmington, Anaheim, Santa Monica, San Gorgonio Pass and San Fernando. Still, el Pueblo was isolated—on neither

a navigable river nor a harbor, but it had mounting prospects—or hopes—that it might someday be at the tag-end of a branch of the Texas and Pacific from San Diego or a branch of the Southern Pacific from San Bernardino. After all, there was no good reason why either road should go to the unnecessary expense of routing its main line to Los Angeles.

Contact with the outside world was by means of stage coaches or by water. Ships of the Pacific Mail Steamship Company could be boarded at San Diego although some of the lesser lines did stop at Wilmington or San Pedro; the harbor at low tide was eighteen inches deep at the bar.

One fifty-eight p.m. on the day after el Pueblo's 95th birthday, six blows of a silver hammer on a gold spike fired a cannon in front of Woods' Opera House on Main Street; the reverberations have never stopped. At that moment 95 years' isolation ended at the celebration at Lang's Station. Los Angeles had rail connections with San Francisco and all the rail centers of the United States; a dynamic American city was born. The serape was outmoded; the Levi was the new look.

As mentioned, there was no good reason for Los Angeles to be a mainline town except that men of vision wanted it. But not all in el Pueblo had the vision. An election was held March 24th, 1868, to determine if the community should bond itself \$225,000 to build the Los Angeles and San Pedro Railroad. There was violent opposition and the bonds carried by only 39 votes. There were some Angelenos like a dear personal friend of Ex-Governor John Gately Downey, who, when the latter was attempting to raise enough money to start a bank, said: "I hope Downey, that you and I will never see a bank established in Los Angeles, we have gotten along so well without one."¹ Without railroads, too.

The first transcontinental railroad had been completed when the Central Pacific and the Union Pacific met at Promontory, Utah, on May 10th, 1869. Crocker, Huntington, Stanford and Hopkins, the "Big Four" of the Central Pacific wanted a transcontinental railroad of their own. The Southern Pacific was incorporated on December 2nd, 1865, to build from San Francisco to San Diego

Serape to Levi — Southern Pacific

and eastward to the state line, but on July 27th, 1886, Congress authorized it to build to Needles and the San Diego plan was abandoned. In 1871 Congress passed an act authorizing the Southern Pacific to build south from Tehachapi via Los Angeles and eastward to Yuma and there connect with the Texas and Pacific; thus they had authority to build to both Needles and Yuma.

Benjamin Davis Wilson had gone to Washington and successfully pressed the fight for the inclusion of “. . . by way of Los Angeles” in the bill. But still the battle was not won; dissension and opposition were growing. Visalia had refused to give the Southern Pacific a subsidy and found itself seven miles off the railroad; there were rumors that Los Angeles would suffer the same fate unless it subsidized the road.

The Los Angeles Star editorialized on April 18th, 1871, about being on a branch of the Texas and Pacific from San Diego to San Francisco via Tehachapi (sic); “. . . at the southern end of Tulare Valley.” Then considering a line directly to Fort Yuma from Los Angeles, it concluded:

The route is quite as good as that from Fort Yuma to San Diego and if a breakwater was built so as to furnish secure anchorage at San Pedro, that place might aspire to become the main terminus of the Texas Pacific.

As of 1956 the Texas and Pacific is no nearer the Pacific than Texas' western tip; its terminus is El Paso although its rails end at Sierra Blanca and it uses the Southern Pacific's tracks for the last 93 miles into El Paso.

Ex-Governor Downey, Don Benito Wilson, Harris Newmark and others negotiated with the Southern Pacific and reached an agreement that provided a subsidy that would include the interests of the city and the county in the Los Angeles and San Pedro Railroad. However, when Col. William B. Hyde, representing the railroad came south to have the agreement ratified at a meeting on July 24th, 1872, the anti-railroaders and the anti-Southern Pacific factions were out in full force.

Col. Benjamin L. Peel shouted that the Southern Pacific want-

ed the L. A. & S. P. R. R. in order to eliminate competition by the sea route. "Were the matter put to the people today, I can safely say that not one in ten would vote for it."² Nevertheless, the local committee ratified the agreement.

Threats and rumors circulated, dissension increased and even Downey deserted the pro-subsidy faction and said he would rather die than vote a dollar under threat.

H. K. S. O'Melveny continued the fight for the subsidy being fearful that it might be el Pueblo's last main-line opportunity. The *Star* and the *Express* were pro-subsidy but Col. Peel and the *News*, joined Downey, led the fight for the San Diego-Los Angeles branch line.

O'Melveny presented a petition to the supervisors on August 5th and urged an election to vote on the Southern Pacific subsidy; it had 270 signatures including those of Phineas Banning, Benito Wilson and Francis P. F. Temple. The opposition presented a petition with more than 500 signatures!

The supervisors, caught between two angry factions, agreed to put it on the ballot at the presidential election on November 5th, 1872.

Col. Hyde had influenced people but had not made friends; Downey was bitter, perhaps because Stanford had succeeded him as governor.³ The San Diego faction demanded a place on the ballot and with everybody threatening to take everybody else to court, the poor battered supervisors agreed to include the San Diego proposition on the ballot.

Judge Robert Maclay Widney was one of the leaders of the pro-Southern Pacific group. In reviewing the battle 50 years later, he wrote:

In 1872 the Southern Pacific offered to run its main trunk line through Los Angeles if a subsidy of \$250,000 in bonds were given and the Los Angeles and San Pedro Railway was turned over to the Company. This was favorably received and preparations for a vote on the bond issue were made.

San Diego countered with a proposition that the subsidy be given

Serape to Levi — Southern Pacific

for the construction of a railroad to San Diego in place of the Southern Pacific Railway offer.

San Diego shrewdly employed at good fees all of the prominent lawyers of Los Angeles to stump the county in favor of a vote for the San Diego proposition.

The Southern Pacific Railway sent as its agent, Col. Hyde, to manage its campaign. So effective were the eloquence and argument of the lawyers that it was a one-sided affair. One day Col. Hyde called on me at my Chambers in the old Temple Court House, (I was then Judge of the District Court of the 17th Judicial District of Los Angeles County) and said to me that he had abandoned the fight, that the Southern Pacific Railway had no show and would not get a Corporal's Guard vote, that he intended to return the next day to San Francisco, that the case was lost.

I replied, "The case is not lost. It is to the interest of Los Angeles to be on the main transcontinental line, instead of being located 120 miles inland by a railroad to San Diego. That if the voters once understood the real facts they would vote the subsidy to the Southern Pacific."

I further told him that I would at once prepare and print a pamphlet argument on the subject and mail a copy to each voter in the county.

Col. Hyde at once became very interested and said if I would do so the Southern Pacific Company would pay me liberally for it.

I replied that what I did was not for the railroad company, but for Los Angeles and that the company could not pay me one cent for my work.

He then offered to pay for the printing and mailing. I told him "No," that I would pay all the expenses myself and would not accept a postage stamp from either the railroad or the people of Los Angeles.

At once I put the matter in a pamphlet entitled: "Which Subsidy Shall I Vote For or Shall I Vote Against Both."

I had this printed at the Daily Star Office, obtained a copy of the Great Register and mailed a copy to each voter.

The San Diego committee soon had a copy and hurried to Los Angeles and told their Attorneys to answer my argument. The Attorneys informed them that it could not be answered—that the facts were irrefutable.⁴

Saturday night before the election the Southern Pacific crowd held a final torchlight parade and rally at the court house, the plat-

form illuminated with lights from 40 gas jets, rockets, a brass band; H. K. S. O'Melveny led the oratory.

On election eve the San Diego partisans held a last ditch rally with torrents of oratory; Widney had squelched their brass band.

"Next day, November 5th, the people gathered at the polls in what was conceded the cleanest election yet held in Los Angeles."⁵

Perhaps. But it led to blood-shed!

Henry W. O'Melveny, son of H. K. S. O'Melveny, wrote the following account:

You will realize that the population was over 80% Mexican. You know they not only did not understand the questions submitted at the election, but they did not care. It was just the common ordinary practice to buy their votes. They would have a leader, or captain, who would meet the politicians and offer, say two or three hundred votes for two or three dollars apiece, and when the price was agreed upon the money was paid over and the captain was expected to deliver the votes. On the night before the election on the railroad question, in the First Ward up by the Plaza, the anti-railroad people had impounded in a corral two or three hundred whose votes they had purchased. The pro-railroad people, during the night, went to the captain and offered a larger price, and bought the votes for the pro-railroad proposition. This was not known to the anti-railroad people until next morning. By that time the votes had been delivered pro-railroad.

Of course this created consternation in the anti-railroad ranks and they were loud in their denunciations. Mr. I. W. Hellman was a strong pro-railroad man, because he was a sensible businessman and knew what the railroad would do for Los Angeles. But it was strange that Dr. Griffin, a reputable physician here was strongly anti-railroad. Each of these men surrounded by his friends, met at the polls about ten o'clock in the forenoon. Dr. Griffin berated Mr. Hellman and his friends for having bought the votes (which had already been bought by Dr. Griffin's company).

There was a hot exchange of words, and finally Dr. Griffin, in a fit of anger, struck Mr. Hellman a blow on his head with his cane. It made a long scalp wound. Mr. Hellman was taken home by his friends. His wife was greatly perturbed and insisted that he must have a doctor to treat the wound. She asked Mr. Hellman whom he preferred, and he answered, "Oh, send for old Doc Griffin."⁶

Hellman and Dr. John Strother Griffin were among the found-

ers of the Farmers & Merchants Bank and both were directors from its inception in 1871; Hellman was Cashier until 1876 when he was elected President. All wounds must have healed as Griffin remained a director of the bank until 1889.

The Southern Pacific subsidy won, 1896 to 650; the cane-wielding was in vain and the vote-buying unnecessary. Judge Widney's pamphlet had turned the tide. The pamphlet's title page is the cover illustration for this issue of the *QUARTERLY*.

Horace Greeley, defeated by President U. S. Grant, died before the end of November. Within a month the opposition *Los Angeles News*, too, was dead.

At about the same time, Judge Widney and his brother, Dr. Joseph Pomeroy Widney were largely instrumental in obtaining the first Federal appropriation, \$900,000, for the improvement of the harbor. In 1879 the Judge founded the University of Southern California following a gift of 308 lots from Hellman, Downey and Ozro W. Childs. This was less than three months after the conclusion of serious litigation in which Hellman had defeated Downey whom he had ousted from the presidency of the Farmers & Merchants Bank in 1876.

Still, the Southern Pacific was not eager to build its main line through a county, which included what is now Orange County, that could muster a vote of only 2,546, (including some two or three hundred for revenue only) in the county's hottest election. The population of the county in the census of 1870 was only 15,309, but it more than doubled by 1880. A line from Mojave over the Cajon to San Bernardino would have been some fifty miles shorter and would have avoided the almost impossible task of boring the 6,975 foot San Fernando tunnel, second longest railroad tunnel in the world when completed.⁷ So it was that in 1873 the Southern Pacific had a bill introduced in Congress granting the right of way to build a cut-off through Cajon Pass to San Bernardino.

Again, Widney to the rescue.irate citizens planned a mass meeting and resolutions of protest to Congress, but Widney urged the formation of a Chamber of Commerce, feeling that an organized

body of leading citizens would carry more weight than a mass meeting.

They met in Judge Widney's courtroom on July 31, 1873, and steps were taken to form the Chamber of Commerce; on August 9th, they adopted a constitution, elected officers and had 86 members. Downey was back on the track and presided at the July 31st meeting. According to Widney, Downey was elected president, although Workman and Newmark⁸ state that Solomon Lazard was president. Old Doc Griffin apparently wanted to go along for the ride and was one of the 11 directors.

Downey and Widney were appointed a committee to prepare a protest. Widney wrote another pamphlet, both signed it as the "Chamber of Commerce Committee" and sent a copy to each member of Congress; the bill died in committee. The cost was less than \$100.00.

As early as September, 1875, trains were running to the summit of San Geronio Pass and pushed on until at the Pecos River they joined the line from the east; by 1886 they had connected at El Paso with the Santa Fe, the Texas & Pacific and later with the Mexican Central, the Mexico Northwestern and the El Paso and Southwestern which met the Rock Island.

In the meantime, rails crawled down the San Joaquin Valley, over the spectacular Tehachapi loop (where in January 1883 Mrs. John G. Downey and about 20 others were killed in a tragic wreck), through 17 tunnels and across Antelope Valley.

From the south, rails pushed through San Fernando Valley until confronted by the San Fernando Mountains. The tunnel was commenced on March 22, 1875. It was bored from each end and from several intermediate shafts. It was an almost impossible task thru crumbling granite, sand, water and oil; on July 14, 1876, the last thin partition was pierced; the first train went thru August 12th. The tunnel had cost more than three times the subsidy!

Crocker announced on September 4th that the completion celebration would take place on the 5th. Los Angeles went wild; the isolated Pueblo was a main-line City!

Serape to Levi — Southern Pacific

At 9:30 A.M. No. 25 with more decorations than a Christmas tree steamed happily out of the old Los Angeles and San Pedro Railroad station with nearly 400 Who's Whos in five cars and carrying the silver hammer and gold spikes. Excited crowds cheered the train as it headed for the first round-up thru the gaily decorated streets.

It is doubtful if the floods of oratory at the celebration and at the banquet exceeded or equaled the eloquence of the *Los Angeles Evening Express*.⁹

This (tunnel) was one of the pieces de resistance in the good things of the day. On entering the dark abyss a feeling of complete separation from sublunary places seizes one, and time drags very heavily during the cimmerian passage. One can hear the water dripping from the roof and trickling down the sides; every now and then a glimpse of pale and unearthly light is caught from the flickering candle of a tunnel fiend, crawling up to a niche formed by the timbers. It took the train just 10½ minutes to go through.

On emerging from the cars we were met with one of the most picturesque sights imaginable. Before us, formed in line, on either side, was an army of about 3,000 Chinese, at rest parade with their long handled shovels. Every one was covered by a big basket hat, and the long line of head-roofs presented a curious and not unattractive picture.

There were just 1,050 feet of track to be laid . . . In just 8½ minutes from the time the signal was given the iron was laid, the Los Angeles track layers beating those from the north by the length of a rail and reached the tie into which the last spike—the golden one presented to the Company by Mr. L. W. Thatcher, our popular jeweler—was to be driven by Col. Crocker, with the handsome silver hammer presented by the same gentleman.

Col. Crocker made a short Speech:

Gentlemen of Los Angeles and San Francisco:—It has been deemed best on this occasion that the last spike to be driven should be of gold, that most precious of metals, as indicative of the great wealth that should flow into the coffers of San Francisco and Los Angeles, when this connection is made, and it is no mean token of the importance of this grand artery of commerce which we are about to unite with this last spike. This wedding of Los Angeles and San Francisco is not a ceremony consecrated

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

by the bands of wedlock, but by bands of steel. The speaker hopes to live to see the time when these beautiful valleys through which we pass today will be filled with a happy and prosperous people, enjoying every facility for comfort, happiness and education. Gentlemen, I am no speaker, but I can drive a spike.

The Express continued:

At 1:58 p.m., Suiting the action to the word, Mr. Crocker inserted the golden spike in the hole prepared for it and with six blows of the silver hammer our railroad connection with San Francisco was an accomplished fact.

The band played an air, and Col. Crocker then announced a prayer by Rev. Dr. William H. Platt of San Francisco. This famous divine stepped forward and delivered a most eloquent and appropriate prayer in a voice of great strength and melody.

General D. D. Colton, sometimes referred to as the Half of the "Big Four and a Half":

Few people on this continent realize the fact that before the going down of the sun on this 5th of September, 1876, there will be completed and in operation, over the length and through the heart of the State of California, nearly 800 miles of railroad extending from Redding on the north, to well nigh across the great Colorado Desert on the south and almost within 100 miles of Fort Yuma on the Colorado River.

Eight hundred miles would not stretch from San Diego to Eureka.

After speeches by Downey, Mayor Beaudry, Mayor Bryant, General Banning and Stanford, they boarded the trains which left for Los Angeles at 2:20 and 2:35 p.m.; from the Los Angeles River to the depot was one triumphal return, whistles tooting, bells ringing, bands playing, dogs barking and everybody yelling.

Upon arrival, carriages were waiting to take the guests to the hotels, awaiting the banquet and ball.

The *Express* devoted 42 inches describing the decorations in Union Hall, displaying the flowers, fruits, grapes, wines and other products of the county. On the following day it reviewed the banquet:

Serape to Levi — Southern Pacific

The handsome hall was brilliant with gas jets, it presented a most magnificent appearance, and the strangers as they arrived were charmed and delighted with the splendid coup-d'oeil which greeted them as they entered. Four large and several small tables were set, and a collation was served up under the direction of Mr. Cuyas of the Pico House, which did ample credit to the culinary and catering skill of that gentleman, and to the capacity of his cuisine to supply such a banquet, as well as serve his hundred regular guests at the hotel. To show that we mean what we say, we here present the bill of fare:

BILL OF FARE

SOUP

Consomme Royale

FISH

Filet de Sa'mon au Beurre de Montpellier

HORS D'OEUVRES D'OFFICE

Olives

Shrimps

Anchovies

Radishes

Butter

Apple Sauce

Pickles

Cranberry Sauce

SALADS

Mayonnaise de Homards Monteis

Mayonnaise de Chicken *a l'Italienne*

German Salad

Russian Salad

ORNAMENTAL DISHES

Noix de Veal *a la Montmorency a la Jelly*

Turkey Gallantine *en Belle-Vue*

Pates de Foies au Attele Belle-Vue

Pates de Quails a la Jelly

ROASTS

Ham *de Mayence* roast *a la Jelly*

Smoked Tongue *en Arcade au Attele*

Turkey *Truffee aux Papillottes*

Chicken *Barde a la Galee*

Quails *Piques de'cores*

Filet de Beef *a la Regence*

Chaux Froids de Chicken Decorated

Quartier de Venaison Marinee

Quartier de Veal a la Creme

Aspic *Financiere Belle-Vue*

Pieces de Flau

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

PASTRY

English Plum Pudding, Maraskino Sauce
Fruit Cake, Glace Blanc
Mushroom Meringues
Almond Dessert *de Sauce a la Plume*
Cakes *a la Genoise, Glace Diverses*
Vanille Soufflee
Macaroons
Ladies' Kisses
Lemon Cream Pie
Apple Pie
Peach Pie

PIECES MONTEES

Nougat Baker garnie with Fruit Caramel
Croquant de Macaroons, *a la Royale*

DESSERT

Champagne Jelly, *a la Rose* *Blanc Manger Punache*
Vanilla Ice Cream
Coffee — (Cold and Warm) — Tea
All kinds of Fruits

The *Express* continued:

It is needless to say that the inviting viands were relishingly discussed by the 250 people seated at the tables; that Veuve Cliquot, Dry Monopole, Roederer, etc., flowed freely and soon gave impetus to a flow of pleasant speech; that everybody seemed happy, and that the railroad magnates glowed with an outward sign of inward content and satisfaction at the efforts of our people to make them feel that their great work was appreciated. When the courses had been served and the bill of fare disposed of, Mayor Beaudry arose and announced the reading of the toasts.

After ten toasts and ten responses there were speeches by General McDowell, General Banning and Governor Downey and others:

. . . after which floor was cleared for the ball, the ladies having¹¹ the meantime arrived. A number of our most charming ladies participated in the hop, which lasted till near one o'clock, when the guests retired and rode to their train, which started north as soon as they were all on board.

The *Express* sighed happily: "The Affair was recherche in the extreme."

Serape to Levi — Southern Pacific

As the guests assembled for the banquet there was an unheralded and unsung event vastly more important than the tumult and the shouting, silver hammers and gold spikes: the Southern express train, which left Lang's station at 2:50 p.m. carrying passengers, express and U. S. mails, arrived at 8:00 p.m.

The gold spike ceremony at Promontory was photographed but not the Lang's Station event although during the same month a train coming out of the tunnel under the Tehachapi loop and another train running over it were photographed. The Promontory gold spike belongs to Stanford University and is in the custody of the Wells Fargo Bank of San Francisco. The Lang's Station hammer and spike have disappeared, and all efforts to find them have failed. It has been said that when the spike was removed, Stanford put it in a side pocket from where it was surreptitiously removed by a man who presented it to the Chamber of Commerce, an organization which apparently did not long survive the completion of the railroad.

The assessed valuation of property in Los Angeles in 1869 was \$1,573,000; in 1876 it had reached \$6,000,000. During 1875 buildings erected in and around Los Angeles cost \$950,000. Mayor Beaudry was optimistic when he estimated the city's 1876 population "at least 16,000." It was 11,183 at the time of the census, four years later. Perhaps the Mayor included today's city limits!

The southern transcontinental route was completed at the Pecos River January 12th, 1883. The first Santa Fe train in Los Angeles arrived November 29th, 1885. The San Pedro, Los Angeles and Salt Lake Railroad, now the Union Pacific, celebrated its completion February 21st, 1905. The San Pedro Breakwater and the Panama Canal put Los Angeles on the sea lanes of the world. None of these had the explosive force of those six hammer blows 80 years ago.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

NOTES

1. Thompson and West, *History of Los Angeles County*, 1880, p. 128.
2. Remi Nadeau, *City Makers*, p. 75.
3. Downey had been elected lieutenant governor in 1859 but advanced when Gov. Latham went to the U.S. Senate. Downey did not run in 1861; Stanford was elected. In 1863 Downey was a candidate but lost to Frederick F. Low to whom Stanford had lost the nomination at the Union Convention.
4. Letter of Judge Robert M. Widney to the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce, August 19, 1926 in the possession of Widney's daughter, Mrs. Boyle Workman.
5. Remi Nadeau, *City Makers*, p. 86.
6. H. W. O'Melveny, Early Banking, in *The Pioneer*, Publication of the Employees of The Farmers and Merchants National Bank of Los Angeles, April 1940, p. 5.
7. *From Trail to Rail*. The Story of the Beginning of the Southern Pacific, July, 1928, p. 10. However, Remi Nadeau, *City Makers*, page 223, said it was exceeded in length by the Mount Ceniz Tunnel of Switzerland, the Hoosac Tunnel of Massachusetts and the Blue Ridge Tunnel of Virginia.
8. Harris Newmark, *Sixty Years in Southern California*, p. 449; Boyle Workman, *City that Grew*, p. 160.
9. The late Edward A. Dickson, member, director, president and treasurer of the *Historical Society of Southern California* was long associated with the *Express* as a partner and finally as sole owner.

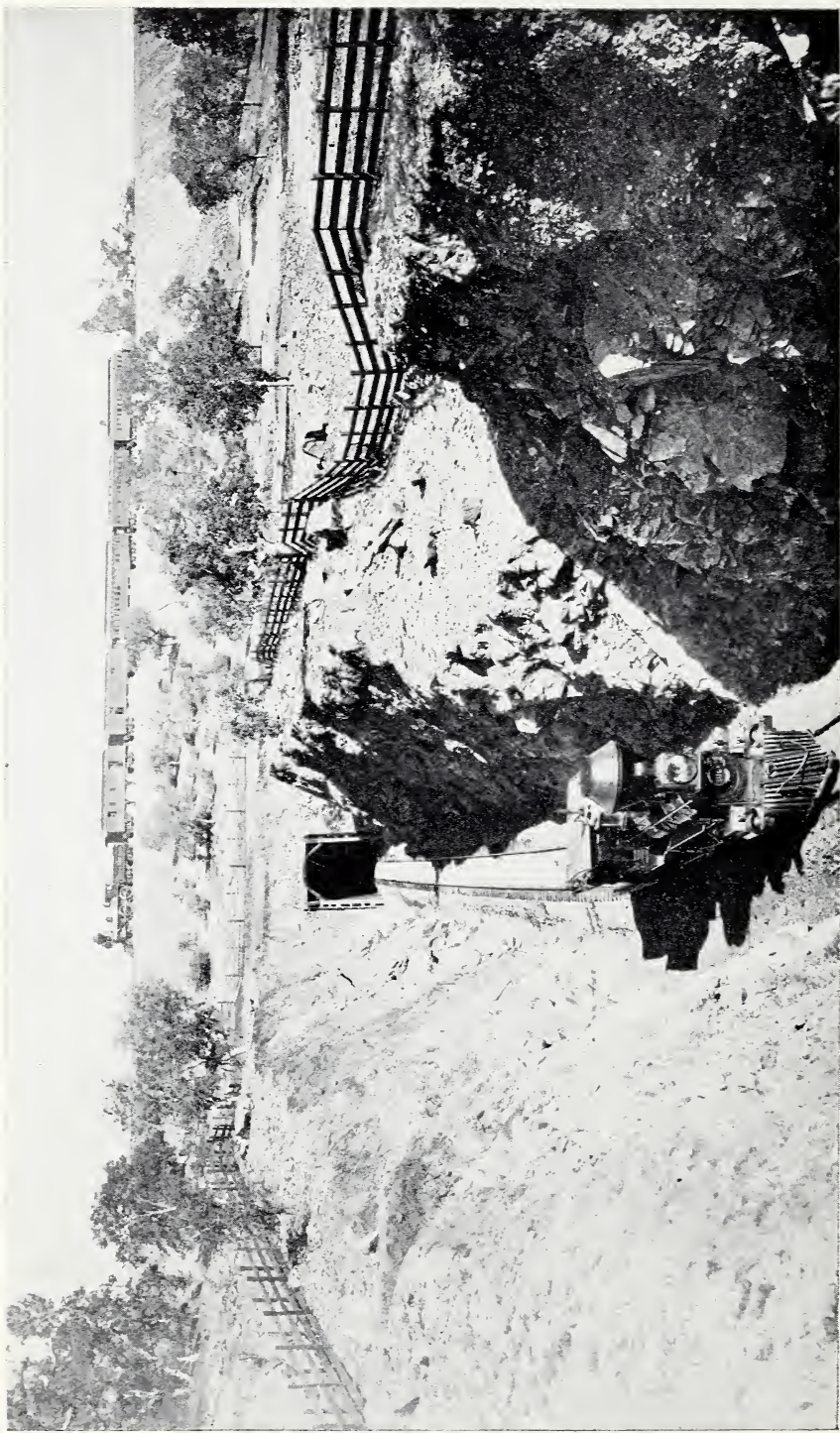




—Photo courtesy Farmers and Merchants National Bank

ROBERT MACLAY WIDNEY

*Worked to put Los Angeles on the "Main
Line" in railroad election fight of 1876*




TWO TRAINS NEGOTIATING THE TEHACHAPI LOOP

One train passes directly over another emerging from tunnel on famous Tehachapi Loop, an engineering accomplishment of pioneer railroad builders. Photo was made in September, 1876.

The Rancho Story of San Fernando Valley

By W. W. Robinson

RANCHO DAYS IN SAN FERNANDO VALLEY began, broadly speaking, when the missionary priests were forced out in 1834. Rancho days lasted there, broadly speaking, until 1910 when the modern subdividers moved in.

In telling the Valley's rancho story, I shall further narrow my talk between these outside dates and shall also deliberately exclude an account of the fringe ranchos of El Encino, El Escorpión, Tujunga, Providencia, and San Rafael. My story concerns Rancho Ex-Mission San Fernando, which, when surveyed for the United States Government, had within its boundaries nearly 117,000 acres—the largest single grant made in California during the Mexican period.

Fortunately we have several first-hand descriptions of life in the San Fernando Valley in the years that followed the Mission's secularization in 1834. One of them is from Catalina Lopez, daughter of Don Pedro Lopez who took charge of the Mission's properties as *majordomo* or superintendent in the year 1837. He succeeded Don Antonio del Valle, the first administrator. Here is Catalina's story, preserved by her grandson, T. R. Wilson, and indicating that secularization was not as harsh at San Fernando as at some of the other missions and that it did not immediately end the ancient glories. Perhaps her story is a mixture of her own memories and of what had been told her as a child for she seems to be describing the life of an earlier period. At any rate:

She (Catalina) first saw the San Fernando Mission in all its glory, with beautiful orchards and gardens surrounding it, and the wide plains in front of it covered with cattle and sheep. San Fernando was far famed

EDITORIAL NOTE: "*The Rancho Story of San Fernando Valley*" was a talk given by Mr. Robinson September 24, 1956, on the occasion of the annual First Century Families' Luncheon held in Hotel Statler, Los Angeles.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

for its immense riches, being accredited the most prosperous of all the missions. At this time there were over a thousand Indians living at the Mission, besides several tribes living in the hills and mountains. San Fernando was widely famous for its fiestas, which were many, but the greatest of the year was on May 30th, San Fernando or Saint Ferdinando Day. People from all Southern California gathered at San Fernando on this day to taste the first fruits of the year. The day was begun by attending mass. All attended, from the *mayordomo* to the lowliest Indian. Following the mass was a great feast or banquet. The table was spread between two long rows of pomegranate trees in the orchard at the rear of the old church. In the afternoon such sports as horse racing were enjoyed, but the main event was a bull fight held in the plaza in front of the old church. In the evening, songs and dancing ended the gay fiesta.¹

Another account, strictly of rancho days, is of a visit by J. E. Pleasants to the Valley in 1856. Young Pleasants was one of a party of boys who attended school in Los Angeles at the home of William Wolfskill and who, with their teachers, were invited to spend a week as the guests of General Andrés Pico on Rancho Ex-Mission San Fernando. Pico at this time was lessee and half owner of the rancho. He used the former Mission buildings as a residence and operated the former Mission-controlled lands as a large stock ranch. Quoting now from Pleasants:

He (Pico) lived in a luxurious style and had a large household of trained servants, chiefly Indians. Like the grandee that he was, he entertained lavishly. His silver and china table-service made a brilliant display. His household furnishings were plain but massive and luxurious. The plain old mission furniture was retained but many an expensive and more ornate piece had been added. His table afforded an ample style of living; the dinners consisted of five to six courses—all of the far-famed California-Spanish cookery, which no nation—not even the French, has ever excelled. Two young Indian boys served as waiters. They were clad in the simple tunic of the day. Before the meal, one of them stood by the host, Don Andres, at the head of the table and said grace, and at the close of the meal, the other took his place and returned thanks. At the mid-day and evening meals, and on the veranda in the evening, we were delightfully entertained by native musicians who played on three stringed instruments then mostly in vogue—the harp, violin and guitar. They played the dreamy old Spanish airs which were, to me, the most enjoyable feature of the day which, with the long rides after stock on a spirited horse, was, in itself, all that the heart of a

The Rancho Story of San Fernando Valley

western boy could desire. After the noon dinner, all work was suspended for the customary two-hour siesta. The cool rooms of the thick-walled adobe afforded a refreshing change from the July sunshine of the open plains, and the siesta was a welcome interval after a strenuous morning's work, for we were all out on the range before the sun was well over the Tujunga peaks . . .

I must say that the General took good care of the building and the orchards during his occupancy, and he surely knew how to entertain his friends and his pupils.²

In the same year of 1856 the artist Henry Miller, traveling muleback through California, stopped at San Fernando during Pico's absence and was entertained at dinner by Pico's gardener. He tasted the wine produced on the rancho and found it excellent. He sampled the fruit and could not resist writing that, if only the proprietor were a man "of the Anglo-Saxon stamp," he could make a fortune out of the abundant grapes, pears, apples, apricots, peaches, figs, pomegranates, oranges, quinces and prickly pears.

The watermelons, it should be added, were the prized fruit. Gathered in the early morning, they were put in a water tank and could be touched only on the invitation of the General.

When a member of Pico's establishment, Cayetano Tapia, returned to San Fernando to resume his job, after an interval in the northern gold mines, he disembarked at San Pedro and took an oxcart the rest of the way. As he approached the General's ranch, so great were the herds of fat cattle that Indians were sent ahead with sticks to drive them off in order that the cart might pass.

Andrés Pico, who first leased the rancho in 1845 from the first grantee, Eulogio de Celis, was a very popular man, not only among Spanish-Californians but among the newly arrived Americans. He had had a long career as a soldier, climaxed by his activities at the battle of San Pasqual in 1846, where, as the successful leader of the lance-bearing *Californios*, he was so courageous and cool as to win the admiration of the Americans whom he defeated. "He never did an act beneath the dignity of an officer," wrote a contemporary, William Heath Davis, "and was humane and generous." He it was who relinquished his sword to John C. Frémont at Cahuenga Pass in January of 1847, the treaty signed there ending

the war so far as California was concerned. During the years when this busy man actually lived in San Fernando Valley, he was host to many distinguished people. He is said to have charmed his guests with his singing of Spanish songs. On Sundays he put on bullfights in the plaza before the Mission Church. "Brave, reckless, coarse-grained, jovial, kindhearted, popular," were the adjectives applied by the historian Bancroft to this man who, unlike the typical patriarchal *ranchero*, remained a bachelor.

Don Andrés liked the company of artists such as Edward Vischer and James Walker, to whom the Mission buildings and valley scene offered romantic subjects. Perhaps the rancho age in California is best presented on canvas by two spectacular paintings done in San Fernando Valley by Walker while a guest of the General. One of them, of a plunging herd of long-horned cattle, is owned by the California Historical Society in San Francisco. The companion painting, of a great herd of galloping horses, is the property of Carl Dentzel of Northridge. Together they sum up the pastoral period in California's history, when *ranchos* were feudal principalities and when *rancheros* devoted themselves to their cattle interests and to horsemanship.

To get back to the ownership story, it was on June 17, 1846, that Governor Pío Pico, on behalf of the Mexican Nation sold the whole rancho—excepting the Church and its appurtenances—to a buyer already mentioned, Eulogio de Celis. Ordinarily the grant of a rancho was the gift of the Government to a man who had the ear of the governor. In this case it was a sale to raise money for the defense of California against the invading Americans who already had raised the American flag at Monterey. The money realized was \$14,000—or about 12 cents an acre. The man who bought the rancho was a native of Spain who had come to California in 1836 and whose home was in Los Angeles across from the Bella Union Hotel on Main Street. Celis was an ex-employee of Henry Virmond, a merchant who owned several vessels in the trade between Acapulco and California. He was a friend of Andrés Pico, recognized the lease of course, later sold him a half interest in the rancho, and went on hunting trips with him in the Elizabeth Lake country where antelope ran in herds of 500 to 1,000. During the

The Rancho Story of San Fernando Valley

Celis ownership, as before, Rancho Ex-Mission San Fernando was a sheep and cattle range. Sheep-shearing and round-ups were exciting times. Vaqueros corraled droves of horses—as in the Walker painting—and either branded them or sold them at auction.

During the late 1860's and the early 1870's a visitor riding horseback through the high wild mustard of the Valley would have seen two landmarks indicating human activity. One was, of course, the Mission occupied by Pico. The other was the adobe home of Geronimo Lopez and his wife, Catalina, whose early day impressions have been quoted. This was near the Mission and had come to be known as Lopez Station, for it was a stage-stop. Here the 20-mule teams of Remi Nadeau rested on their way from Los Angeles to the Cerro Gordo mines in Inyo County. In 1869 it became the Valley's first post office and here the first school was held. Today a city reservoir covers this area.

By 1871 the southerly half of the Valley had a new owner, the San Fernando Farm Homestead Association, back of which were Isaac Lankershim and Isaac Newton Van Nuys. This association, which nine years later would become the Los Angeles Farm and Milling Company, had succeeded to the interests of Andrés Pico, his brother Pío Pico, and the widow and children of Celis. Celis himself had long before gone back to Spain where he died in 1869. Lankershim, a native of Bavaria, had come to California in 1850. Van Nuys, a native of New York State, had come west in 1865, and settled in Napa County. Here it was that he first became acquainted with Lankershim who already owned several large ranches in various parts of the state. Having mutual interests and the help of San Francisco bankers, they bought 60,000 acres in the San Fernando Valley for \$115,000. Lankershim moved to the Valley and the new ranch in 1869, Van Nuys in 1871. For several years their Valley ranch continued to be devoted to cattle and sheep. Drought years put an end to this. The loss of 40,000 sheep caused the owners to experiment with wheat raising. The experiment proved successful and by 1876 the harbor of San Pedro became for the first time a world port with the shipment abroad of wheat—the destination being Liverpool.

Meanwhile, and by 1874, the northerly half of the Valley

also had new owners. Their names were Porter and Maclay. George K. Porter and Charles Maclay were Northern Californian pioneers who had become friends in the California Legislature, for each was a state senator. Maclay wanted a Southern California ranch, but needed financial help. Friend Porter told him to look around for a ranch. Hearing that foreclosure threatened the upper portion of the San Fernando Valley—about 56,000 acres—Maclay went to Los Angeles, hired a team and drove out over the nearly perpendicular Cahuenga Pass road. As he looked out over the Valley for the first time, he exclaimed: "This is the Garden of Eden!" He conveyed his enthusiasm to George K. Porter. Porter also made a trip to the Valley. He, too, was charmed by the beauty of the scene and exclaimed: "It is certainly the Valley of the Cumberland!" The decision to buy was made. A few years later another Porter—Benjamin F. from Santa Cruz County—a cousin of George K., his business partner in the manufacture of boots and shoes, joined the other two in ownership of the north half of the San Fernando Valley. Under the direction of the two Porters and Maclay, this north half, like the south half, became a giant field of waving wheat and barley. In 1881-2 the three partners partitioned their land among themselves, Maclay taking the easterly third, George K. the middle third, and Benjamin F. the westerly third. One story is that they let the toss of a coin decide who was to get what 20,000 acres.

Partition enabled each of the three men to develop his land as he saw fit. George K. Porter, for example, pioneered in the citrus field, setting out in 1887 what became known as the "Long Orchard"—a planting made in a strip half a mile wide and two and a half miles long. Whether in agriculture, in subdivision, in town building, in construction, in community efforts, or in education, each of the three men made distinguished contributions to the Valley's development—as did Lankershim and Van Nuys.

Part of the Valley's story, but not to be elaborated on here, is concerned with the founding of the town of San Fernando in 1874, and also the completion of the San Fernando Tunnel by which Northern California could be linked by rail with Southern.

Before winding up the rancho story with the climactic arrival

The Rancho Story of San Fernando Valley

of modern subdividers, I want to throw the spotlight on the squatters who in the 1890's descended like locusts on Rancho Ex-Mission San Fernando.³ In the north half of the Valley they moved in on George K. Porter's 20,000 acres—claiming, under unscrupulous leadership, that the United States patent to the rancho was void and that therefore the land and its improvements were part of the public domain and open to homesteading. Porter went to his attorney, Jackson A. Graves, and said "What shall I do?" "Grab every man who settles on your lands," Graves advised, "haul him to the nearest county road, and dump him!" George K. Porter was a gentle man of the old school, but, like his attorney, he was also a rugged individualist. So he was delighted with this sage counsel. With his men, he followed it in forthright manner. Soon these get-something-for-nothing people let Porter severely alone. In the south half of the rancho 1,200 misled squatters moved in on the lands of the Los Angeles Farm and Milling Company, of which I. N. Van Nuys was president and manager. To Van Nuys, Jackson Graves gave the same advice, but cautious Isaac Newton Van Nuys said he preferred courts to force. As a result he was in for ten years of litigation that required him to go to the United States Supreme Court for a decision that the patent was absolutely valid. He spent \$50,000 in court costs and attorney fees.

One of Van Nuys lawsuits against squatters turned on the correct location of the southeast corner of the rancho, which had been surveyed many years before by Henry Hancock for the United States. A large wedge of land was involved. While lunching in Jerry Illich's Restaurant one day, Jackson Graves noticed Rómulo Pico at a table near him. Rómulo was an old resident of the Valley and a relative of Andrés Pico. "How's the San Fernando case coming along?" he asked of the attorney. "Very well," answered Graves. Then Rómulo happened to remark that as a boy he had been a chain-bearer for Henry Hancock on the famous rancho survey. "Do you remember the southeast corner?" Graves asked him. "Very well, it's a white-oak tree." The next day he led Jackson Graves' assistant directly to the tree and said: "This is it!" On one side the back was scarred. They chopped away this portion and found the markings of Station 39, just as described by Hancock in his field

notes. The bark was brought into court and held before a mirror, for, of course, the markings were reversed. The lawsuit was won.

The rancho phase ends with the Valley's subdivision. This had been begun, actually, with the laying out of the town of San Fernando in 1874. It continued, in the boom of the 1880's, with several large subdivisions: that of the Porter Land and Water Company near the Mission, and those that resulted in the present North Hollywood (formerly Lankershim), Chatsworth Park and Pacoima. Subdividing was continued in 1904 by Leslie C. Brand, who had organized the San Fernando Mission Land Company, and who bought out George K. Porter's Porter Land and Water Company holdings. Brand, already successful in Glendale real estate promotion, was a man who had to have the fastest horses, the first airplane, and to be pace-setter in everything he undertook. Brand's associates were Henry E. Huntington, W. G. Kerckhoff, J. F. Sartori, E. T. Earl and other influential men. He named as superintendent John T. Wilson, who had married the daughter of Don Geronimo Lopez, and who had been manager of George K. Porter's ranch. An extensive development program was begun, Brand Boulevard laid out, and a selling campaign was launched which, many years later, was successful and remarkably profitable.

The Los Angeles Aqueduct, begun in 1907 and destined to be completed in 1913, was the turning point in the Valley's history. The start of work on this gigantic project caused some far-seeing men to guess that, with water from the High Sierra available, the dry-farming San Fernando Valley, wholly dependent for crops on rain and a few wells, could be made to bloom like the rose. At least a great speculative opportunity was there.

Seizing this opportunity, a syndicate of prominent men in 1909 obtained an option to buy the Los Angeles Farm and Milling Company's vast acreage, really the remainder of old Rancho Ex-Mission San Fernando. The key figure in this group, though not the best known, was Otto F. Brant, then vice-president and general manager of Title Insurance and Trust Company. He had already demonstrated his shrewdness in other spectacular ventures. His close associate was Harry Chandler in whose name the option was

My Memories of San Fernando Valley

obtained. They represented the Los Angeles Suburban Homes Company which, in exercising the option, paid \$2,500,000 to the Los Angeles Farm and Milling Company for the remaining 47,000 acres of the great rancho. J. Benton Van Nuys, son of I. N. Van Nuys, who was then in frail health, represented the sellers in a deal that was to result in Rancho Ex-Mission San Fernando becoming a place of small farms and communities and finally a furiously growing, mass-building, residential, business and industrial area. The purchasing syndicate had a "board of control" made up of General Harrison Gray Otis, president and publisher of the *Los Angeles Times*, General M. H. Sherman, suburban railway builder, Chandler, vice-president of the *Los Angeles Times*, H. J. Whitley, subdivider and builder, sometimes called the father of Hollywood, and O. F. Brant.

In 1910 V. J. Rowan made the subdivision survey and next year the map of the gigantic Tract 1000 was recorded—the greatest venture in subdividing in the Valley's history, and perhaps in the county's history, the climactic end of rancho days.

With H. J. Whitley in charge of sales, the huge subdivision was thrown open to the public—aided by free excursions, barbecues, auto races, a wide, double boulevard (Sherman Way) on which there was no speed limit, and the assurance that ultimately water would be available. Three townsites were laid out, with W. P. Whitsett buying half of the Van Nuys townsite and taking over its sales and promotion. The principal promoters selected portions for themselves: Sherman took 1000 acres (Sherman Oaks) at Ventura and Sepulveda boulevards; Otis took 550 acres at Ventura and Reseda boulevards (later to become known as Tarzana); Chandler and Whitley selected smaller places at Sherman Way and Van Nuys Boulevards; and Brant chose 850 acres at Ventura and Topanga boulevards.

Today, when San Fernando Valley residents think of their expanding population, of building records broken, of planning commission, sewer, highway, tax and smog problems, let us hope that they will find time to recall with pleasure the simplicity of rancho days on Rancho Ex-Mission San Fernando.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

NOTES


1. *The Valley of San Fernando*, published 1924 by the San Fernando Valley Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, page 27.
2. *Touring Topics*, February 1930, page 49.
3. *Los Angeles Times*, July 31, 1915. Part III.



My Memories of San Fernando Valley

FOR THE FIRST CENTURY FAMILY LUNCHEON

By J. Benton Van Nuys

HE SAN FERNANDO VALLEY, from my earliest childhood to the present day, is very dear to me and to our family. This is a statement of my recollection of the San Fernando Valley from when I was a mere child to the sale in 1910, of the major part of the south half of the San Fernando Grant.

My first trip, when I was a small tot, as I was born in 1883, was probably in 1887, which means I was about four years of age. My father's brother, Herber Van Nuys, general superintendent of the south half of San Fernando, the part we were interested in, was in town. I think he stayed at our house at Seventh and Spring. On this, my first trip, I was tied to the seat of the spring wagon with a linen lap-robe, so I would not fall out, and then we drove out West and over Cahuenga Pass and we came to a spot called The Clyman Ranch. This Ranch must have been somewhere near the Casa Cahuenga. It was a small frame house and was the last of the seven ranches to be started to convert the Valley from cattle and sheep into a farming operation. I remember the trees and the house slightly. I remember being tied in the wagon and I think I must have stayed awake most of the trip. Any additional distance that we may have traveled I have no recollection concerning the same; however, we must have gone on to what was known as the "Home Ranch," where my father had started the conversion of a sheep pasture to a farming empire. My father, in 1872, had sent a wagon-load of timber from the Kerchoff Mills in Los Angeles to a certain spot in the Valley, where he had erected a flag showing the spot to place the lumber, he related to me in later years. He then, with ranch help, built the first frame ranch house, on 60,000 acres. It was through his wise judgment and effort that the south half of the San Fernando Grant, containing this 60,000 acres, was developed from a sheep pasture into a grain field of better than 35,000 acres.

My next distinct recollection was when my father and mother and my two sisters, Annis (now Mrs. Schweppe) and Kate (now Mrs. Page) and I were taken to the above mentioned "Home Ranch" to spend a Spring vacation, and I was to be taught to ride horse-back!

On my first ride, I was put on a horse with a saddle, but did not make a very good rider because, after riding 20 or 30 feet, the horse wiggled and I went on the ground. That was my first fall from a horse, but far from my last. We children enjoyed the Valley in the Spring and this was the only time of year we were allowed to go, until I grew older, and then we spent many Spring vacations at the "Home Ranch" with my parents. As we grew older, picnics were planned and friends would drive out for the day. I remember particularly one in a poppy field which contained about 5,000 acres. The field was from the Los Angeles River to the North line and from the Tujunga Wash on the east to the Pacoima Wash on the west, and this parcel of land was commonly called the "Island." This is the parcel on which the town of Van Nuys is now situated, about midway on a north and south line of the valley floor, and on the edge of the Pacoima Wash, which I am happy to say has now been corrected by the County Flood Control so there are no more floods in the Town of Van Nuys. We had delightful picnics in this area from time to time, and the wild flowers were always abundant.

Again I reiterate that I always enjoyed the San Fernando and I was a constant annoyance to my family by asking to spend vacation time there.

In 1893 there had been a change of superintendents at the Home Ranch, and a Scotchman, William Ferguson, was appointed, and when the family came back from the World's Fair I was surprised to find that George Perry, as superintendent, was no longer there, having returned to his old home in Georgia. I think this Scotchman, Ferguson, had a great deal to do with my life. Hours never seemed anything to him, neither did miles, and there was never a penny wasted. When I was a little older and they were shy of horse herders during the busy season, and I was there on vacation, I was sent out on a horse to do the herding, which I enjoyed and

My Memories of San Fernando Valley

which was good training. These vacations in the open air on top of a horse went on until I was about twenty years old when, on account of an eye condition, I was taken out of school and was put to work.

The Flour Mills at Commercial and Alameda (belonging to the company) were grinding all the wheat that could be produced in the San Fernando Valley and also grinding additional from other locations. I was put to work in the warehouse, grading grain, and then during the summertime was a general superintendent, went to the Ranch to grade wheat, look after the shipping and do miscellaneous jobs and report to my father, who was president and general manager of the L. A. F. & M. Co. Of course, this grew into a lot of responsibility, and during the last years there were 30,000 to 35,000 acres in wheat and barley. This standing grain was a gorgeous picture to a farmer. This operation was handled by six operating units; each unit meant a superintendent's house, two or three large barns that would house 120 head of stock, blacksmith shop and equipment shop and bunk houses and mess hall for the men.

In the fall of 1909 I discovered a young lady who enjoyed going to the country and who loved livestock—the horses, the cattle and particularly the dogs, and also enjoyed opening and closing the gates. In December of that year we were married and Mrs. Van Nuys has been “opening and closing gates” for me almost constantly since that time, and has been a wonderful helpmate in every way. We lived the first nine months after our marriage, half the week at the Workman Ranch at the extreme west end of the Valley (where Canoga Park is today) and the other half at our home in Los Angeles.

Then came the Los Angeles Aqueduct—General Otis, Harry Chandler, his son-in-law, General Sherman, Mr. Brant, Mr. Allen and Mr. Clark of the Title Insurance and Trust Company and Mr. H. J. Whitley. They all felt they could get the surplus water from the Owens River Aqueduct on to the land of the San Fernando, and Mr. Chandler discussed this with me quite fully and quite frankly. My father was not well and he was not coming to the office. The

water history of the San Fernando is well known—the Pueblo of Los Angeles had, and has, the first and full rights on the Los Angeles River. It seemed wise and prudent to sit down with these gentlemen and discuss a transfer of title and the sale of the property. Mr. Chandler, as far as I am concerned, was the leading spirit and a fine and fair negotiator, and an agreement was reached in the Fall of 1909, with the premises to be delivered November 1, 1910, at which time six ranches or operating units were named after the first operators or superintendents. They were:

1. "Home" or Van Nuys; 2. "West", being west of the "Home"; 3. Workman; 4. Patton; 5. Kester; 6. Sheep.

The Sheep Ranch, as it was known, was the last to go under the plow and had always been the sheep headquarters over the last 10 years.

Thus, in 1910, from the six ranch houses, all the horses, livestock and equipment were sold at public auction; then it became the problem of the new owners, the Suburban Homes Co., to proceed with the subdivision and sale, details of which had all been worked out during the year 1909-1910.

It is inconceivable to me, when I drive through the Valley today, to understand how only six ranch houses stood in 48,000 acres (12,000 acres of the 60,000 having been sold in 1888). This is what is known as North Hollywood, and it was originally named after my grandfather, Mr. Lankershim (the south half of the ex-mission, San Fernando). The transformation of 35,000 acres of grain lands, suburban farms and homes has been carried on day by day since that date in 1910.

Take a ride through the Valley and see the result.




Why Joseph Chapman Adopted California

and

Why California Adopted Him

By Paul T. Scott

HE YANKEE CARPENTER-BLACKSMITH, who sailed from Boston as Joseph Chapman and changed his name to José Juan Chapman when he embraced the Catholic faith in his adopted California, was a pioneer all his life. He never grew rich and powerful as did Abel Stearns, William Workman, Benjamin Wilson, and so many of his countrymen who followed him; he was not a gifted financier, nor a flashy politician out to capture the minds of men. Rather he was the skilled craftsman, able to turn his dreams of invention and building into reality. Much needed he was in the pioneer land where work with metal and wood was considered beneath the "*gente de razon*."

There must be no attempt to deprecate the continuous toil of the Franciscan friars who directed the work of the Mission Indians; but the priests' education had been largely academic and religious in Old Spain, and though fervidly loyal and energetic to a fault, their engineering skill left much to be desired. Padre Junipero Serra, father of the Missions, received a scholarship to a prominent University in Spain because he had never engaged in menial (that is, manual) labor.

Nor need anyone cast aspersions upon the courage and faithfulness of the Spanish and Mexican soldiery. From the presidios at San Diego and Santa Barbara they guarded the Southern California Missions though every night the padres locked up the female neophytes to shield them from their amorous protectors.

On the whole, the soldiery were competent, worked for a pittance, and looked down their noses at the humble blacksmiths and carpenters, who were usually Indians and Mexicans of the lowest classes. Chapman's life illustrates the difference between the Spanish and American pioneer: the American early learned to work with his tools, his ax and plow, and picked up his sword and gun only when he needed to kill game or do battle; the Spanish youth grew up with his cutlass, sword and gun, and retired to end his days at ranching. He never really became an efficient farmer in the American sense of the word.

So, Joseph Chapman brought with him to California a dignity and a skill in manual crafts, unknown before his arrival. And the padres, the aristocratic landowners, and even the Indians accepted the American carpenter-blacksmith for his honest bearing and valued worth.

At first, the Indians feared El Diablo, as they respectfully named Chapman, and his brusque and sometimes abusive language; but he could get more work out of them, said Padre Sanchez, than a dozen *majordomos*. Joseph mixed his English, Spanish and Indian dialects in a way that commanded immediate respect and results from the Indians.

"*Ventura! Vamos!*" he might sing out, "*trae los buayos, go down to the plaza and come back as quick as you can puede.*"

In the year that George Washington was elected president of youthful United States, Joseph Chapman was born. He was eleven years old when Washington died, and he had already learned to read and write so that he could be apprenticed early by his father Daniel Chapman to a Boston shipwright.

Yet Joseph never wrote any articles or books describing California as did so many of his countrymen who came after him during the Mexican period. He was too busy building and doctoring and serving his community to be bothered with writing.

What did Joseph's articulate countrymen have to say about the *Californios* who were busily secularizing the Mission property and establishing great ranchos, pasturing their cattle upon a thousand hills?

Why Joseph Chapman Adopted California

Alfred Robinson imitated Joseph in that he became a Catholic and married an "*hija del pais*." In his *Life in California Before the Conquest*, he describes the Californians and their governors as "*patriotas de bolsa*," purse patriots; and he traces their ungovernable desires to their lack of education—few but the clergy could read or write—their indolence and improvidence and excessive vanity in clothing.

"You might as well expect a sloth to leave a tree that has one inch of bark left upon its trunk as to expect a Californian to labor while a *real* glistens in his pocket," writes Robinson.

Richard H. Dana in his "*Two Years Before the Mast*" says about the Californians:

"As a rule they were shiftless; they had grapes and paid high prices for Boston wines; they had hides and paid exorbitantly for shoes made from California skins that had been *twice* around the Horn."

Unfortunately Joseph Chapman's entrance into his California promised land was anything but auspicious. He was second in command of the *Santa Rosa* during the insurgents' attack upon Monterey in 1818. Chapman was probably the "fall guy," the expendable one, who with Tom Fisher, an American Negro, went ashore under a flag of truce to order Governor Sola either to: (1) surrender, or (2) join the revolution.

Sola, who thought the men had come to surrender, promptly accused them of lies and deceits and threw them into the *calabozo*. There historian Bancroft leaves them, obviously because he does not have the foggiest notion as to how Chapman made his immediate peace with the governor and the padres and how he was first allowed to prove his useful talents.

Stephen C. Foster, journalist of the seventies, gives a dramatic account of how Joseph Chapman was lassoed during the later pirate attack on the Ortega Rancho at the Refugio landing and was saved from death by the beautiful Guadalupe Ortega whom he afterward married. His Mexican captors had preferred to drag him to death with their *riatas* behind their horses. Bancroft says flatly that this touching story is not true.

Joseph's own explanation when he was interested in his conversion and wished to present his best face to the world, states that he had been "impressed" into Bouchard's expedition at the Sandwich Islands. A cynic might say that he was impressed indeed—by a promised share in the gold of conquered California. Even Joseph does not tell why he was released from jail in Monterey.

Among his descendants there is a story handed down, a very simple one, for more than a century after his landing. Graciosa Elizalde, now an elderly woman living in Santa Barbara, says her mother Luisa could speak with authority of family tradition because her mother was Fervorosa Chapman, born in 1839, ninth child of Joseph and Guadalupe Chapman.

And this is the account which Graciosa Elizalde, great-granddaughter of Joseph Chapman, gives:

Yes, great-grandfather Joseph was the officer imprisoned by Sola at Monterey, but he was released the next day when Bouchard's crew captured and sacked the town. He stayed with the marauders till the Refugio landing, but he had been astonished by the essential honesty and kindness of the Californians, their practice of Christian charity, and his mild treatment at Monterey when his captors could have tortured or hanged him as a common pirate.

Joseph simply escaped from the ship at Refugio and made his way up the canyon and over the Pass to Mission Santa Inez. There the friars hid him and befriended him. There Antonio Maria Lugo found him, liked his straight-forward appearance, and offered to sponsor him if he would work on the Plaza Church in Los Angeles. This less dramatic story of Joseph Chapman's rescue is probably the way it really happened.

Graciosa Elizalde's mother also told her how Joseph, the *Americano*, first met Guadalupe, his *senorita* beloved. It was common knowledge that Maria Guadalupe Ortega was extremely religious and a member of the Santa Inez parish. With her aunts and her cousins she often rode over the pass to launder and mend the church linens. She may even have met Joseph on the day in December when he came knocking at the Mission door, asking the privilege of surrender, because she and her family had certainly

Why Joseph Chapman Adopted California

fled from the pirates up Refugio Pass to the Mission before the prosperous ranch buildings could be burned.

Four years later, on November 3, 1822, Guadalupe became the repentant American's wife, and Padre Sanchez, years afterward, writes, "It was an edifying spectacle to see the loving union of that couple."

Except for the 1821 marriage of John Gilroy, the Englishman—the city of Gilroy stands on his old rancho—to Maria Clara, daughter of Ignacio Ortega, Joseph's marriage to Guadalupe was the first of a happy procession of international marriages between the adventurous immigrants and the gentle cultured daughters of old California.

So successful was Guadalupe's marriage that Daniel Hill, the American sea captain from Billerica, Massachusetts, two years later courted and won her pretty second cousin, Rafaela Ortega, only fourteen. Most of the Americans as well as the California caballeros found it necessary in a pioneer land to rob the cradle.

The famous Ortega beauties created social history in the 1820's. It took real courage on the part of the heiresses and their families to accept as husband material men who had been reared speaking a foreign language in an alien Protestant culture. Their husbands might not be sincere converts to the Holy Catholic Church. Also they might decide any day to leave the country.

On the other hand, to the California *senoritas* the Americans seemed steadier, better providers, less inclined to gamble and drink than the California caballeros. And oh, most flattering to the ladies, the foreigners were doggedly persistent in their loyalty to one woman, rarely flirted, though notoriously inept at playing the guitar and tripping the toe in the light fandango. It was a long chance a lady had to take. It is even possible that the Ortega girls let their hearts speak more loudly than their heads.

Before his marriage Joseph had proved himself by building the first efficient water-powered gristmill in California at Santa Inez in 1820 and another at San Gabriel in 1821. His fee for each mill was three hundred pesos. That same year he received for what it

was worth the Spanish king's amnesty to all Anglo-American prisoners and the next year was baptized in the Catholic faith before he married his beloved. She was not quite twenty-two, a *doncella*, dedicated to her family and the Church; but big blonde and handsome Joseph, then thirty-four, changed her mind when he sent his representative Antonio Maria Lugo to her worthy uncles to beg her hand in marriage. She bore him eleven children, all but one of whom were healthy and happy. Refugio, an incompetent daughter, next to the youngest, had to have a special guardian in the 1870's.

In 1822 also, Joseph saw his opportunity at San Gabriel and moved with his wife to the struggling little *pueblo* of Los Angeles. His first child, José Dolores Ramon Saturnino, was baptized at San Gabriel on September 8, 1823. The next year Joseph bought a run-down house of Agustin Machado and planted 4,000 vines on nearby land given him by Governor Echeandia. He learned the vintner's art at San Gabriel. One can see him during these years rebuilding his house, making his *aguardiente*, dispensing medicine and doing odd jobs for the citizens of the crude little *pueblo* with its thousand or so population.

The day after New Year's in 1827, Chapman riding into the San Gabriel Mission at 10 o'clock in the morning, met the Jedediah Smith party. He showed them the soap kettles and the tallow rendering vats and the tar from the *brea* pit for rain-proofing flat roofs. Harrison Rogers, Smith's second in command, writes in his diary that Mr. Joseph Chapman was "getting wealthy being what we term a Yanky. He is jack-of-all trades and naturally a very ingenious man."

Twice Joseph took four or five of Smith's men with him to the mountains to saw wood for his charcoal pit and assist him in burning the charcoal. Rogers and Smith must have liked the Mission hospitality for they brought their rough-hewn trappers back the next year.

Joseph applied for Mexican citizenship in 1829 and was pleased that so many important persons would recommend him. Governor Victoria granted the request two years later. Joseph repaid him by serving as the Governor's surgeon, repairing his torn face after the

Why Joseph Chapman Adopted California

first Battle of Cahuenga Pass. That same year Joseph built the first seaworthy ship ever built in California (if one excludes the raft the Russians at Ross had launched).

Joseph built her for hunting fur seal and otter, her displacement was 60 tons, and she was christened the *Guadalupe*. Her beam, timbers and hull Joseph built in pieces at San Gabriel; but he may have salvaged something from the *Brig Danube*, which had been wrecked in a southeaster at San Pedro two years before.

Joseph watched the Missions perish after 1832. His favorite, Padre Sanchez, before the priest's death must have warned Joseph to go to his ranch. So the Chapman family moved, not to the ranch—Joseph must be forever tinkering, repairing and building—but to Santa Barbara, where the padres gave him the old hide-house on the beach atop what is now called Burton Mound, with such a view of the mountains and sea as would melt the heart.

In 1838 Governor Alvarado gave Joseph Chapman, now a well-known and useful citizen, member of the powerful Ortega family, a square league of land in the San Pedro colony on the Santa Clara River, ten miles east of Mission San Buenaventura. It may have been near, or a part of, the 13,320-acre Sanchez Rancho in which Guadalupe's mother had an heir's interest.

But Joseph preferred to build adobes for a fee and perform the seemingly humble tasks for the citizens which neither the Indians nor the Mexican blacksmiths could do well. A "bill" in Joseph's cramped but legible hand submitted for payment in March, 1837, to Don Alpheus B. Thompson asks for 35 pesos, 2 reales for the following:

1. Mending wheelbarrow
2. Making hinges
3. Making hooks and gratings for windows
4. Using a horsecart for nine days
5. Fixing axeltree of cart and paying the driver \$1
6. Carting hides
7. Putting ceiling in boat
8. Use of oxen

In 1840, after Joseph sold his remodeled hide-house on Burton Mound to George Nidever, he built an adobe on his lot a half mile from the sea. The location in Santa Barbara today is 182 East Haley Street. Joseph Chapman never lived in the attractive salt-box house now standing in excellent preservation at that address. It was built by Captain Maris for his young bride Dolores, Joseph Chapman's eighth child and sixth daughter.

It was in the humble adobe built by his own hands that Joseph Chapman, the California pioneer, died on January 9, 1849. He was buried the next day in the cemetery at Mission Santa Barbara, the first American to be interred there. In his lifetime he had seen the downfall of the Spanish power, the disintegration of the Missions, the debauchment and death of the Indians, the defeat of the Mexicans by the Americans; and he had seen his youngsters, at first timid about their American blood, proud to call themselves only Americans after 1846.

Edwin Bryant, 42, newspaperman from Louisville, Kentucky, was visiting California in 1847 when he met three of Joseph's daughters at a fandango on the Sanchez Rancho. He describes them as

"fair-skinned and might be called handsome . . . They called themselves Americans although they did not speak our language and seemed to be more proud of their American than of their Spanish blood."

Joseph's handsome daughters, probably visiting their maternal Grandmother Sanchez, were Rita, 19; Ygnacia, 17; and Clara, 15. Their father, then knocking at the door of 60, probably considered himself a little too old for the fandango and did not ride the ten miles from Santa Barbara to welcome his visiting countrymen.

Bancroft closes the record with this tribute: "Among all the earliest pioneers of California, there was no more attractive character, no more popular and useful man than Joseph Chapman, the Yankee."

Round House George and His Garden of Paradise

By Maymie R. Krythe



WITH A LEMON IN HIS HAND, and a crooked cane on his arm, Round House George, the genial though rather eccentric proprietor of the Garden of Paradise, circulated around the grounds, greeting his patrons, the Angelenos, as they sat chatting and drinking together near the Round House. This oddly shaped structure was, for several decades, one of the most conspicuous landmarks of early pueblo days. The resort developed there, by Round House George, was the favorite outdoor gathering place of socially minded citizens, from the fifties to the late seventies.

During these decades the Garden was then considered out in the suburbs, but now the site is in the heart of the city. The resort had a frontage of 120 feet on the west side of Main, between Third and Fourth Streets, and extended through to Spring Street. It included the present numbers, 311 to 317, on Main, and 306 to 314, on Spring.

This plot of ground had first been granted in 1847 to Juan Bouvette and his wife, Loreta Cota, by the ayuntamiento, or City Council, of the pueblo of Los Angeles. In the late forties, or early fifties, a French sailor, Raimond Alexander, arrived in town. After opening a saloon, and marrying Maria Valdez, he bought this land from Bouvette. In planning a home for his bride, Alexander did not follow the uniform California style of adobe construction. Instead, he erected a round, tower-like building with thick walls. He said it was a copy of one he had seen when on a voyage to the coast of Africa. His two-story house had "a far-projecting, high ascending, conical" shingled roof that looked like an umbrella. This "freakish" home was the subject of many local conversations. With the surrounding lawn—so a contemporary stated—it cost the

owner between \$15,000 and \$20,000, and eventually bankrupted him.

The Alexanders lived there only two years; then sold it to "Dutch" George Lehman, a native of Germany. He first resided at Sixth and Spring, where the Hayward Hotel now stands. Here he had a bakery, and owned so much land in this neighborhood that the district was often referred to as "Georgetown" or "German-town."

Lehman also built many houses, which he rented, and soon became a well-to-do property owner. When he settled in California, he believed he had reached the Garden of Eden; so he decided to carry out this idea in the decoration of the Round House grounds after he acquired this property. First, he changed the building to an octagon-shaped one, by enclosing it in a frame work extension, about ten feet deep. Above the windows he painted the names of the thirteen original states, and added that of California. Flowers and vines grew around the base of the building.

With definite ideas of his own, George finally made his garden a unique spot that appealed to many patrons. There was practically no shade in town in those early days; since George was a great lover of trees, he set out numbers of fruit and ornamental trees. There were no water pipes or hose then to make such work easier; therefore he carried all the water to keep the plants growing. He built several arbors on the grounds; in a few years they were completely covered with various vines and roses so one could hardly see through the vegetation. Perspiring citizens hurried out to enjoy themselves in these shady bowers. In the center of the garden stood a large orange tree which someone called "The Tree of Life."

The Main Street entrance had a wide gate in the picket fence, while there were two openings on the Spring Street side. Above both these fences towered a cactus hedge, with flat-shaped leaves. These plants grew with the years and formed an impenetrable fence. Some of the prickly pear plants reached the height of fifteen feet; although their fruit was hard to handle, visitors to the garden enjoyed the refreshing juice. On the Main Street side, a majestic cactus stood until in 1886, when the city ordered it cut down so that a cement sidewalk could be laid.

Round House George and His Garden of Paradise

Lehman, still laboring under the "hallucination" that he had discovered the first home of our original parents, placed statues of heroic size—made of cement—around his grounds. Adam and Eve, with the serpent nearby, trying to allure her, reclined under a tree; among the leafy bowers were various animals said to have paraded before Adam to receive their names.

The *Star*, March 21, 1857, described these statutes as follows:

The first parents, large as life—and the famous serpent. There is also that golden apple with which the inquisitive Eve tempted and deceived foolish Mr. Adam, condemning his long posterity to be equally and ever the victims of all future Miss Eves. And there is in addition the righteous child Abel, with that wicked Cain "who madly slew his brother." At the gate is a fiery pepper tree (not the fiery sword) which crooked, and turning every way, guards the entrance to this modern Eden.

After two years of preparation, George opened his resort, in 1856, charging a small admission. It soon became a favorite meeting place for congenial souls who enjoyed the shade. Round House Garden was the scene of various public gatherings, and on holidays was a busy place.

The Round House was as popular of a Sunday as the churches, and none came under the censuring finger of popular scorn, because he frequented this popular retreat.

The *Star*, March 21, 1857, carried this advertisement:

THE GARDEN OF PARADISE

The handsome grounds of the Round House in the South part of Main Street have been lately fitted up as a public garden, under the rather high sounding title. In it are to be seen elegantly portrayed the primeval family, Adam and Eve, Cain and Abel; also the old serpent and the golden apples, all according to the record. There is, besides a framework for the amusement of the children, containing what are called 'flying horses.' A band of music plays at intervals. The garden is tastefully laid out and is much frequented by citizens, especially on Sundays.

When the Round House band played on the balcony, it no doubt made up in volume any lack in quality. Many Germans had come to Los Angeles; therefore in 1859 they organized a Turn-

verein, the *Teutonia-Concordia*. It was founded by Christian Henne, and thirty-eight other Germans, after several conferences at the Round House Garden. The first officers were: president, C. H. Classen; vice-president, H. Hammel; secretary, H. Heinsch; treasurer, Lorenzo Leck. The idea of the society was to practice vocal and instrumental music; to further the study of the German language, and to promote social intercourse, especially among their fellow countrymen.

On Sunday afternoons and evenings the members of the Verein sat here in the shade with their glasses of beer before them, and sang "*O Du Lieber Augustin*" and other familiar songs of the Fatherland. These meetings gave the Garden quite an Old World atmosphere. Later the society established classes here in the German tongue.

A freak attraction that drew people to the place was George's famous cabbage plant, the subject of this item in the *Los Angeles Star*, in April, 1861:

THAT TALL CABBAGE

This week we called at the Garden of Paradise, kept by Mr. George Lehman, and took another view of the cabbage and it has now reached 15 feet and is still growing in a healthy condition. George says it was planted in September, 1856.

Since that time, he has gathered seed from it nine times, made sauerkraut 40 times, cole slaw as often, and used it for salad for 25 other occasions. It has numerous limbs in the form of a tree, all of which have heads of cabbage, which are from time to time taken off for use. It is in truth a vegetable curiosity, and well worth visiting.

However, the chief attraction was the bar, near a large well sweep. Most of the patrons liked foaming beer, served with pretzels; but one could buy anything from apple cider to whiskey.

The Round House also served as a voting place, the other one being at the Bella Union Hotel. In 1860 a big Fourth of July celebration took place in the Garden of Paradise, after the Turnverein had installed a flagpole. There was a big crowd, and Lehman's face beamed with happiness and patriotism. "He kept the national

Round House George and His Garden of Paradise

ensign at the fore, showed his fifteen-foot cabbage, and dealt lager to admiring crowds all day." In the seventies, too, there were other important Independence Day celebrations here, with large numbers of citizens on hand.

Toward the end of the sixties, George Lehman gave up his supervision of the Round House Garden, and had a wine cellar on Sixth Street. The new managers, Ed Tibessard and Gus Hatzensein, conducted the garden, which afforded "a pleasant retreat with music and refreshments." The *News* (April 16, 1871) reported:

The above named gentlemen have opened this well-known establishment for the accommodation of the public, and intend to make it one of the finest places of resort on this coast. Ladies and families with children will receive personal attention. Disorderly and disreputable characters will be rigidly excluded.

By 1876 the Messrs. Hudson and Phelan were in charge, and made the place "one of the most delightful resorts" in the city. They had renovated and "refurnished, in an elegant manner" the building. The upper story was divided into a parlor and some smaller rooms, all nicely carpeted. A well shaded and ventilated dance pavilion, thirty by eighty-five feet, was erected on the grounds. Here provision was made for theatrical entertainments; also public and private parties could be given "without intrusion from unauthorized persons."

One long remembered affair was a May Day celebration put on by the Turnverein, with many out of town guests on hand. First, they paraded around town, headed by the Wilmington Band, and then made their way to the Round House Garden. Here they spent the day in amusing sports and games, with prizes for the winners, and naturally, much eating and drinking. That evening they concluded the happy occasion with a grand ball at the Round House.

By 1877 William Klauber was acting as proprietor. He informed the public that everyone would be treated in the most genteel manner, and all dubious characters excluded. Each Saturday evening, there was dancing to good music. Gentlemen paid fifty

cents admission, but ladies were admitted free. Board and room could be obtained at the Round House, and each Sunday dinners were served in the arbors.

Older patrons, of course, missed Round House George, for he was one of the most popular characters in town, "a good-natured well-meaning man, full of vagaries, and fantastic notions." Because of his continual good nature, people often indulged in jokes at his expense. One local paper announced:

Round House George is making great improvements on his property at Fort (Broadway) and Sixth. He has already at great expense set out a post and whitewashed a cactus.

Lehman did not give Pershing Square Park to city, as some have stated; for this land was part of five acres, set apart for a park from the public lands of the pueblo. But he planted the first tree in this square, near the corner of Sixth and Olive. According to a contemporary, George worked hard to keep this tree and others alive, carrying water in a five-gallon can from his property where the Pacific Mutual Building now stands.

One of Lehman's chief characteristics was his steadfast and prophetic belief that some day Los Angeles would be a great metropolis. Consequently, he bought as much real estate as possible, including a large tract where the Biltmore Hotel and the Philharmonic Auditorium are located today.

Through no "vice or idleness" fault of his own, but because of "some miscalculations and mistakes in his business projects," George Lehman met reverses, and had to mortgage his holdings for \$15,000. Lazard Freres, the bankers, in San Francisco, who held the mortgage were as considerate as possible. However, in 1879, they foreclosed when he defaulted in his payments. George buried his statues in "Paradise Lost," and hoped some day to redeem his property, and re-name it "Paradise Re-Gained."

The *Express* gave a pathetic description of the last days George Lehman spent at the Round House. After the mortgage was foreclosed, he was permitted to stay on the premises for a time. To everyone he bewailed his fate, "baring his arms, the swelled veins

Round House George and His Garden of Paradise

of which attested to the amount of work he had done. "With these arms I brought enough water from the Los Angeles River to make my trees grow, and now they are taken from me." At night he would prowls around and groan. Then a kind-hearted lady found a room for him, but he refused to move. That night he roamed around in the garden in a drizzling rain. Finally he was completely worn out; so when some officers arrived to take him away, he left his beloved Garden of Paradise.

The next year the *Express* called attention to "the sad plight" of "industrious, kind-hearted George Lehman, 'Round House George'," declaring that George wasn't the only victim of high taxes in Los Angeles; that others, too, had lost their homes. "The shadow of many a George cries to Heaven for vengeance."

George was enterprising, beyond his time and many a good day's work he put towards developing and improving the city of Los Angeles. He gave employment to men, built houses and planted trees, hauled the water in buckets and barrels to make his trees grow, and was not selfish as most of the old founders. He did not shut off the pleasant prospect by enclosing his grounds with high adobe walls so that none but the owner could enjoy the pleasing view.

George was frugal in his habits of living; his clothes were simple and plain; his eating was equally simple . . . then he felt like a prince and was ready to talk of the future progress of the city he loved so well, and for whose future greatness he would eloquently plead.

But an evil day arose for George; a venal extravagant City Council taxed him to death; assessed him for fancied improvements that in some instances amounted to more than the property would then or ever sell for. The result was that he had to borrow money at compound interest, and ruin followed . . .

Unfortunately Lehman's dream of the future greatness of the pueblo of Los Angeles did not come true in time to save his property; he died penniless and was buried in a pauper's grave.

After the Round House passed out of George's hands, it served for some time as a school. A Miss Emma Marwedel, a pupil of the noted Froebel in Germany, started the first kindergarten in South-

ern California here. Kate Douglas Wiggin—later famous as a writer—was her assistant.

The Angelenos of that period apparently were rather ignorant about kindergartens. One man asked another, "What is this kindergarten business down at the Round House?"

"Oh, that sign," was the answer, "is spelled wrong. It should be 'kinder of a garden.' The little kids play the school is a kind of a garden and they are flowers. They just sing songs and cut up funny capers."

In June, 1880, at the old Round House the Sunday School Centennial, combined with a memorial service for soldiers, was observed. A hundred children sang, under the direction of their teachers, Mrs. Langdon and Miss Losee. These children were taught vocal and instrumental music at the old building on week days. The *Express* made the comment that the Round House was now used for a much better purpose than when it had been the scene of drinking parties.

Later it became a cheap lodging house, until the boom of 1887 came. Then it was torn down to make way for improvements, in the rapidly developing city.


But many an old resident breathed a nostalgic sigh for the times they had gathered there at the popular rendezvous, with good old Round House George. With its passing there went also one of the most notable landmarks of pueblo days, and a vivid reminder of the time when life was free and easy—when George Lehman ruled like a monarch in his unique Garden of Paradise.

REFERENCES

- Layne, Gregg, *Annals of Los Angeles*.
 Newmark, Harris, *Sixty Years in Southern California*
 Robinson, W. W., *Story of Pershing Square*
 Workman, B., *City That Grew*
Los Angeles and Environs, Vol. I
 Loomis, "Los Angeles and Her Makers" in *OUTWEST*
 Bowman, "A Lost Landmark," *LAND OF SUNSHINE*, Vol. 7
 Guinn, "Historic Houses of Los Angeles," Vol. III *QUARTERLY of the Historical Society of Southern California*
Los Angeles Star, Oct. 2, 1858; April 13, 1861; March 21, 1857; Dec. 31, 1859
Los Angeles News, April 16, 1871; May 14, 1871; May 29, 1871
Los Angeles Express, June 25, 1873; July 2, 1873; July 3, 1873; July 5, 1873; July 29, 1876; July 3, 1876; July 20, 1877; May 14, 1878; April 10, 1880; April 31, 1880; June 5, 1880; July 13, 1880
Los Angeles Herald, July 22, 1877.

Grace Freeman Howland

By Jo Hindman

INY AND SILVERY-HAIRED, she stood upon the spacious veranda that was wide enough and long enough to contain two or three of the nearby tract houses that were built up around the former showplace mansion of the great Rancho Centinela, site of the present city of Inglewood.

Grace Freeman Howland was explaining to me gently, "I was brought up to believe that a woman's name should appear publicly in print only three times in her life—"

This was partly in answer to my observation that although the name of her distinguished father, Daniel Freeman, and that of her husband, Charles Howland, appeared in historical annals and an early "*Who's Who*" of Southern California, her's did not. It was partly in answer also, to my hinted desire to write something of her life.

That was in 1950 when I was preparing "*Daniel Freeman*" for the *QUARTERLY* and had come to her for the authentic details of her father's life. At the moment, our first meeting was just drawing to a close and I stood in the tree-shadowed driveway of the Freeman mansion in Inglewood looking up at the erect, still beautiful little person who had lived the Gay Nineties and seen the Century turn.

Folding her hands one upon the other, a characteristic gesture, she went on, "—the first time a woman's name can properly be published is when she is born; second time, when she is married; third time, when she dies."

It is in order now for Grace Freeman Howland's name to appear properly—for the third time. At 12:45 p.m., June 4, 1956, the beloved early-Californian passed away.

She was born on January 31, 1869, in Port Burwell, Ontario,

Canada, where her father operated a shipyard on Lake Erie. "Just a little shipyard," she qualified with the typical modesty that marked all references to herself or the Freeman clan.

Christened Grace Elizabeth Isabella, her only recollection of her mother was a flash-memory of a lovely dark head cradled wearily against her father's shoulder as he carried his wife upstairs on an unknown occasion. Mrs. Freeman was ill and passed away in 1874 after the Freemans had arrived in California and settled in the adobe ranch house built by former owners of Rancho Aguaje de la Centinela.

The three children of Daniel and Catherine Grace Christie Freeman were spaced one and one-half years apart. Grace spent a storybook childhood on the great rancho with her two noisy and prankish brothers, Archie and Charlie.

Daniel Freeman counted upon a great deal of his children's education coming from the out-of-doors. Both boys became expert riders and ropers, learning from their father's range riders. Little Grace doggedly held her own. Once, the girth snapped on her pony sending her into a dizzy catapult, but José, the rider assigned to watch her, expertly scooped her out of the air into his arms, unhurt.

It was José who introduced Grace to the little creatures of the earth. Cantering with his pretty little charge across her father's great ranch, the swarthy *vaquero* would say gravely, "Señorita, look! The little animal has come out of his *casita* and is bowing to you from beside the door."

Grace turned childish blue eyes and there, popping up and down in jerky little bows beside his hole, was a little prairie dog, eyes bright with curiosity. Beyond him were others, bobbing and squeaking, as nervously inquisitive about Grace as she was about them. This sympathetic feeling of respect for God's small creatures stayed with Grace all through her life. When she was in her teens, it was displayed by her love for horses and dogs.

Daniel Freeman sent to Canada for a governess to instruct the three children; the north room of the adobe ranch house was set aside as a classroom. The governess remained for six or seven years.

Grace Freeman Howland

Grace later returned to Canada for several years of formal education at Bishop's School for Girls in Toronto. Back in California again, she enrolled at the University of Southern California.

Bid for membership by a ranking sorority, she was appalled to learn that rushees desiring to join the organization were judged by certain sorority girls according to the financial ratings of their fathers.

"I had never heard of such a manner of choosing friends," Mrs. Howland confided. Her interest in the group lagged from then on, and the sorority emblem remained stuck into a pincushion in her room.

"The sorority finally asked for the pledge pin back, and I couldn't find it," she recalled with amusement. "I have always suspected that my brother, Archie, gave it to one of his girl friends as a trinket. But the sorority was annoyed when I couldn't produce it and I think they felt that I actually had the pin but wouldn't give it back."

Grace's father who was first a school teacher, then an attorney, before launching into shipbuilding that preceded his life as rancher and financier, believed in sound education as a foundation for a worthwhile and productive adult life. An interest in the cycles of history, the truths uncovered by philosophy, and the firm tenets of self-discipline were passed by the father to the daughter who, in her own words, "adored him." Surrounded as she was by Spanish-speaking Californians, Mrs. Howland however admitted that she never had taken time to learn the melodious tongue. "Everybody who needed to talk to me used English," she confessed.

The drought of 1875-76 seared grazing lands throughout Southern California and ruined her father's stock raising. Thousands of his sheep were driven into the coastal foothills and turned loose so that they could search for water holes and perhaps save their lives.

Thus, temporarily ruined as a sheep and cattleman, Grace's father took a job in a Los Angeles bank. Rebuilding the foundations of a second fortune, he then went into grain raising. Outlying portions of Rancho Centinela were put into grain and soon Freeman

was shipping to New York and as far as Liverpool, England. He bought the balance of Rancho Centinela in 1885 for \$140,000.00, having acquired a smaller portion of the extensive property previously.

In '87, the Southern California land boom was in full swing and the Freeman acres attracted a group of realtors who mapped the townsite of Inglewood on a portion of the ranch empire. To this group, the Centinela-Inglewood Land Company, Freeman released lots as fast as sales created a demand for more of his land.

His daughter cited this arrangement as proof that her father did not found Inglewood, although certain historians loosely define Daniel Freeman's role as such. Nor did he choose the name. The city came into being as a real estate development and Freeman's part in it was that of land-seller, while others drafted the plans, and named the streets. Grace Freeman conceded that her father could be called the "father" of Inglewood, but she felt that honest credit should go to the true founders, the realtors who laid out the town site.

Freeman took deep interest in the new town, however. It was Daniel Freeman who donated and supervised the planting of the pine and eucalyptus trees down the parkway strip that beautifies the center of Hillcrest Boulevard, the attractive residential street that intercepts Grace Avenue where Daniel Freeman later built the resplendent town house.

Daniel's sister, Amelia Freeman, joined his household following his wife's death and helped bring up the three Freeman children. Aunt Amelia, kind and generous, became an important influence upon the character of her little niece. Aunt Amelia was the early-day benefactress of Inglewood. Whenever anyone was ill, or had hard luck, or a setback, Aunt Amelia dispatched a carriage with baskets of medicine, food, clothing or whatever she found was necessary to alleviate the emergency. In decades that followed, this good work was carried on by Grace.

Meanwhile, young Charles Howland had come into Grace's life. Daniel Freeman built the storied English colonial edifice on sixty acres overlooking the arroyo washed by the famous Centinela

Grace Freeman Howland

springs, land that later was set aside as a public park. The stately home built on the street named Grace was constructed about a large conservatory that was kept lush and green with exotic plants. Screened within a double quadrangle of feathery pepper trees and eucalypti grown tall with the passage of years, the well-tended family home is hardly noticed by people hurrying past in the present age.

Draperies of damask still hang lustrous and undimmed in the lofty rooms of carved woods and marble. Furnishings included exquisite pieces contrived from teak, rosewood and mahogany; the golden blonde chairbacks of the dining room suite imported from France rose regally higher than the heads of the seated guests. In this storybook splendor, pretty Grace Freeman was courted by handsome Charles Howland.

When time for the wedding approached, Daniel Freeman asked his daughter what she wanted as a wedding gift. Fondly remembering the gay Mexican serapes and sturdy ranch type furniture of the white-walled adobe a mile distant on the old rancho, where as a child she had played hide-and-seek with the daughter of the caretaker and had hidden in the cool recesses of the two-foot thick window casements, the heiress answered, "I would like to have the adobe, father."

Although he had plenty of money to buy something newer and more fashionable, Daniel Freeman gave the quaint adobe to his only daughter, and the young couple lived there after they married. Later on, they moved into the mansion and Archie Freeman acquired the adobe and engineered many alterations, including a bathroom, hallway and guest room. The first telephone in Inglewood was installed in Archie Freeman's former gun room by later tenants in 1923. Today, the historic building is known as the Casa de la Centinela, or the Centinela Adobe, and is open to the public as an historic museum.

With her father and husband at the mansion, Mrs. Howland entertained such notables as the Baron and Baroness Roquist, Governor and Mrs. Stoneman, General and Mrs. John Charles Frémont, General and Mrs. Nelson A. Miles, Senator and Mrs. Cole, Colonel

Downey Harvey and Judge and Mrs. Ellis.

After her father's death, Mrs. Howland closed the big home to formal parties. Only close friends and members of her staff—she had seven full-time employees working there at her death—called at the beautiful spot during the next thirty years. But during World War I, she opened the 20-room mansion to the American Red Cross and furnished necessary materials for the workers.

Mrs. Howland also maintained and occasionally lived in another house at 2527 Foothill Boulevard, Altadena. Here she invited elderly friends to convalesce if she thought they could not afford private care. Few people knew that for years she had made regular monthly cash gifts to numerous persons less fortunate than herself, and was keenly interested in the welfare of the aged. She always gave her money in cash rather than by check so as to preserve her identity as an anonymous donor.

Toward young people, especially those living in poverty, squalor or undesirable conditions, Mrs. Howland reserved unlimited compassion. For a person who during her lifetime lacked for nothing, at least not for material things, Grace Freeman Howland's insight into the problems of other people was all the more unusual. She could understand, for instance, the hungering of a girl's heart for affection and for pretty things, hard to come by without means; and she could express pity for those who reaped sorrow following a moment of bartered pleasure. Perhaps Mrs. Howland's assistance helped dry many tears in her lifetime. Because of her steadfast reticence toward any publicity, particularly during the past three decades, the answer will probably never be known.

Certain of her bequests were too outstanding however, to escape public notice. She began lopping off portions of the great rancho she so loved, giving it away or selling it at give-away prices. Her land at one time covered the area between Inglewood and the ocean, and south almost to the Palos Verdes foothills. She donated part of of the property and the parking lot for the Inglewood Woman's clubhouse on Hillcrest Boulevard, the street of her famous father's trees; she also sold the present eleven-acre site on Florence Avenue to St. John Chrysostom Catholic Church at "a very reasonable price"

Grace Freeman Howland

for the parish's new church, elementary school and rectory.

Mrs. Howland spent some time turning over in her mind the proper disposal of the big mansion as part of the estate. At one time she planned to bequeath the property to an organization devoted to philanthropic work, and her ultimate decision will probably be reflected in terms of her will.

In 1951, Mrs. Howland donated a nine-acre site for the \$2,500,000 five-story hospital in Inglewood named for her father and operated by the Sisters of St. Joseph of Carondelet, a Catholic Order, one of whose activities lies in the field of nursing and hospital administration.

Besides the Centinela ranch, the estate used to include the Freeman office building at Sixth and Hill streets in downtown Los Angeles and the building now housing the Frank Wiggins Trade School at 1646 South Olive Street, Los Angeles.

In spite of her many bequests to Catholic organizations, Mrs. Howland remained an Episcopalian. Her warm regard for Catholics stemmed from the fact that one of her dearest relatives practiced the Catholic religion. Together with her philanthropic father and her late husband, Charles Howland, she gave to the Episcopal congregation of Inglewood in 1914, the beautiful Church of the Holy Faith, asserted to be the best example of Gothic architecture west of the Mississippi. Out of this ivy-grown house of worship, her casket was carried on the sunny afternoon of June 7, 1956, a day similar to the many days through which she had romped as a glad-hearted child of the old rancho.

Unknown to the public, the frail octogenarian who had been under doctor's orders for years, suffered a severe stroke at her mansion home at 536 Grace Avenue, Inglewood, on March 30, and was confined until her death in the adjacent Daniel Freeman Hospital, literally on the other side of the iron fence that divided the hospital property from her beautifully landscaped grounds.

Mrs. Howland's closest friend and confidant before his death was James H. Kew, her business manager and private secretary for thirty-three years who died last October 16 at the age of 91. James

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Kew as a young man had started working for her father and later became manager of the many-acred ranch. He was recipient of many honors from civic organizations of Inglewood and a school is now named after James Kew.

Grace Freeman Howland's death has punctuated, but not ended the saga of the Freeman family. Its name is on a school, a hospital, streets and upon history itself. Her brother Charles Freeman died in 1906; her only other brother, Archie, died and was buried in Ceylon in 1930 during a trip around the world; her father died in 1918 at the age of 81; and her mother was just 33 when she passed away in 1874.

Mrs. Howland is survived by only one living relative, a grand-niece, Mrs. Richard Phillips of Palo Alto, California, the former Christie Cruz Miles and the granddaughter of Mrs. Howland's brother, Charles.

In fact, this beloved brother, Charles, was the subject of one of the telephone calls I was privileged to receive from Mrs. Howland during our acquaintance. She had just received a copy of the September, 1951, issue of the *QUARTERLY* containing in the Daniel Freeman story, the information for which she had conveyed to me about her father.

Her voice over the wire sounded firm and clear, like a woman much younger. "Mrs. Hindman, your story is wonderful, and every bit of it is so true. But you didn't write much about Charlie! Charlie was my little brother. You hardly mentioned him at all."

I must have stammered, the distressing gap of information too glaringly evident by then. Somewhere, I had heard that Charlie's illness and death were sorrowful experiences of the Freeman family. In my shyness not to intrude and probe into past regrets, I had unwittingly disappointed a great little lady. I should have learned more about Charlie Freeman, then and before. I should have known that to speak of a departed loved one does not cause pain. Rather, it consoles.

Let history speak of the anonymous good deeds and the visible nobility of a gracious lady—Grace Freeman Howland.

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

(Continued from the June issue)

By Charles Clark Vernon

Chapter III

LIFE IN THE SAN GABRIELS



THE KNOWLEDGE GAINED ABOUT THE SAN GABRIEL MOUNTAINS during the American exploratory period there brought about an era of increasing activity; and ushered in a time of homesteading, trail making, hiking, and opening of resorts. The fact that a mountain frontier awaiting conquest lay near-by was greeted by San Gabriel Valley residents of the day with an enthusiasm and energy that amounted to a passion. This period extended from about 1890 into the 1930's.

Incidentally, more than just the normal desire of men to get close to nature lay behind this vigorous pushing forward of new trails and the flurry of building in the mountains. Something other than an occasional longing to spend a holiday away from the city was responsible for the flourishing business which was done by many resorts that attract fewer people in an entire season today than they then accommodated on a week end.

During this time, an adventurous spirit seemed to possess whole populations. Action was valued more than watching; the generation of spectators had not yet been born. Radio and television were still afar off.

The mountains were regarded as a local frontier and a challenge to the hardy. It is true that they were already explored and that a few main trails were established, but fish and game were still plentiful, the range was relatively unspoiled, and a man could put several days between himself and civilization simply by walking. Good camp sites and the grandeur of nature were attractions strong enough to lure more and more people to the mountains.

It was only natural that desirable spots along the trail should be noticed. Memory of a singing stream, a clear spring, a grove of oaks in a sheltered canyon, or of a lovely bench amid the pines beckoned a man as he went about his daily work. He anticipated the holiday with pleasure, returned often to a chosen place in the mountains, and soon considered it almost private. An idea was born and grew, and a cabin sprang up or a camp came into being.

Some men homesteaded their property, others simply squatted. Camps and cabins came to dot the southern slope of the range. In a canyon, on a hillside, on a ridge or even far back in the interior; any of these places might be selected for the next building site, but most activity occurred in front-range canyons.

Very little settling had been done in the mountains during the Spanish or Mexican periods in California. Occasionally a story is heard of an early mountaineer who told about the remains of an old cabin or lean-to, long abandoned when the first American saw it. But certainly such habitations were rare.

The Homestead Act of 1862 made it possible for the private citizen to take up a piece of land with definite boundaries, and provided him with legal rights to the property.¹ Title to the most land, patented in the mountains, was obtained by filing the necessary papers in accordance with the above act; however some land had previously been included in a Spanish or Mexican Rancho. Such cases, while unusual, were also provided for.²

With legal permission to settle, and with Los Angeles County population increasing, it is not surprising that more and more patents were recorded.

Henry Dalton was probably the first Anglo-American to file on mountain land, his ranch being located at the mouth of San Gabriel Canyon. Henry Roberts, too, picked San Gabriel Canyon where he chose to remain, and his years of useful activity in that region as rancher, miner and storekeeper have made his name one that is remembered.

Preceding the homesteaders so active in the '90's and first decade of the twentieth century were squatters and claimants who chose canyon mouths rather than the more isolated mountain acre-



—Will H. Thrall collection

RUBIO CANYON INCLINE

The Incline which ran from the Pavilion in Rubio Canyon up the crest of a ridge to the summit of Echo Mountain.



—Will H. Thrall collection

THE ALPINE OR MOUNT LOWE TAVERN



—Will H. Thrall collection

ECHO MOUNTAIN HOUSE

Two of the three hotels planned and built by Professor Lowe and made accessible by the famous Incline and Scenic Railway.



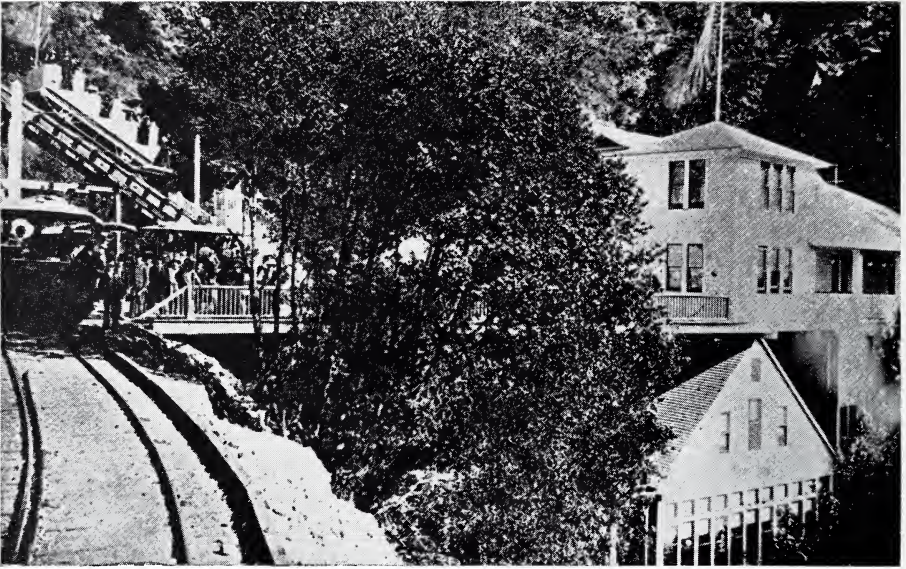
—Will H. Thrall collection

THE HARVARD OBSERVATORY
Mount Wilson, winter, 1889.



—Will H. Thrall collection

STRAIN'S CAMP
At the original Mount Wilson spring.



—Will H. Thrall collection

RUBIO PAVILION AND HOTEL
As they appeared in 1893.



—Will H. Thrall collection

THE CAMP RINCON STORE AND STAGE
In the early 1900's.

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

age. Dalton and Roberts were among these settlers as were the two described below, all of whom helped establish the precedent, and are memorialized by mountain place names today.

In 1862, a man named Millard settled as a squatter at the mouth of this [Millard's] canyon, utilized its waters and engaged in raising bees and hauling wood down to Los Angeles. Millard lived here ten years, or until 1872, during which time his wife and one child died and were buried on what is now the Giddings farm; . . . but the canyon still retains his name . . . In 1867 Jesus Rubio, a native Californian, . . . who had become an American citizen by treaty of peace in 1847 between Mexico and the United States, made a squatter's claim at the mouth of this Rubio canyon, built the little farm house which still stands there, and made a start toward the improvements that now constitute "Rubio Farm."³

All the settlers or squatters mentioned so far, located on the south slope of the range; none of them built in the interior, thus the part of the mountains closest to the valley received more than its share of homesteaders. This was only natural since that area was the most familiar and accessible; and the trend was to continue, almost until the turn of the century.

Jason and Owens, sons of abolitionist John Brown, homesteaded land on a plateau east of the Arroyo Seco. They built one cabin there and a second more secluded cabin on land not patented, and gave nearby Brown Mountain its name in honor of their father.

A long, level ridge top west of Mount Harvard is visible from anywhere in the Pasadena area, and it is especially easy to locate because of a large T hacked out of the brush on a near hillside. The T is the work of California Institute of Technology students, it stands for that university's old name, Troop; and the level bench is all that can be seen from below of a nicely forested valley which William K. Henniger located and settled about 1881. The place is now called Henniger Flats and a county reforestation nursery is maintained there.

Not far from Henniger's and somewhat higher up on the west slope of Mount Harvard is a pretty, open canyon, shaded by many oaks and a few pines. Here, in the early '90's, George Schneider

built first a small cabin then later, and farther up, a large two-story house complete with fireplace and sheltered porches. Both places, in their day, were known as Schneider's Camp or more commonly, after the Mount Wilson Toll Road was opened, the Half Way House.

Not all mountain land was taken up with the original intent to create a home or ranch. Early in the resort era, a camp which has weathered fire, flood and lean years; and one which has operated almost continuously since 1884 was established by, and bears the name of, Commodore Perry Switzer. It was one of the very first to attract outdoor-loving valley residents. Switzer intended from the beginning to open a resort which would be farther back in the mountains than most habitations at that time, yet lie almost directly behind the Crown City which would supply him with his clientele. The following description was written prior to 1887.

Switzer Camp is made in a sheltered nook on the main stream of the *Arroyo Seco*. A central log cabin with its stove chimney is the common sitting room, around which are the other cabins and tents. An old-fashioned Dutch oven adds interest to the scene, and the sweetest of brown loaves and the brownest of baked beans issue from its capacious depths. Here one may sleep on a bed of fragrant fir branches while the Arroyo sings over its rocky bed, and awake in a heaven of sylvan music made up of robin trills, the notes of linnets and finches, and sharper squirrel chirps strangely comingling.⁴

Switzer's was popular from the day it opened for business. The site was well chosen, fish and game abounded and the bear and cat, favorite "big game" in that day, still ranged the hills in fair numbers. But the trip to Switzer's was as tortuous to some as the rewards were pleasing.

Three times a week the old horse stage ran from down town [Pasadena] to Las Casitas, then your choice of "shank's mares" or temperamental burro for the eight mile trip, including some sixty stream crossings before the seemingly endless "zig-zags."

. . . board and room at \$1.50 per day . . . Trout dinners were featured regularly. One morning three anglers reported a catch of 240 below the site of the ranger station.⁵

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

While homesteading and the establishment of rude camps proceeded all along the front range, filing on back-country land was slowly getting under way. One to three days on the trail would ordinarily be required to reach Pine Flats, Buckhorn or upper Alder Creek, depending upon the packs the animals carried and the destination.

By 1890, Lou Newcomb built a cabin and filed for title of one hundred and sixty acres at rolling, wooded upper Chilao.⁶ His was the first land patented in the interior.

Delos Colby established the second of the back-country homesteads on the north slope of Strawberry Peak. For Colby, his wife and his daughter, it was a real home. No finer house stood in the mountains, no ranch more complete was carved from the wilderness. The house, a two-story dwelling built of stone and shingles, was as finished as many a city home. The land was cleared and planted, a reservoir built which was fed by spring water channeled around the mountain side, and a water powered saw mill constructed near the house.

Within a few years he [Colby] had cleared most of the tillable land, had planted orchards and fields of alfalfa and had added to his buildings a kitchen and dining room, bunk house, barn and stables. All of the lumber came from the woodlot above the ranch and was sawed in the mill by the stream.

Everything from the outside world had to be packed either over the main range from Acton or up sixteen miles of narrow, crooked trail from the mouth of Arroyo Seco, a tough job for both men and animals, but nothing daunted him.

. . . in 1907, sixteen years from the time he built the first cabin, he was granted his homestead rights certificate. During all these years the only evidence of his ownership had been the smoke from his chimney. His status had been that of squatter only.⁷

The Colby story was destined to end in a tragedy. The daughter, Nellie, whose beauty had attracted so many to the old home, died of grief some years after the disappearance of her husband during the Spanish-American War. Delos Colby died in 1918 after several seasons of hardship on the ranch. Ma Colby remained.

Long a mystic, Ma soon lost all desire to live on. She waited for and even anticipated the time of her own death. During the winter, 1928, the fine home burned and she perished with it.⁸

Loomis Ranch is more remote than any other interior camp or resort. It is thirty miles by trail from Altadena or Sierra Madre, and twenty miles from Acton, long hikes in the days before roads reached back beyond the front range of the San Gabriels.

Beginning in 1889, Captain Loomis used a site on upper Alder Creek as the center of his camping, hunting and mining activities, for he was a great mountain enthusiast. Finally in 1913, unable to bear any longer the politics involved in city jobs, Captain Loomis and his wife Grace began work on a new home.⁹ The location they chose was an ideal one; it was the very place to which the Captain had been coming for so many years. A broad level area extended for some distance on each side of the creek, yet the creek had a gully deep enough to prevent overflow and bad wash-outs in case of high water. The ranch site moreover was near enough to the head of the stream to further reduce danger from the periodic floods. In addition, the first harvests proved the fertility of the ground, and gold bearing ore was found near-by.

The greatest asset of the ranch, however, was not its excellent location, its fine soil or its mineral wealth. Rather it was Loomis himself who was starting out in this new venture after fifty active years in an unusual variety of jobs. He had taken up a number of typical frontier trades in his youth, and done each well. Soon after arriving in Los Angeles, he went into the police department and became, in rapid succession, the city's first sergeant, captain and chief.

Turning from city politics which distressed him greatly,¹⁰ Loomis managed the Evergreen Cemetery, taking time out to go to the Klondike, laid out and managed the Inglewood Cemetery, established the first perpetual care system, and contracted on his own, laying out a long section of pipe line across the mountains. These were not all of his accomplishments, but they give a picture of the life which lay behind him when he and his wife took on themselves the burden of creating a self-sustaining home in the mountains.

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

Once the house was built, the Loomises went ahead with their plans to have a ranch which required little from the outside. They planted the fields with vegetables, fruit trees and alfalfa for the stock, raised cattle and chickens for meat, and, of course, kept a good string of pack animals for supplying the ranch with equipment and the necessary staples. It was long and difficult work, but as a team, Mr. and Mrs. Loomis developed the most productive ranch in the mountains, and built a home they would not exchange for any they had had before.

Most early ranchers had difficulty in making ends meet. Both squatter and homesteader took up land expecting that it would keep them, but farming was hard in the uneven and rocky soil, the way to markets was long, suited only to pack animal transportation, supplies and materials had to be brought back in the same manner, and mountain people faced the constant threat of fire, flood and heavy snowfall, any one of which could seriously delay farming operations.

As more and more hikers followed the trails, mountain settlers began to offer food and accommodations for those who desired such arrangements. At first this service was often rendered free, but pressing finances and increasing foot traffic brought a change. Rates were reasonable, the company good, and the food excellent. Many a hiker will always remember the fine chicken at Loomis Ranch. Lou Newcomb's biscuits baked in a dutch oven were said to be as fluffy and rich as any made in the valley. And exercise and mountain air put an edge on the appetite that made good food taste better.

As the San Gabriels became known by more of the local population, and as trails into the back country were improved, campsites established and settlers came to be known for their hospitality; and as it became apparent to mountain people that properly placed resorts might provide as good a living as ranching, camps came into being. Sometimes a resort was combined with a ranch, sometimes a camp was simply a revamped mountain home, but soon a number of resorts appeared that were planned and built expressly as such.

Life was not easy for either homesteaders or resort operators. Hard work prevailed throughout the average year, even after a

camp was established; and the initial work was nearly overwhelming. A place had to be built, completely by hand and often by one or two people. All tools, supplies, materials and even the essentials for living were packed in by burro and all too often by wheelbarrow. Resourceful minds devised special swivel-saddles for maneuvering long pieces of lumber around sharp turns in the trail, as well as other ingenious methods of doing things or doing without them.

When Delos Colby was asked how he managed to pack in a complete sawmill over sixteen miles of rough trail from Altadena, he replied:

"See that flywheel?" pointing to a part of the sawmill machinery. "That was the hardest. It weighs 600 pounds. I lashed it to a long pole, each end fastened to a packsaddle on a donk's back. Nellie kept the donks going while I walked alongside to help balance the load. We had to shift it many times on short turns, and once, when it broke loose and rolled down the bank, it took me and Nellie all the next day to get it back on the trail." That is the story of practically all the heavy equipment on the ranch.¹¹

Building a house in the mountains was a task far different from building one in the valley. Native rock and timber were often used in place of prepared building materials because transportation was even a bigger job than obtaining and hand shaping local materials.

Loomis brought in cement but used sand and rocks, from the near-by stream, to form the lower half of his house walls. All beams and rafters were cut from the readily worked canyon alder, but sheathing and shakes were sawed and split five miles up the mountain at Chilao, then packed down to the building site.

Camps or cabins on the south slope of the San Gabriels were much closer to civilization and the necessary materials and supplies. But even these places required a prodigious amount of labor, time and improvisation. Walter Schneider has described some of the routine difficulties his brother encountered in building the Half Way House.

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

It took a whole summer to pack in the material on burro back and considerable ingenuity to negotiate that crooked trail with glass doors, six foot windows, brick for the chimney and finally the successful transporting of the 24-foot timbers which today support the front porch. Swivel pack saddles were devised, with rollers on which to slide the long timbers back and forth, sometimes far out over the canyon at sharp turns of the trail.¹²

Until recently, Schneider's Half Way House has remained in good condition. The Forest Service began, in 1950, to tear down the old frame building, as it was considered a fire hazard.

All mountain ventures were not undertaken by individuals. The most famous resorts in Southern California, the biggest tourist attractions to grace the southland, and cause of the wonder of all who visited them were the three mountain hotels reached by Thaddeus S. C. Lowe's great Incline and Scenic Railway.¹³ In 1891 that undertaking started as a corporation under the name of the Pasadena and Mount Wilson Railway Company, commonly called the Mount Lowe Road.¹⁴

No history of the San Gabriels could be complete without the story of this road. It was the most important, impressive and by far the most costly venture undertaken in that era of resort-hungry people. Even those who could not or would not walk, could enjoy many of nature's offerings by traveling via the trolley and incline to one of the three hotels.

Professor Lowe, developer of the military observation balloon during the Civil War, inventor and retired gentleman of fame and fortune, conceived the idea of a chain of mountain hotels reached by an electric railway. He supplied the initial capital and founded the company.

In 1895, when the Mount Lowe resort was at the zenith of its popularity, a vacationist made the entire trip from the valley to the last hotel at the end of the line as follows: First he boarded a trolley, either in Los Angeles or Pasadena—round trip fare a dollar and a half or a dollar and a quarter, respectively—and rode to Mountain Junction at the intersection of Lake Avenue and Cala-

veras Street in Pasadena. There he started on the first section of the Mount Lowe Railway.

Drawing ever closer to the mountains, the traveler wondered where in that seemingly barren mass ahead might be hidden the wooded glens he has seen advertised. But he was not to be kept in suspense long, for the railroad plunged directly into one of the canyons.

Up to this point the trip had been rather an ordinary trolley ride through city streets and residential districts. Suddenly everything became different. The city had fallen away behind and below, only a few houses dotted the landscape at the foot of the mountain, and once he had entered the canyon, civilization was out of sight.

The road wound along the bank of Rubio Canyon, a stream flowed below on one side, and on the other a precipice reached for the blue sky above. Except for the creek and trees along the water-course, the mountains still looked dry and desolate, but the traveler saw that something lay ahead which he had not anticipated from his more distant observation of the range.

A cliff dropped sharply away from the roadbed in some places, and several short bridges seemed supported on air, but all in all the passengers were favorably impressed with both the novelty and the beauty of the course, and were beginning to settle back in their seats to enjoy it, when the trolley rounded a bend and they saw before them a large and impressive white building. It was Rubio Pavilion and Hotel, the first link in Professor Lowe's chain of resorts.

Placed in a beautiful little glen in Rubio Canyon, at the junction of the electric road from the valley with the Incline, it occupied a double-decked platform which spanned the narrow gorge from wall to wall. A long series of falls, cascades and crystal pools brought a tumbling stream to and under the Pavilion and it was splendidly shaded by great trees which grew up from the bottom or overhung from the canyon walls.

Trails, bridges, plank walks and stairs took one over and around the stream, cascades and falls for half a mile through the beautiful gorge and on week-ends and gala nights 2,000 Chinese lanterns turned stream, trees and towering walls into a fairyland of light and color. The upper platform carried, besides the double tracks of the electric road, a spaci-

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

ous music hall and ball room, refreshment stands and ticket office, while in the hotel underneath was a commodious dining room, 35 by 110 feet in size and without a post to obstruct the view.

The following quotation from an issue of the *Pasadena Star* [sic] in 1894 fits very appropriately right here:

“UP STAIRS TO SLEEP”

“One day last week Hotel Rubio had more guests than it had sleeping rooms for, so they were sent up stairs one thousand and eight hundred feet to delightful sleeping apartments. At 8:00 o’clock in the morning one incline car brought them down to breakfast, while the other one took the chambermaids up to put their rooms in order. After breakfast they returned to their upstairs rooms as the maids took the other car down. And that beats the world. A hotel that can feed its guests in first class style, then send them with ease and comfort one thousand eight hundred feet upstairs to sleep, does not exist on the face of the earth except at Pasadena. But at Hotel Rubio it is now a commonplace everyday affair.”¹⁵

Some of the passengers, delighted with Rubio Hotel and perhaps a little frightened of the incline which rose abruptly from the platform, decided to stay where they were. But most got refreshments, took a better look at the Pavilion and canyon, or stood around chatting with new acquaintances as they waited for one of the cable cars to descend.

When the car bumped gently to a stop at the landing platform, the passengers, somewhat excited about the much-publicized ride ahead, climbed the loading stairs and stepped in, taking seats which faced the canyon; for they rode backward going up, admiring their view of the valley below as it became more and more distant.

The Great Incline, perhaps the most striking feature of the Mount Lowe trip, was three thousand feet long and made a direct ascent of thirteen hundred feet; and one section of the grade exceeded sixty per cent.¹⁶

Ascending the incline was an interesting experience to all aboard. The view improved with every foot of altitude gained, and many a passenger must have felt that few greater thrills could be experienced, yet there was no hazard connected with the ride.

As the car approached the summit of Echo Mountain, the grade rounded off and a great white building which stood on the very

edge of the incline came into view. It was Echo Mountain House, the second hotel in the chain.

Few resorts were more impressive or complete. Built on the end of a ridge which overlooked incline, canyon and valley, there was not a room in the establishment without a grand view. But the hotel itself was only one part of "The White City" which also had its chalet, the first part of the city to be completed, its depot, dormitory, reservoirs, machine shop, post office, powerhouse which sheltered the motors and mechanism for operation of the incline, and its observatory equipped with a sixteen inch telescope. Added features seldom found at a resort were a menagerie, a weekly newspaper¹⁷ and a magnificent three million candle power searchlight, brought from the Chicago World's Fair, which illuminated the sky nightly as it played over nearby cities.

Most passengers, having come this far on the road, wished to go all the way. Another trolley stood alongside the depot, and the level track which led around the side of the mountain was inviting. Who could resist a chance to see what lay beyond the next turn in the road? A timid traveler once saw the final stage of the trip like this.

Once safely out of the cable car . . . we smile, and think the worst is over. It is true, we see awaiting us another innocent looking electric car by which we are to go still higher; but we are confident that nothing very terrible can be experienced in a trolley. This confidence is quickly shattered. I doubt if there is anything in the world more "hair lifting" than the road over which that car conveys its startled occupants.

Its very simplicity makes it the more horrifying; for, since the vehicle is light, no massive supports are deemed essential; and, as the car is open, the passengers seem to be traveling in a flying machine. I never realized what it was to be a bird, till I was lightly swung around a curve beneath which yawned a precipice twenty-five hundred feet in depth, or crossed a chasm by a bridge which looked in the distance like a thread of gossamer, or saw that I was riding on a scaffolding, built out from the mountain into space. For five appalling miles of alternating happiness and horror, ecstasy and dread, we twisted round the well-nigh perpendicular cliffs, until, at last the agony over, we walked into the

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

mountain tavern near the summit, and, seating ourselves before an open fire blazing in the hall, requested some restorative nerve-food.¹⁸

The vacationists had reached Ye Alpine Tavern at the end of the line. It came into view as the trolley rounded the last curve in the road, and the sight of it surely compensated riders for any mental discomfort experienced en route. Like the other hotels it was a two-story building and, nestled back against a hillside and shaded in front by live oaks, was perhaps the most pleasant although the least spectacular of the three. Its location was at the very head of Millard Canyon, on the site of a spring known well to early hikers because it was such an ideal camping spot, with the cool, pure water, level ground and oaks for shade. The traveler could stay a day, a week or a month. Breakfast and lunch cost fifty cents each, dinner seventy-five, or two dollars and fifty cents a day for everything.

From its opening in 1893 until 1936 when operations were suspended, the Mount Lowe Railway ran continuously with no serious injuries to any of its passengers. Unfortunately, the enterprise itself was not free from accidents. This fabulous resort, which for many years was "visited by more tourists than even the far-famed Yosemite Valley,"¹⁹ might still be operating were it not for a series of misfortunes which were extremely damaging to the road; and so costly in the long run that the railway never returned a profit, after its running expenses were paid, either to Professor Lowe or to its subsequent owner, the Pacific Electric Railway Company.

Fire, the most dreaded enemy in the mountains, is especially tempted by a frame building, and what prize could entice the flames more than sprawling Echo Mountain House, the largest wooden building in the San Gabriels?

In his haste to see each link of the Mount Lowe resort chain finished according to a pre-conceived schedule, Professor Lowe did not always make certain that the construction measured up to satisfactory building standards; thus, in the winter of 1900, the untimely loss of the Hotel on Echo Mountain came about. Early one morning while guests slept, a fire, which had smouldered undetected

for days in heavy beams abutting the fireplace, broke out on the second floor. The blaze spread rapidly; and a staff which had no fire drills, using untested hoses of porous cotton, fought a losing battle against the flames. Since efforts to control the fire proved futile, the staff turned their attention to the removal of furniture and supplies. A survey after the disaster showed that all guests were evacuated safely and that most of the valuable provisions and costly furnishings of the hotel were saved, but Echo Mountain House was a total loss.²⁰

Five years later, during a severe winter storm, high winds lashed what was left of the White City and finished undoing man's puny work.

At the height of the storm a blast more terrific than the rest, struck the Chalet and that heavy building crumbled as though built with cards and the entire roof, turned as though on a hinge, went sailing through the air to fall on top of the power house at the head of the Incline. Fire broke out immediately and the howling gale whipped it across the mountain crest to the remaining buildings . . .²¹

Only the observatory escaped the flames.

Tragedy also befell the Rubio Pavilion. Situated in a deep chasm at the base of the incline, below its steepest grade, the hotel was crushed by an avalanche which followed a winter rain. This occurred in 1909, after fifteen years of operation. Neither the Rubio Hotel nor the White City was rebuilt because it was financially impossible to do so when the road could not even pay interest on the money already invested.

Twenty-seven years elapsed before the next misfortune, years during which the Alpine Tavern was enlarged to double its size and cabins were added to take care of vacationists who continued to regard Mount Lowe as one of Southern California's most interesting tourist attractions.

In 1936 fire again broke out, this time burning the Alpine Tavern to the ground, as well as many of the cabins and buildings about it. Rebuilding of the tavern was under consideration with the arrangements yet to be completed when that most destructive

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

of all San Gabriel Mountain floods, the March flood of 1938, swept the range and washed out so many sections of track, trestles and bridges that the entire Mount Lowe property was abandoned by its owners.

From the time the road ceased operations until its ruins were salvaged by wrecking crews, the latter stood as they had been left. During that time vandals went to work. They shattered every piece of unbroken glass, smashed all the windows in every building at both Mount Lowe and Echo Mountain, broke down doors and tore gaping holes in the walls of the frame buildings. They dismantled everything possible and took away all removable parts of any building or machine. In wrecking the trolley cars, they broke all the windows, removed all carbon and copper from the mechanisms, tore off the roofs and crushed the seats. These destroyers spared nothing in their work. They smashed the large electric motors which ran the incline, sheared the wires, removed bolts, tore bearings loose from the machinery and rolled tanks and spools of cable down the mountain side, as well as everything else that could be moved to the edge in any conceivable manner.

As a finishing touch, the vandals, who came and went until ruin was complete, threw large rocks into the center of the mirror of the searchlight on Echo Mountain, shattering this beautifully polished and finely silvered four-inch-thick piece of optical glass.

Man's destruction was worse than nature's. Man had done it with forethought and malice, he had carried tools up the steep trail to aid him, he had put ingenuity to work that would have been a credit to him on a constructive job. He had put in an incalculable amount of labor just for the pleasure of seeing another man's work crumble.

In Rubio Canyon an occasional bench suggests the old road-bed, and sections of partially hidden cement supports are the only indication of where the hotel stood. A cement powerhouse, some incline mechanism (impractical to salvage and most difficult to damage), extensive foundations, two reservoirs, level areas where buildings stood, and some hardy trees and shrubs left from the landscaping indicate the former pattern of the White City. Four miles

of roadbed, rails removed, lead the wayfarer to the site of the Alpine Tavern. Everything in brick or concrete remains, the rest is gone. Modern hikers look in wonderment at all this while the older ones view the ruins with nostalgia and sadness.

Although the grandeur that was Mount Lowe is now scattered rubble, the glory of Mount Wilson has increased with passing time. The latter peak is one of the highest points on the front range of the San Gabriels and certainly is known to more valley residents than any other. It has long had an appeal, for since 1864 when Don Benito Wilson built the first pack trail to the top, this peak has been well known and never left unoccupied for very long. The mountain is most noted as a center for astronomical observation and research; however it has also ranked high as a location for camps and resorts, second in fame only to Mount Lowe.

Who first occupied the flat summit of Mount Wilson may always remain a mystery, but even Don Benito was not the first, for the remains of two log cabins were there when he established his lumber camp.²² This natural campground is covered with cedar and pine; and was, before recent fires crossed it, relatively free of undergrowth. It commands a sweeping view of the valley, appears, from the Pasadena area, to be the dominant peak on the front range, is well supplied with water from a spring, and lies on a path of the old Indian trail which crossed the mountains. What else need there be to make it a location sure of discovery and use?

In 1888, A. G. Strain filed for a homestead there, and the following year, long before a certificate was granted him, built Strain's Camp, Mount Wilson's first crude resort. He improved and expanded the camp as the opening of the Harvard Observatory brought sight-seers to the top.

About this time, a second resort, Steil's Camp, was established on Mount Wilson. Pete Steil sold out to C. S. Martin, after which the camp was called Martin's.²³ The land soon changed hands again, making three transfers in ten years, when the Mount Wilson Toll Road Company purchased the entire top of the mountain from its owners in 1901. This company went to work quickly, and within five years built the first finished resort, which boasted not only a comfortable hotel but also many cottages.

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

Like Echo Mountain House, the Mount Wilson Hotel burned to the ground within ten years of its opening. But the blow was not fatal and the hotel was rebuilt and ready to receive guests by 1915, two years after the fire, and has been in operation ever since.

Real fame came to Mount Wilson because of the astronomical observatories which have occupied the top since 1889 when the Harvard Observatory improved the site by setting up a thirteen inch telescope and building the first dome. This was not done without considerable difficulty, since no road existed at that time and all materials and equipment had to be packed up Don Benito Wilson's old lumber trail. The Harvard observers removed their telescope from the mountain the following year, not because they failed to do significant work but for other reasons listed below.

The story has been passed down that the Mount Wilson station was abandoned by the Harvard Observers for three reasons: It was, they said, (1) inaccessible, (2) without water, and (3) infested with rattlesnakes. None of these objections has weight at the present time. They could hardly have been expected to foresee that fifty years later astronomers would be complaining that it is too easily accessible to motorists and that the observations are impaired by smoke and lights of growing towns and cities.²⁴

Although the Harvard Observatory was removed, the suitability of Mount Wilson for such work had been established. A clear sky, quiet atmosphere, freedom from extreme in temperature and proximity to large cities make it almost ideal. Despite the smoke and light from valley towns, "observations may be made on an average of 290 days per year."²⁵

In 1905, after Dr. Hale of the Yerkes Observatory of Chicago had tested the site further, the Carnegie Institution granted funds for installation of the second (Snow) telescope there.

Realizing the possibilities of the situation, the Trustees of the Carnegie Institution of Washington decided to support the new observatory as a major research department of the Institution. Dr. Hale was appointed Director and several of the staff of the Yerkes Observatory . . . joined him in pioneer work on the mountain. Plans were immediately laid for a considerable establishment both on Mount Wilson and in Pasadena.²⁶

This "considerable establishment" includes the present observatory with its one hundred-inch telescope.

Constructing the entire Carnegie project on Mount Wilson was a major task and took far more engineering, effort, dollars and time than the average person who refers to "The One Hundred Inch Telescope," or who visits the observatory, can appreciate. A fascinating story known to few, is the story of the mechanism and lens of the big "scope" which is the heart of the establishment.²⁷ The labor, foresight and care which went into every operation in the construction of the observatory on Mount Wilson, have all been repaid many times over throughout the passing years by contributions from this observatory to the science of astronomy.

Neither the astronomical development, nor the growth of resorts behind the front range of the mountains would have progressed as they did had not the Mount Wilson Toll Road been constructed, and, it was the demand for a means to these very things that helped provide the necessary impetus to so costly and difficult an undertaking. In the early '90's, Hiram Reid noted the growing interest in transportation to the mountain top.

For nearly twenty years after Pasadena was settled, it was deemed a great adventure to go up Wilson's trail and spend a night on the mountain; and this trip gradually became so popular that in 1885 and 1886, various schemes were talked of for making some shorter, easier, safer and more direct travel-way to the mountain tops [The shortest route by trail was, and still is, seven miles each way].

People mostly seemed to think and talk as if that was the only place where there was any mountain top worth going to, or at all accessible, and in 1886 a cog-wheel railroad similar to the one on Mount Washington, New Hampshire, was talked up . . . But the locating of the Harvard photographic telescope on Mount Wilson in 1889 gave a new measure of fame and interest centering at this mountain; and the difficulties which Judge Eaton had to overcome in getting that telescope, besides the heavy timbers, irons, etc., necessary for its proper housing and mechanical control, up over the old trail, led him to think seriously of trying to build a better road right up from the mouth of Eaton Canyon, and thus connect Pasadena with this mountain top in the shortest and most direct way . . .

Accordingly, Judge Eaton called a meeting June 18, 1889, at the



—Will H. Thrall collection



—Will H. Thrall collection

STURTEVANT CAMP

The recreation hall (upper) and part of the grounds (lower). Cabin of squared logs at end of badminton court is old ranger station, first building on the spot.



—Will H. Thrall collection



—Will H. Thrall collection

BALDY SUMMIT INN

Layout of the camp (upper) and one of two stone buildings for the protection of supplies from animals (lower).

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

President's room of the First National Bank, "to consider steps necessary to be taken to build a wagon road to Mount Wilson." The organization was incorporated as "The Pasadena and Mount Wilson Toll Road Company," July 12, 1889 . . . The capital stock was fixed at \$50,000, divided into 500 shares of \$100 each.²⁸

Every enterprise in the mountains encountered unforeseen difficulties. Whether the project were resort, railway or toll road, a series of misfortunes has beset all in their turn. Perhaps the unrealistic enthusiasm with which many undertakings were begun accounts partly for the troubles which often followed. The record of early building in the San Gabriels indicates that difficulties which tested men's perserverance, ingenuity and pocket books were the order of the day, and the Toll Road was no exception.

Progress was slow, shareholders dropped their interest along the way, never a dividend was paid by the foundering company. construction took longer than planned, and the capital stock had to be increased several times over. Yet some of the original stockholders stuck with the project through all the difficulties which beset it.

Will Thrall interpreted their reasons for doing so as follows:

As I have carefully studied the minute book of the Mount Wilson Toll Road Company . . . it reads to me like the dream of a few men who visioned something of great value which they must develop and make of service to them and their community.

How else to account for their persistence in the face of unsurmountable obstacles . . . The struggle year after year against increasing indebtedness, the sinking of personal fortunes in the big idea . . . which never can, never will, pay a dividend on the time and money expended.²⁹

Neither the problems encountered nor the financial difficulties involved, in any way decreased the usefulness of the road. First a trail, then a bridle path and finally a wagon road which later accommodated motor traffic, the Toll Road made the mountain top and hotel convenient for thousands of people to reach. It also made possible the establishment of the observatory there and put back-country resorts and homesteads closer to the valley by nine miles and one mountain range, thus improving both business and supply.

Since the disappearance of the Toll House, at the bottom of the road, and with the completion of the Mount Wilson spur of Angeles Crest Highway which makes the mountain top easily accessible, many have forgotten the old Toll Road. It still cuts its way across the south face of the mountains as a reminder to those who recognize it, still passes through Henniger's and Schneider's and has been cleared and made passable again since the establishment of television on Mount Wilson. But the old road is no longer open to public travel except by foot.

In comparison to the Mount Wilson Hotel and cottages or the Alpine Tavern, other San Gabriel Mountain lodgings were small in size, primitive in facilities, and less widely known. During the resort era, such limitations were not the drawbacks they might seem. It was only natural that the usual camp be far smaller than Echo Mountain House. Most resorts were simple places of livelihood, carved out of the stubborn mountain by people whose personal fortunes were those of their camp, and were not by any measure big business. While the large and more luxurious places had an appeal for many people who never would walk or ride horseback to reach a destination, they did not begin to attract everyone who went into the mountains. A large number of hikers saw the big hotels only from the outside as they walked by, but scorned such shelter, seeking instead the more primitive, more isolated and quieter resorts — or they simply unrolled their blankets on the ground at an inviting camp site.

Any one of the many small resorts could be selected as representative of those that were so amazingly alive in the first thirty years of the twentieth century. All had some characteristics in common; yet each was distinctive in one way or another, and every one is remembered fondly by those who loved it and visited it often.

The most famous year-round resort on the West Fork of the San Gabriel and one of the best loved retreats, of the interior, was Opid's Camp. From April, 1914, when Mr. and Mrs. John Opid put up the first building, until 1941, when they sold their camp after twenty-seven years of continuous service, Opid's was a real favorite.³⁰

Situated near the head of the West Fork behind the front range,

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

the camp started with a building for supplies, tents for sleeping, and outdoor stoves under the fine big-cone spruce that graced the canyon. Accommodations and facilities were obviously limited at first, but a kind of good cheer prevailed, that, blended with a handsome outdoor setting, brought the traveler back many times.

One by one buildings were constructed and the camp spread out. By 1922 it was capable of accommodating up to one hundred people. A luxurious touch was added later when a swimming pool was put in, one of the few in the mountains.

Opid's was built as the resort business approached its most prosperous years, when the number of hikers over local mountain trails ran highest. It was one of many camps that capitalized on the prevailing interest in the out-of-doors. To Southern Californians of that time, beautiful alpine scenery and the fact that a limit of trout could be caught before breakfast in almost any nearby stream were simply added incentives to those appeals already strong enough to bring great throngs close to nature on almost any week-end or holiday. Many stayed all summer.

Life was not easy for camp operators, even after they established a good name and had a fair number of campers stopping regularly. Troubles could come thick and fast. The week before Easter of 1924, one of the most disheartening adversities befell resort owners throughout the mountains that it was ever their misfortune to endure. At that time the Los Angeles County Health Department prohibited all people and all animals from entering the part of the San Gabriels which lay within the county, in order to prevent the further spread of hoof and mouth disease. The order came at a time particularly inopportune since supplies had just been laid in, in anticipation of a good Easter week. Thus many dollars worth of perishable supplies were wasted, as was the labor of packing them in. Unfortunately this was only the beginning.

Fire is an ever present danger in the mountains. No sooner was the quarantine lifted than the disastrous blaze of August, 1924, broke out in Robert's Canyon, not far from Azusa; and whipped by gale-like winds, swept all the way across the range, burning itself out far on the desert side.³¹ In the wake of the flames lay a path

of devastation; and the people of the mountains, who had left their camps, resorts and ranches to fight fire, returned to their places only to find business ruined for the remainder of the season. So went life in the mountains where strong threats of destruction by the forces of nature existed in addition to such ills as could strike anywhere. Yet most would not exchange their lot for an easier one. Fire, flood or depression, each was met with determination and usually taken in stride.

The San Gabriel River with its three forks, which comprise the most extensive canyon system in the range, certainly had its share of resorts. From 1834, when Henry Dalton, foremost pioneer of the Azusa area, purchased land from the Mexican government at the mouth of the canyon, until the present, the various courses of the San Gabriel River have been regarded as prime and accessible mountain land with numerous inviting spots for those who would seek a retreat. Early settlement of this area came about because of (1) the size and nature of the canyon, (2) its reputation for fish and game, (3) its accessibility and lack of steep and difficult pack trails as compared to other regions, and most important, (4) because of the impetus given its development by mining activity from the 1860's on.

Almost from the beginning of canyon history, mining activity has overshadowed that of many resorts and outing clubs scattered along its course. When the canyon is mentioned, an old timer's first thought is often of those lusty, boisterous, romantic yet back-breaking days during which the search for gold obscured less spectacular events and developments. None the less, many an early traveler now remembers Follows Camp, Rincon or Coldbrook most fondly. It was not until the gold-rush crowd had thinned to a trickle and until the red clay from hydraulic mining ceased to mingle with the river's water, that canyon resorts really began to flourish.

By 1896, Follows Camp on the East Fork was achieving recognition far beyond the confines of Southern California. Its success was, in a large measure, due to the energy, optimism and hard work of its proprietors, Ralph and Sarah Follows. They established, operated and expanded the camp until its twenty-odd buildings, cabins and tents made it the largest resort on the San Gabriel.³²

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

Camp Rincon opened in 1898 and soon required a daily stage from Azusa to accommodate its patrons and to bring supplies.

In 1901, Coldbrook Camp began operations, and it too warranted a daily stage within a few years. Traveling time from Azusa was about nine hours, and horse drawn stages ran up the canyon from the early 1890's until sometime during the 1920's, so great was the demand and so poor the roads for more modern transportation.³³

Crystal Lake, situated high in the canyon and above Coldbrook in an inviting area of comparatively level pine-covered land, attracted the hardy who were willing to make the long trip. Among these was a group of Occidental College students who, after a few trips to its Wawona Basin campground (which they named), decided that here was an ideal spot for a cabin.

The first trees were felled in 1908 as construction got under way on what was to become "the most pictured log cabin in the San Gabriel Range." This cabin was to give its builders a great deal of pleasure in the coming years, and to hold them together as a group for some time after college days were over. And, in order to leave their mark in more than one spot on the landscape, the group erected a handsome marker bearing a banner inscribed "Occidental" on nearby Mount Islip.³⁴

While most buildings constructed in the mountains were somewhat like the resorts, cabins or ranches that could be found in any other range, the San Gabriels also had their share of the spectacular, unusual and unique.

Mount Lowe was spectacular; it was almost overpowering when complete. Mount Wilson boasted the world's leading observatory. Yet it was left to one man to create what was possibly one of the country's most unique resorts, for while many people might think of climbing a 10,000 foot mountain peak, who would think of building a camp, and supplying and operating it, far above timberline on the windswept crown of San Antonio?

W. B. Dewey did just that. His Baldy Summit Inn consisted of two stone storage buildings to protect supplies from the then-numerous prowling animals, and tents that served as kitchen and sleeping quarters. The Inn operated during the summers of 1910-11-12, but was destroyed by fire in 1913. During this time many

an experience was recorded at that high outpost. On one occasion, eagles attempted to steal Dewey's young son as he played near camp. At another time, the temperature dropped below zero following a summer storm.

Every major canyon on the south side of the mountains had its resort; many had several. Most canyons also had a number of homes or summer cabins. All forks of the San Gabriel River had resorts, cabins or mines, and usually all three. A book could easily be filled with the history of these canyons, and of all their camps, homes and ranches. Space does not permit the story of each to be told here.³⁵

While there are few survivors of the early American period in the mountains, many people living in the San Gabriel Valley today were, during the early 1900's, building camps or running them, hunting and fishing in their favorite spots, enjoying holidays at Mount Lowe, Follows Camp, Camp Baldy and others, and hiking the trails to Switzer's, Opid's, Sturtevant's or to any of the higher peaks from San Antonio to Mount Lukens. The number of hikers on local mountain trails during this period is indicated by an interesting set of regulations established in 1919 to reduce the confusion on the Sturtevant Trail.

(a) Pack trains shall have the right of way over all horsemen and pedestrians.

(b) The trail shall not be used by any pack train not having a bell attached to at least one animal, or any pack train in charge of a person less than 18 years of age.

(c) Each southbound pack train shall be accompanied by two men, one preceding the train at a distance of approximately 500 feet, who shall warn all persons on the trail of the approach of such train, and the other following closely upon the pack train, who shall see that the animals travel close together.

(d) All northbound pack trains leaving the southern terminus between the hours of 11 A.M. and 9 P.M. shall also be accompanied by two men who shall handle the train as mentioned in article "c".

(e) No riderless or pack animals shall be turned loose without some one to accompany them on this trail.

(f) No bicycles or motorcycles shall make use of this trail.

During this congested period as many as five thousand Sturtevant

A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

Trail hikers checked through Joe Clark's Half Way House on a single three-day holiday.³⁶

It can be said that the mountains were at the peak of their popularity during the resort and hiking era; that is at the peak of their popularity in regard to being appreciated as mountains where-in camping, hiking, fishing, hunting, climbing, cabin bulding and other mountaineering activities were pursued by a large percentage of the visitors or occupants.

The day of the Indian is long gone. He has left his mark in the form of bedrock mortars, markings on rocks, buried artifacts and crude paths.

Spanish and Mexican Californians, using the range far less then their Indian predecessors, nevertheless left fading evidence of the timbering and perhaps of the mining they had done.

Later, pioneer Americans, who were more inclined to construct something lasting in the forest, left numerous indications of their activities scattered the length and breadth of the San Gabriels.

Just as each of these periods in the story of the range gave way in turn to the one that followed, so the resort and hiking era retreated before the advance of the automobile as fast as roads were built into its former sanctuaries.

The reluctant retreat of the resort and hiking era has left more signs of its heyday, than did any that went before. Resort ruins dot the map, cabins stand in most of the larger canyons, and a number of camps still operate with modest success. A network of trails connecting all major peaks, camps and streams are left today in varying degrees of repair. Intangible remains of the period are those countless recollections and memories cherished by a large number of people who knew the paths and places so well.

NOTES

1. Land title in *Patent Records*, County of Los Angeles, Bk. III, p. 203, reads as follows: That there is therefore granted by the *United States*, unto the said Henry C. Roberts, the tract of Land above described. To have and to hold, the said tract of land, with oppurtunity [sic] thereof, unto the said Henry C. Roberts, and to his heirs, and assign forever. Subject to any vested and accrued water rights, for mining, agricultural, or other purposes, and rights to ditches and reservoirs, used in connection with such water rights, as may be recognized and acknowledged by local customs, laws and decisions of courts . . . Twentieth day of March in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and eighty two, and of the

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Independence of the United States the one hundred and sixth.

By the President Chester A. Arthur

By W. H. Crook, Secretary

S. W. Clark Recorder of the General Land Office

2. *Ibid.*, Bk I, p. 23, reads as follows . . . title to a tract of land called San Francisco containing two square leagues a title more or less situated in the County of Los Angeles and State aforesaid said claim being founded on a Mexican Grant to the petitioner made on the 26th day of May, 1845, by Pio Pico Governor ad interim of the Department of the Californias and approved by the Departmental Assembly on the 9th day of June, 1846.
3. Hiram A. Reid, *op. cit.*, pp. 379, 384.
4. John Muir, *Picturesque California*, Vol. I, J. Dewing Publishing Company, New York and San Francisco, 1887, p. 139.
5. Lloyd B. Austin, "When Switzer Came," *Trails Magazine*, Winter 1936, p. 7.
6. Newcomb, *idem*. Newcomb said his first filing was contested and that he was not granted a certificate for his land until after he refiled in 1898. For other details on pioneer Newcomb and Chilao, see Chapter III.
7. "A Mountain Gem," *Trails Magazine*, Winter, 1938, pp. 11-13.
8. Mr. and Mrs. John T. Opid, interview, January 13, 1951. Mr. Opid, taking the trail over from his resort on the West Fork, was the first arrival at the scene of the fire.
9. Mrs. Grace Loomis, interview, July 13, 1951.
10. *Idem*. According to Mrs. Loomis, the Captain, who loved mountain life, often said: "The money you get out of a mine is good clean money, not like that you get out of politics."
11. "A Mountain Gem," *op. cit.* p. 12.
12. Walter S. Schneider, "The Story of Henniger Flat and the Half Way House," *Trails Magazine*, Winter, 1937, p. 15.
13. Hereafter, for the sake of simplicity in referring to Lowe's three hotels, the entire enterprise will be called "Mt. Lowe" unless a specific part of the project is being referred to.
14. Hiram A. Reid, *op. cit.*, pp. 440-54 and Will H. Thrall, "Scenic Mt. Lowe," *Trails Magazine*, Spring 1939, pp. 5-13, are the main sources used here. However it is difficult to credit all material on Mount Lowe because the resort was so widely known in Southern California that much of its history is a matter of common knowledge.
15. Thrall, *bid.*, pp. 7-8.
16. *The Story of Mount Lowe*, Pacific Electric Railway Company. 1918, p. 2.
17. *Mount Lowe Echo*, (G. Wharton James, ed.), published weekly from 1894-96 at Echo Mountain.
18. *John L. Stoddard's Lectures*, Vol. 10, Balch Brothers Company, Boston, 1898, pp. 40-41.
19. *The Story of Mount Lowe*, *op. cit.*, p. 1.
20. H. A. Doty, interview, July 5, 1951.
21. Thrall, "Scenic Mt. Lowe," *op. cit.*, p. 10.
22. J. W. Morton of Pasadena has a forty-four caliber percussion cap rifle, of the plains style, which was found on Mount Wilson prior to 1900 by his father. W. S. Morton. The story handed down in the family is that rifle, bones of a man, and bones of a bear were scattered about within a small area.
23. Arthur N. Carter, "Mt. Wilson and Sturtevant Trails from Sierra Madre," *op. cit.* p. 8.
24. Alfred H. Joy, "Astronomy on Mount Wilson," *Trails Magazine*, Summer 1937, p. 11.
25. *Ibid.*, p. 12.
26. *Ibid.*, p. 12.
27. See Appendix IV.
28. Hiram Reid, *op. cit.*, pp. 398-400.
28. Thrall, "Mount Wilson," *op. cit.*, p. 8.
30. Mr. and Mrs. Opid, *idem*.
31. *Ibid.*
32. Mrs. Sarah Jane Follows, interview, June 6, 1951.
33. Cornelius Smith, interview, January 15, 1951.
34. Robert Glass Cleland, interview, January 15, 1951.
35. See Appendix II for a list of most of the resorts of this period.
36. Robinson, *op. cit.*, pp. 28-29.

Historical Profiles

By Marco R. Newmark

XXXV

HENRY M. ROBINSON

As is stated in a book published by the Lewis Publishing Company in 1926:

“In offering an estimate of the character and achievements of Henry M. Robinson, economist and financier, it is not necessary to enter into manifold details, for in the sense that “actions speak louder than words,” a succinct statement of the positions held and the important work done by Mr. Robinson bears its own significance as indicating the broad scope of his achievements and the great influence he had wielded in connection with diplomatic affairs and with business enterprises of major importance.”

Henry M. Robinson was born in Ravenna, Ohio on September 12, 1868. He received his early education in the public schools of Ohio, after which he attended the law school of Cornell University. He was admitted to the Ohio bar and practiced his profession in Youngstown, Ohio, 1890-1900.

He married Miss Laurabelle Arms on February 14, 1894. In 1900 he established his residence in New York City, where he continued his practice.

In 1906 he came to Los Angeles. He served as President of the First National Trust and Savings Bank of Los Angeles, February 6, 1920-April 1, 1929.

In 1929 the Los Angeles Trust and Savings Bank was consolidated with the Security Trust and Savings Bank into the Security-First National Bank and Robinson was elected Chairman of the Board. He was Vice-President of the California Institute of Technology; of the Pacific Southwest Trust and Savings Bank of Los

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Angeles, and of the First Securities Company of Los Angeles. He was a director of the Union Oil Company; of the Southern California Edison Company, and of the Pacific Mutual Life Insurance Company. During World War I he served, in 1917, as a member of the National Council of Defense. In 1919 he was a member of the Supreme Economic Council at the Peace Conference in Paris; in the same year he represented the United States as a delegate to the First International Labor Conference; also in 1919 he was a member of the President's Industrial Conference. In 1920 he was Chairman of the National Bituminous Coal Commission. In December, 1923, he was one of the three American members of the Inter-Allied Reparations Commission. He was a member of Committee Number 2, which dealt with the question of the location of German wealth outside of Germany. I quote from an article in the *Los Angeles Times* at the time Robinson was appointed a member of Inter-Allied Reparations Commission:

Mr. Robinson ranks among the best known financiers of the Pacific Coast and has been closely associated with all the big moves in Southern California and the Pacific Coast for a number of years. His services on various boards and committees in the period of World War I and after the German surrender makes him the best fitted man in the West for the important appointment to membership on the Reparations Commission.

Mr. Robinson passed away on July 15, 1937.

* * *

XXXVI

MAX MEYBERG

Max Meyberg was born in Frankfort, Germany, on January 13, 1850.

In 1875, he and his brother, Moritz Meyberg, came to Los Angeles and established a crockery and glassware business which they named Crystal Palace.

Historical Profiles

On September 11, 1880, he married Miss Emma Hellman. Three children were born to them—Leo J. Meyberg, Constance Meyberg, who is the wife of the author, and Manfred Meyberg, who is President of Germain's, Inc.

In 1891, the Crystal Palace added a lighting and fixture department and in 1898, they installed a wholesale department. In 1901, the business was liquidated and Moritz Meyberg and a cousin, Eugene Meyberg, founded the Los Angeles Gas and Electric Fixture Manufacturing Company. In 1903 Max Meyberg joined the firm and in 1906 the name was changed to Meyberg Company.

In 1919 Max Meyberg sold his interest to his partners and engaged in the lighting globe business, which after his death the family turned over to the Leo J. Meyberg Company, which Leo Meyberg had founded in San Francisco in 1909. (The company opened a branch in Los Angeles in 1920). The founder of the firm died on August 30, 1927.

On June 1, 1954, the firm was taken over by the Radio Corporation of America. They do an extensive business in radios, radio equipment, lighting globes and electric household appliances.

Meyberg had a part in an interesting chapter of Los Angeles history. In 1894 business conditions here were stagnant. In that year the Merchants Association, which had been organized the previous year, called a meeting for the purpose of devising ways and means for improving conditions. At that meeting Meyberg proposed a week of festivities with the object of attracting visitors to Los Angeles from the Midwinter Fair then being conducted in San Francisco. The suggestion was adopted; the coming occasion was dubbed La Fiesta de Los Angeles, and Meyberg was appointed Director General. The festivities consisted of a gala theatre party, a concert, a grand ball and florally decorated vehicle parades. Some of the vehicles were trucks entered by business firms. A saloon keeper asked permission to enter a truck, on which was to be a barrel of whiskey. There was considerable opposition but eventually permission was granted.

A picturesque feature of the parade was a highly ornamented

replica of a dragon which was carried by forty Chinamen hidden by draperies hanging from the dragon's sides; and they trudged along with a peculiar side movement which gave the impression that the bedecked creature was crawling, reptile fashion, down the street.

Presiding over the social activities of the fiesta was a queen, Mrs. Ozra W. Childs, and a bevy of young ladies who served as her ladies-in-waiting.

The climax of the fiesta was an impromptu feature called All Fools Night. Masked revellers marched up and down the streets engaging in ridiculous antics which caused uproarious laughter.

The fiesta fully accomplished its purpose. Large numbers of visitors did come from the Midwinter Fair to Los Angeles. They spent money lavishly while here; business revived, and the merchants were inspired with a new enthusiasm. As a result, in 1896, the Merchants Association, which had been organized in 1893, consolidated with the previously organized Manufacturers Association into the Merchants and Manufacturers Association.

Indeed it has been conceded that the fiesta was in many respects an important element in the growth and development of Los Angeles.

Mr. Meyberg passed away on October 14, 1934.

* * *

XXXVII

DR. WALTER LINDLEY

Dr. Walter Lindley was born in Monrovia, Indiana, on January 13, 1852. In 1866 the family moved to Minneapolis, Minnesota. Here, Walter attended grammar and high school, working successively during vacations in a flour mill, a woolen mill and a book store. He began teaching in the public schools in 1869 and thus accumulated enough money to begin the study of medicine. He

Historical Profiles

enrolled in the Philadelphia School of Anatomy in 1873 and then spent one vacation traveling around the country for a wholesale cutlery firm. He next attended the Long Island College Hospital, in Brooklyn, graduating in 1875. During his last year at the hospital he was ambulance surgeon of Brooklyn, in which position he acquired a knowledge of surgery.

In 1875 he came to Los Angeles and began the practice of medicine.

In 1877 he was president of the first young men's Republican club to be organized in Los Angeles. In 1881 he was president of the Los Angeles County Medical Society, later changed to Los Angeles County Medical Association.

In 1880 and 1881 he was superintendent of the Los Angeles County Hospital, the name of which was subsequently changed to Los Angeles County General Hospital.

In 1882 he spent four months in the hospitals of New York. In 1884, having returned to Los Angeles, he was elected County Physician and so served for a year and a half.

In 1884, also, he and doctors Joseph Kurtz and Joseph P. Widney began the publication of *Southern California Practitioner*, of which Dr. Lindley was manager and editor.

In 1885 he was one of the founders of the Medical College of the University of Southern California, in which he occupied the chairs of obstetrics and gynecology. (In 1920 the college went out of existence but in November, 1928, its functions were restored and since then have been conducted on the university campus.)

In 1886 Dr. Lindley returned to New York, where he spent another few months in the hospitals of that city. During his stay there he read a paper before the Kings County Medical Society of Brooklyn. The subject was *Southern California: A Climatic Sketch*. The paper was published in twenty-eight journals in the United States and was translated into German.

In 1888 Dr. Lindley and Dr. Joseph P. Widney published *California of the South*. In 1933 John Stevens McGroarty published

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

a five volume historical work and no doubt not knowing of the Lindley-Widney book gave it the same title.

In 1889 Dr. Lindley was elected president of the State Medical Society (of California), an office he held for a number of years.

It was Dr. Lindley who suggested the founding of a reform school for boys. Founded on February 12, 1890, it was named Whittier Reform School (later changed to Fred Mellis School for Boys). Dr. Lindley was the superintendent for a number of years and then the chairman of the board of directors.

He was president of the Los Angeles Humane Society in 1895. For a number of years he was also president of the National Conference of Charities and Corrections.

He was prominent in the public life of the city. He was City Health Officer in 1878; on the Board of Education, 1879-1881; on the Board of Freeholders in 1887; on the Public Utilities Commission, 1906-1909, and on the Board of Library Directors 1917-1923. This was his last public service. During the last year of his term he passed away on January 24, 1922.

* * *

XXXVIII

MADAME CAROLINE SEVERANCE

Caroline Severance, daughter of Orson and Caroline Maria Seymour, was born in Canandaigua, New York, on January 12, 1820. She received her early education in private schools on Owasco, New York, and in the Bassett Sisters School in Auburn, New York. She next attended a female seminary at Geneva, New York, from which she graduated as valedictorian of her class in 1836.

On August 27, 1840, she married Theodore C. Severance, a Cleveland banker. They lived in Cleveland until 1855, when they moved to Boston, at that time the cultural capital of the United States, where, in 1868, she founded the New England Women's Club, the first women's club in America.

Historical Profiles

During their residence there she established friendships with John Greenleaf Whittier, the William Lloyd Garrisons, Louisa M. Alcott, Elizabeth Peabody, Julia Ward Howe, Florence Nightingale, Susan B. Anthony and Lucy B. Stone. Through the influence of the last named two she became interested in women's suffrage, in behalf of the introduction of which in the United States she became an ardent champion.

In this connection, it is of interest to note that when California gave women the right to vote in 1911, Madame Severance was the first of her sex in Los Angeles to take advantage of the newly won privilege — in the election on October 11 of that year.

In 1875, the Severances moved to Los Angeles. Here they built a home which they named *El Nido* (Spanish for "The Home"). It was located on Adams Boulevard and Severance Street, near St. James Park. *El Nido* became famous as the locale for notable literary, sociological, and philanthropic gatherings; and it was here that the first Unitarian services in Los Angeles were held, informally, from March, 1877, until, two months later the Severances, with the co-operation of William A. Spalding, the historian, and Charles A. Ellis, founder of the Ellis Singing Club, organized a congregation.

In 1878, Madame Severance organized the Los Angeles Women's Club, but, lacking sufficient support, the club soon gave up. Not, however, Mrs. Severance. On April 16, 1891, she called a meeting for the purpose of discussing the starting of another club. The organization meeting was held on Friday, May 1. At this meeting, the committee on a name suggested that the club be named for its founder. Madame Severance, however, declined the honor, so, instead, for an obvious reason, it was named Friday Morning Club. Madame Severance was elected president and served until 1894, when, on May 25, she was elected President Emeritus.

As early as 1877 she began to interest the people of Los Angeles in kindergarten instruction, which had recently been introduced in Boston under the name of the "New Education." She induced Miss Emma Marwedel, a trainer of kindergarten teachers in Washington, to come to Los Angeles and introduce the system here. Miss Marwedel opened a small school, which was attended by twenty-

five children and three young ladies who had agreed to study to become teachers, among the latter being Miss Kate Smith (Kate Douglas Wiggin), who became a protégée of Madame Severance, and resided for some time with her at *El Nido*.

In 1878, Madame Severance founded the Free Kindergarten Association, and it was this organization which brought about the introduction of the kindergarten into the public schools. In 1889, the little private kindergarten was taken over by the city schools as an experiment and in 1895 was made a permanent part of our educational system.

Madame Severance was a member of the Board of Library Directors, 1890-1894.

In recording her death on November 10, 1914, we recall her philosophy of life as she herself expressed it in a few simple words:—

“My country is the world —
All men are my brothers —
To do good my religion.”

The entire career of Madame Caroline Severance from young womanhood to the very end of her pilgrimage was a beautiful and inspiring exemplification of this creed.



CORRECTION

December, 1955, issue of the QUARTERLY page 372, paragraph 3, should read: “In January, 1866, he married Miss Ida Felbert. Five children were born to them—Carl Kurtz, who practiced with his father; William Kurtz; Millie Kurtz, who married R. L. Horton; Christine and Catherine.”

Book Reviews

JOURNAL OF LT. THOMAS W. SWEENEY, 1849-1854—*Edited by* Arthur Woodward, (Westernlore Press, Los Angeles 41, California, 1956.) Pp. 278, photos, index, bibliographical notes, 350 copies only, \$7.50.

This remarkable diary of Sweeny, enriched by an introduction and comprehensive notes of Arthur Woodward, is Great West and Indian Series—VII, printed on excellent paper and attractively bound with Maroon cloth, gold stamped and embossed.

Sweeny was born in Ireland on Christmas 1820, came to America with his widowed mother in 1832, survived a perilous ducking in mid Atlantic where he was fished out after thirty-five minutes in the water from the time he was swept overboard. Educated in New York City, apprenticed to a publishing house, later with Gould, Banks & Co., by 1846 he volunteered for the Mexican War as a second lieutenant and landed at Vera Cruz on January 8, 1847, fought in the battles of Cerro Gordo (where he received his name of "Fighting Tom") and Churubusco, where he received the wound which cost him his right arm. He next fought in the Indian wars, notably the Sioux campaign, returned to less active work and next entered the Civil War where at the Battle of Shiloh he received a fourth wound but recovered and continued in nine battles ending with the Battle of Atlanta in 1864. Mustered out as a brigadier-general of volunteers, he continued in the service till 1869. His Diary sets forth his experiences on the Colorado, his description of the Yuma Indian leaders of the 1850s is invaluable and the general contempt in which he held some of his superiors mark him as an officer of discernment.

Enough concerning the career of Lt. Sweeny. His descriptions of Rio de Janeiro, the voyage around the Cape of Horn, his stay at Valparaiso, his life at Yuma and his contacts with the Indians, especially the Rose of the Colorado, the various camps established near the Colorado, the activities of the military along the border

and whatever happened from day to day up to December 11th, 1853 make fascinating reading.—G.E.M.

* * *

AN AMERICAN IN CALIFORNIA—*The Biography of William Heath Davis, 1822-1909.* By Andrew F. Rolle. (Henry E. Huntington Library, San Marino, California 1956.) Pp. 143, photos, descriptive bibliography of mms. index. \$4.25.

A review of this book to those who heard its author, Dr. Rolle at our September 25th meeting, will seem quite superfluous but to others it can be pointed out that the author treats of the different decades through which Davis lived in such a way as to give a background of the times as well as the personal life of his subject.

Born of an American father and a Hawaiian mother in the Island of Oahu, Davis lived his first sixteen years on the island though meantime trips to San Francisco (then Yerba Buena) by his uncle's ships acquainted him with California. After an apprenticeship to his uncle he found himself in business, formed successful partnerships and was a wealthy man in his own right before 1850. His fortunes with the early governors, with Fremont, Sloat and Stockton and the large ranch owners throughout California make interesting reading, indeed here we have a biography like a novel. His marriage with Maria Jesus Estudillo of San Leandro gave him social acceptance in the best families of the day. His partnership with Carter increased his fortune but Carter's death was a severe blow followed by the San Francisco fire of 1851, wherein he lost heavily. The founding of American San Diego was his next misadventure where he sunk thousands in building a wharf and a city. Indeed his claims for war damage against the government after the promotion had failed led to enormous travel expenses for witnesses and not until after 1885 did Congress pass the necessary legislation to partially reimburse him. Now he returns to his father-in-law's estate in San Leandro and following the elder man's death manages the Estudillo properties. Then came the squatters difficulties, the impass between California and American land law and titles and finally selling his holdings and moving to Oakland where several years were spent in different pursuits to feed and clothe his family. The he returned to San Francisco and took up

Book Reviews

the writings of his "Great Manuscript." The earthquake and fire gutted the building in which he worked and most of his writings disappeared; over eight-four years old he still planned to restore his work. As another reviewer says "As ship and londowner, trader, civic official, town founder, and ranchoero, Davis's career faithfully mirrors the role he and his contemporaries played in paving the way for California's transition from frontier province to modern state." — G.E.M.

Activities of the Society

MEETING

Tuesday, September 25, 1956

President Gustave O. Arlt called the meeting to order and after a few introductory remarks of welcome following the summer vacation period reviewed briefly the action taken at the recent Directors meeting of September 17.

Referring first to the health of former secretary, Mrs. dePackman and her family, he then introduced the new Executive Secretary, Guy E. Marion, who had come to work on August 15, 1956. Mrs. Marion was also presented.

President Arlt related what had transpired at the Directors meeting, expressing regret at the resignation of Past President Austin as a Director, announcing that the Standing Committees had been reviewed and that a new one had been appointed upon Membership under Director K. L. Carver as Chairman. A new member in the person of Dr. Glenn S. Dumke was introduced.

Turning to the program of the evening he presented as the speaker Dr. Andrew F. Rolle, assistant professor of History at Occidental College, who gave his views upon biography and discussed the life and times of William Heath Davis, 1822 to 1909, ship and landowner, trader, civic official, town founder, ranchero as well as writer in his declining years, relating his life to California history during his long career.

After a most interesting hour the meeting was adjourned to the informal refreshment period with Mrs. Arlt and Mrs. Rolle presiding at the urns. Many conversations between members and guests demonstrated the enjoyment of the refreshment hour.

Activities of the Society

LOS ANGELES' BIRTHDAY FIESTA

Our president, Dr. Arlt was chairman of the Los Angeles Birthday Fiesta Committee to commemorate the founding of el Pueblo on September 4, 1781. Miss Grace Stoermer, one of our directors was a member of the committee.

The climax of the 175th birthday celebration was a fiesta at the Plaza on Monday evening, September 4th. During a concert by the Southern Pacific band, a Southern Pacific train with an old-fashioned steam locomotive, arrived at the Plaza from the River Station bringing many participants in period costumes.

With Dr. Arlt presiding, Mayor Poulson gave an entertaining address, followed by other speeches, orchestral music, singing, Spanish dances and square dances.

This is a delightful annual event under the stars at the old Plaza.

* * *

FIRST CENTURY FAMILIES

The 18th annual luncheon of the First Century Families was held at the Statler Hotel on September 24th with about 750 attending. Miss Mary Foy is chairman emeritus, Mrs. Charles M. (Charlotte Workman) Masson presided and Tomás Workman Temple was master of ceremonies.

Our director, W. W. Robinson gave one of the principal addresses: "The Rancho History of the San Fernando Valley." Our Society was represented also by Dr. Arlt and F. B. Putnam.

* * *

WIDNEY HALL

The original University of Southern California building was dedicated as Widney Hall at a ceremony at the university on October 5th. The building, recently moved to 36th Street, will continue as the School of Music. It is the oldest college building in Southern California and has been in use continuously since 1880.

A beautiful old (1871) oil painting of Judge Robert M. Widney, a gift of the San Bernardino County Bar Association was unveiled after an interesting biographical sketch of Judge Widney's

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

life by President Fred Fagg, Jr. He reviewed Judge Widney's long struggle to establish the university.

Widney Hall was dedicated as a state historical landmark last year as the result of the initiative of one of our Society's directors.

Mrs. Boyle (Frances Widney) Workman, Judge Widney's daughter, and several other members of the family attended. Our Society was represented by our treasurer, F. B. Putnam.

Hellman Way and Downey Way were dedicated last year; Childs Way will be dedicated in the near future. These honor the three men who gave 308 lots in 1879 resulting in the establishment of the university.

Gifts to the Society

In each issue of THE QUARTERLY there appears a list of the donors and gifts made currently to the Society.

The Society is making an especial effort to build up its collection of historic materials, such as diaries, letters, account books, early newspapers, theatre and other programs, pictures of early-day life in California and costumes. We need your help.

Many members having treasured ancestral keepsakes were impelled to give them to the Society because of the realization that in private possession they would, sooner or later, disappear or deteriorate, whereas, in the custody of the Historical Society of Southern California they will be preserved indefinitely.

MARCO R. NEWMARK,
Chairman, Committee on Gifts and Bequests

JOHN P. DOBBINS: Presented 34 volumes of the Long Beach Daily Press, consisting of four volumes per year for the years 1909 to 1912 inclusive, and six volumes per year for the years 1913 to 1915 inclusive. This set of old issues of the newspaper of a neighboring city should prove of value for research purposes to those studying the current events of the time of the Wilson administration and local affairs of that time.

New Members

Following is a list of new members who have recently joined
The Historical Society of Southern California:

MR. NORRIS BOSTWICK
MISS AUGUSTINE DALLAND
DR. GLENN S. DUMKE
MR. DANIEL J. GRANT, JR.
MR. RICHARD A. GRANT
MR. CHESTER L. HOGAN
MR. PAUL F. MATTOON
MR. RUTH POWELL
CHUCK POWELL
MR. GEORGE W. RETZER, JR.
MR. DOUGLAS F. RICHARDSON
MISS BELLE F. SIEGEL
MRS. BIRGER TINGLOF
MRS. GEORGE V. WRIGHT
MR. JOSEPH W. WOLFSKILL
MR. AND MRS. JACOB F. ZANELLA

Publications
of the
Historical Society of
Southern California

2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California
DUnkirk 2-5582



1892 — Annual Containing the Sutro
Documents with translations - - each \$3.00

1931 — One Hundred Fiftieth Anni-
versary Special Publication
(Annual for 1931) - - - - each \$5.00

All other numbers of Annual
Publications - - - - - each \$2.50

A limited number of sets of Annuals
(1892 - 1934, inclusive) are
available - - - - - per set \$75.00

These sets do not include An-
nuals for 1895, 1924 or 1933,
which are out of print.

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to
members - - - - - per run \$8.00

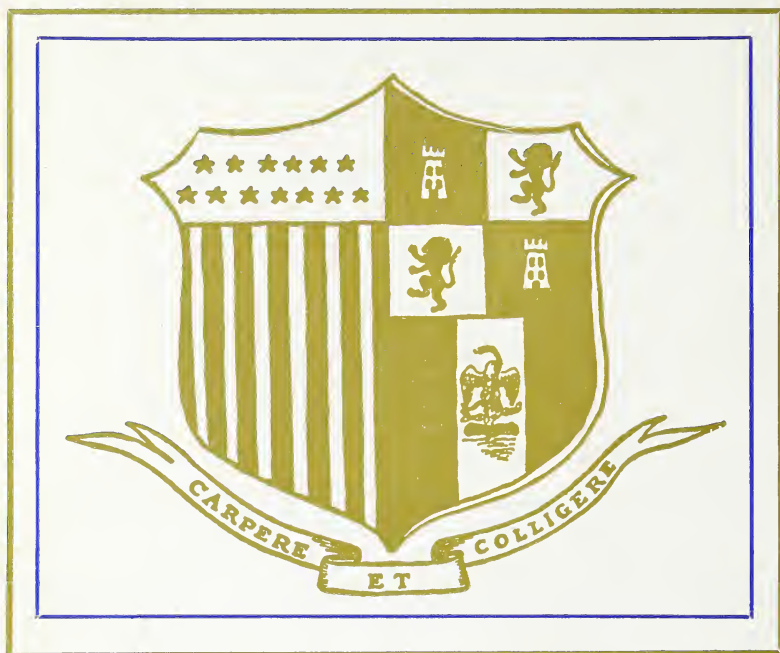
Individual single numbers to
members - - - - - each \$2.00

Individual double numbers to
members - - - - - each \$3.00

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to
non-members - - - - - per run \$10.00

Individual single numbers to
non-members - - - - - each \$3.00

Individual double numbers to
non-members - - - - - each \$4.00



December, 1956

Vol. XXXVIII — No. 4

The

Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY



—Photo courtesy Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

MRS. C. MODINI-WOOD

In costume as Fiesta Queen in 1895. (See "Music in Los Angeles" page 307.)



THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA was organized in 1883, and has enjoyed a record of continuous activity for over half a century. Commencing in 1886, and each year until 1935, the Society issued an Annual Publication. In 1935 this *Quarterly* was initiated. It is published at Los Angeles, California, each March, June, September and December.

The purposes of this Society are to preserve and protect the archives and historic sites of the Southwest, with particular stress on Southern California; to publish material of permanent historic interest and significance; to assist and encourage all persons and organizations engaged in similar activities; to hold regular monthly meetings in Los Angeles, except during the summer months, and at least once a year to gather in a pilgrimage to some spot of historic significance.

The Society welcomes to its membership all persons who are in sympathy with its aims. It derives its entire income from the dues and gifts of members, and all regular publications are offered to members without further charge.

It is the aim of the Editorial Board to render this *Quarterly* a publication of general historical interest. Suggestions and criticisms will be welcomed, and all persons, whether members of the Society or not, are invited to submit for the consideration of the editors original articles, old letters, documents, maps and other material bearing upon the history and development of this region.

* * * * *

Address articles, stories, books for review, and all material to appear in the QUARTERLY, and general Society correspondence to:

THE SECRETARY,
THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA
2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California

The
Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY



*The Home of the Historical Society of Southern California
2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California*

The
Historical Society of Southern California

QUARTERLY

VOLUME XXXVIII

December, 1956

NUMBER 4

CONTENTS:

MUSIC IN LOS ANGELES	
<i>By Henry Winfred Splitter</i>	307
LOS ANGELES COUNTY SUBSIDY	
A REPRINT OF AN ELECTION PAMPHLET	
<i>Written by R. M. Widney in 1872</i>	347
HISTORICAL PROFILES	
<i>By Marco R. Newmark</i>	363
XXXIX—JUNIPERO SERRA	
XL—THE DOMINGUEZ FAMILY	
A HISTORY OF THE SAN GABRIEL MOUNTAINS	
(CONCLUSION)	
<i>By Charles Clark Vernon</i>	373
BOOK REVIEWS	385
ACTIVITIES OF THE SOCIETY	389
GIFTS OF THE SOCIETY	392
INDEX FOR VOLUME XXXVIII	
<i>Compiled by Carroll Spear Morrison</i>	394

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA QUARTERLY, official publication of the *Historical Society of Southern California*, 2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California, is issued four times each year during the months of March, June, September and December. Annual membership \$10.00. Entered as Second Class Matter at the Post Office at Los Angeles, California.

The Historical Society of Southern California

FOUNDED NOVEMBER 1, 1883

1956

OFFICERS:

GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *President*
EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Vice-President*
FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Treasurer*
MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Curator*
ANA BEGUE DE PACKMAN, *Secretary Emeritus*

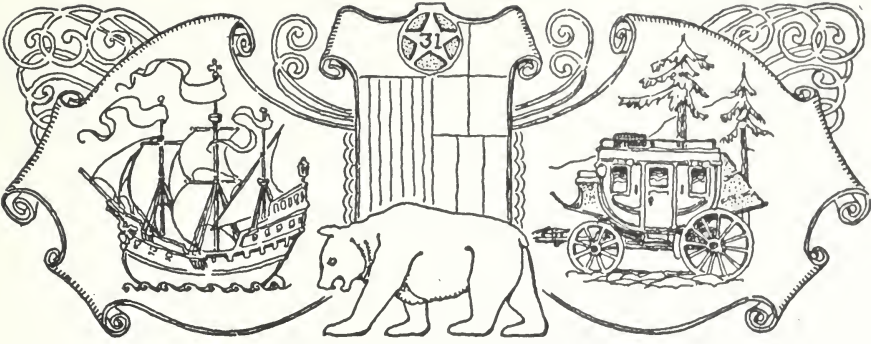
DIRECTORS:

K. L. CARVER	MRS. FREDERIC C. RIPLEY
MRS. EDWARD A. DICKSON	W. W. ROBINSON
FREDERICK F. HOUSER	MRS. MARSHALL STIMSON
OSCAR LAWLER	MISS GRACE S. STOERMER

GUY E. MARION, *Executive Secretary*

STANDING COMMITTEES:

- Executive Committee:* GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; Edmond F. Ducommun, Oscar Lawler, Frank B. Putnam, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, W. W. Robinson.
- Program Committee:* FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Chairman*; Rev. Msgr. James E. Dolan, Colin M. Gair, John Plummer.
- Publication Committee:* GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; Dr. Robert G. Cleland, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, W. W. Robinson, Dr. Henry Wagner.
- Membership Committee:* K. L. CARVER, *Chairman*; Dr. Glenn S. Dumke, Lorrin L. Morrison.
- Gifts Committee:* MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Chairman*; Richard O'Neill, Jr., Mrs. Lucy Gage Rand, Mrs. Marshall Stimson, Mrs. Robert Tipton, Miss Marguerite Winston, Mr. H. H. West, Mrs. John J. Wolfskill.
- Landmarks Committee:* EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun, Clement J. Gagliano, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Marco R. Newmark, Frank B. Putnam, Edward P. Ripley, Robert Raphael, Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman, David I. Worsfold, Ernest Yorba.
- Hostesses of Social Hour:* MRS. EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Mrs. B. Sabichi Mitchell, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, Mrs. Ernest Yorba.



GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Editor*

The Historical Society of Southern California QUARTERLY for December, 1956

Music in Los Angeles

By Henry Winfred Splitter



MUSIC WAS POPULAR IN LOS ANGELES of the 1850's and 1860's. The traditional Spanish California strumming of guitars by moonlight found typical American competition when a brass band was organized here in 1867. A band was activated at St. Vincent's College in 1869, and directed by F. A. Maynard. Most popular of all musical forms, however, was song. Sunday schools sang clearly and exuberantly then as now; while by moonlight and otherwise, young people and their elders sweet-adelined as they do today.

Here are some popular song titles of 1864: *We Are Coming, Father Abraham*; *Where Liberty Dwells is my Country* (by Plumley); *Why Have My Loved Ones Gone?* (Stephen C. Foster); *Freedom, Truth and Right* (by Carl Heinemann, with English and German words). In lighter mood were: *I Will Be True To Thee*; *A Penny For Your Thoughts*; and *Little Jenny Dow*.¹

Best loved of current songs, at least by pro-Union families, was the famous *John Brown's Body*. This expressed the strain of vigorous idealism that ran in Yankee and immigrant blood during these outwardly materialistic years. Both during and after the War it was the center alike of flaming enthusiasm and bitter hatred.

Pro-Confederate spirit was strong in Los Angeles, and several times, local military insurrection appeared not unlikely. Expressive of Southern sentiment was this editorial paragraph that was printed in the *Los Angeles News* in 1866, after the defeat of the Confederacy. It outlines a problem that today is as violently controversial as ever:

Surely, John Brown's spirit has been avenged. Yet it has not been satisfied. He during his lifetime sought to give the Negro the ballot and to make him his master's equal politically and socially. Until that is accomplished, his soul will march on, his spirit will not down, will not be allayed. New England announces *John Brown's Body* to be her most popular ballad; her people shout it, her priesthood pray it, her statesmen and orators advocate and vote it, and it is New England and New England witch insanity wherever and by whomsoever uttered. White people beware of your fate! John Brown's body lies a-mouldering in the grave, but his soul goes marching on.²

Germans have long been recognized as a music-loving nation, and its representatives in Los Angeles carried on this musical tradition. In 1859, a German society, the Teutonia, was organized, its chief purpose, apart from social pleasures, being the cultivation of singing. The Teutonians gave freely of their talented services in benefit performances for the Protestant church-building fund, the Library Association, and the fair and exhibition sponsored by the Sisters of Charity. After a time a number of Teutonia members seceded, and formed a new society, called the *Eintracht* (Harmony). However, the *Eintracht*, despite its name, became involved in financial embarrassment by reason of the purchase of a bass viol. Eventually, its members were received back into the Teutonia, bass viol and all.³

Germans were also prominent as music teachers in Los Angeles in these early decades. Musical instruction was given in the nearby San Gabriel Mission public school by 1869, but in Los Angeles public schools not until the 1880's. Music was usually a part of the curriculum of the better private schools.⁴

The first organ in Los Angeles was probably the reed instrument sent here from San Francisco in 1858 for use in the Protestant church presided over by the Reverend Boardman. Mrs. General Winfield Scott Hancock, wife of the local Army commandant,

Music in Los Angeles

played the organ, and also trained a vocal quartet of considerable power and finesse. This musical part of the service helped bring the church a sizeable congregation.⁵

Popular in Los Angeles as elsewhere during the 1850's were so-called "musical boxes," a species of hand organ, which played tinkling bits from opera, tunes for polkas and waltzes, and national airs.⁶

These musical boxes would have fascinated the Mojave Indian chiefs and their entourage who in 1859 visited Los Angeles and were entranced by the piano playing of Mrs. General Hancock. She, in tune with the General's effort to impress the chiefs with American might and technology, did her part by playing the piano for her uncouth but important guests. They listened spell-bound, and would have kept her at the "music table," as they called it, from early dawn to dark if she could have been persuaded to do so. Gifts of cast-off clothing had been made to the dusky guests, and on one occasion she was entertaining them with *The Girl I Left Behind Me*, and other tunes they were familiar with from the drummers and fifers at Fort Mojave. She ceased tinkling the keys for a moment, and turning about, was nearly overcome by finding her audience mostly unclothed and in the process of changing into the garments recently given them.⁷

Spanish Californians continued development of the music that had long been an important part of their culture. Ancient hymns or *alabados* were still sung at dawn by nearly every native Californian family. Bess Adams Garner tells how early one spring morning in 1861 Don Ygnacio Palomares stood in the doorway of his adobe ranch-house, just as the first faint glow of sunrise lit the east, and raised his voice in the traditional *alabado*, in translation as follows:

*Come, O sinners,
Come, we will sing
Tender hymns
To our Refuge,
Singers at dawn
From the heavens above
People all regions;
Gladly we too sing.*

"Sleepily and unwillingly, or joyously, or gently, each according

to his or her temperament, his family joined their voices, dressed themselves, and hastened to the large living room or *sala* where Don Ygnacio led their morning prayers. Usually it was not yet fully light when breakfast was over and the family scattered to the tasks of the day.”⁸

Worthy of mention also is the Church music sung in the San Gabriel Mission and probably in other Catholic churches. Extant are sheets of parchment in the Coronel collection,⁹ on which are hand-printed the words and accompanying musical notes of certain church services. The work is done in a very artistic manner, reputedly by Indian neophytes.

By the 1870's, even before the coming of the railroad, concert singers and instrumentalists of fair repute and adventuresome spirit, occasionally arrived here by steamer from San Francisco. Local amateurs were at this time often employed as platform assistants at the performance. This was the case on a March evening of 1872 when Signorina Adelina Frenchel, the “celebrated” prima donna, and Signor Albert Frenchel, the “world-renowned” pianist, presented themselves for the approval of local connoisseurs. The programme was as follows:

Part First

- 1st. Grand FantasiaThalberg
From the opera Elixir de Amour, performed on the
piano by Signor Frenchel.
- 2nd. Grand CavatinaOpera Ernani
Sung by Signorina Frenchel.
- 3rd. Operatic MedleySelected
By Mr. J. Strelitz, [a local tailor], violin with piano
accompaniment.
- 4th. Celebrated Rondo from opera Lucretia Borgia.

Part Second

- 1st. CavatinaOpera Ernani
Sung by Signorina Frenchel.
- 2nd. Casta DivaOpera Norma
Performed on the piano with the left hand alone by
Signor Frenchel.
- 3rd. Popular Spanish SongSelected
By Curito de Carmona.
- 4th. Irish DiamondsWillie Pope
Piano solo by Mrs. Weldon.

Music in Los Angeles

Part Third

- 1st. OvertureOpera Semiramus
Piano, four-handed, Mrs. Weldon and Signor Frenchel.
- 2nd. La Gioga Grand WaltzStrakosch
Sung by Signorina Frenchel.
- 3rd. Polka de Concert and Carnival of VeniceSelected
- 4th. Habanera—El Juicio FinalOpera Carmen¹⁰

All the above performers assisting the two Frenchels appear to have been Los Angeles amateurs. Their lack of polish and their possible nervousness were perhaps intended to set off the smooth finish of the two professionals. Friends and well-wishers of the local people would also tend to increase the size of the audience. Furthermore, by identifying the success of musical Angelenos with that of outsiders, a spirit of amiable cooperativeness was easily established. At a second recital by the same principals, the following amateurs were reported to have had a part: Mrs. Weldon, Mr. Mendel Meyer, Mrs. DeWitt C. Lawrance, and Mr. and Mrs. Strelitz. The attendance, none the less, was described as small but select.¹¹

In October, 1873, Madame Anna Bishop Schultz, in the course of a farewell tour of the United States, touched briefly at Los Angeles. This lady, however, came accompanied by her own musical subordinates, these persons being designated as "Mr. Alfred Wilkie, English tenor; L. Gottschalk, baritone of reputation; and Frank Gilder, a pianist of celebrity." Local performers were thus left to gnaw their fingernails in irritation. Four well-attended concerts featured their stay here. The audiences were genuinely thrilled by such favorites as *John Anderson My Jo*, *The Last Rose of Summer*, *The Harp That Once Through Tara's Halls*, and the aria "Infelice" from *Ernani*.¹²

During the 1870's, too, occasional opera companies of indifferent reputation began to drop into town from time to time. Madame Fabbri-Mueller presented a program of operatic arias in 1873; and the next year, 1874, the first complete opera ever heard here, *Don Pasquale*, was presented by a five-person company.¹³ A recurring favorite with these wandering companies was the opera *Ernani*.

Pianists sometimes favored the city with their presence. In the autumn of 1876, we are told, "Mr. Espinosa, an eminent pianist,

who took the first prize at the Paris Conservatory, has arrived at Los Angeles. He comes to our city under the auspices of the French consul, Mr. Meerenhout."¹⁴ On a hot August night of 1879 Madame Jaffa displayed her talent at a local hall; the *Herald* spoke of her as a pianist "whose reputation is world-wide."¹⁵

Perhaps the most enthusiastically received and popular of the professional musicians appearing here in the 1870's were the Jubilee Singers, a negro group, who came in January, 1876, with a concert mainly of Old South Negro hymns and melodies. Among the songs sung were *The Mocking Bird*, *Wasn't Dat A Broad Ribber*, *Rock My Soul in the Bosom of Abraham*, and *Massa's in the Cold, Cold Ground*. There were also semi-extemporaneous chants of the sort that were sung sometimes for two or three hours at a stretch in Southern colored camp meetings:

A typical stanza from one hymn was:

I'm a Methodist bred and a Methodist born,
Rock-a my soul;
And when I'm dead there's a Methodist gone,
Rock-a my soul.

And a stanza from another:

You may go to the East, you may go to the West,
You may go from do' to do',
But if you don't get religion,
The devil will get you sho'.

Encore followed encore,—the melody, the golden harmony of voices, and the humor, entranced capacity audiences. Even the hard-headed reporter who had intended to listen to a few songs and then go on to other assignments, remained to hear another song and yet another, until the end of the program. Said he:

The entertainment was unique, and only those who have witnessed the slave in his home and at camp meeting in the olden time could have experienced any parallel. It was funny and pathetic, wild and weird, altogether most inimitable. No white company could have sung those songs with the same effect. One old colored lady who sat near us, with smiles and tears blended on her face, would now and then join in the choruses, quite forgetful that she was not back in the old cabin home.¹⁶

Occasionally, it is true, applause was given for a mere com-

Music in Los Angeles

mercialized eccentricity, or humor of doubtful aesthetic merit, as in the case of Eddie Fox, a violinist. Says the *Herald*:

Mr. Fox's performance on the violin is of an exceptional order of merit. This fine instrument has always been recognized as interpreter of the finest human emotions, but in Mr. Fox's hands it is not only melodious, but a ventriloquist as well. He even makes the brute creation speak a language intelligible to man. His waking of the pigs in the morning is simply inimitable.¹⁷

Exclusively local talent concerts and informal singing were, as we have seen, frequent since the beginning of our period. That there was genuine and wide-spread appreciation of music in Los Angeles is indicated by the following incident. During the month of November, 1874, many merchants and professional men of Los Angeles gave away free to their customers two thousand copies in all of the *Golden Songster for the Land of Sunshine and Flowers* recently published in Los Angeles and in Santa Barbara. This song-book, the first of its kind for the Southland, contained advertising matter for participating firms, twenty-four blank pages for a pocket diary or account book, and a considerable number of currently popular songs. Included were The Star Spangled Banner; The Watch on the Rhine; The Marseillaise; Meet Me, Josie, at the Gate; Kathleen Mavourneen; Lord Lovel and Lady Nancy; The Old Oaken Bucket; The Little Brown Jug; Bonny Doon; Old Grimes' Cellar Door; Days of Forty-Nine; The Last Rose of Summer; Ever of Thee I'm Fondly Dreaming; Auld Lang Syne; and Joe Bowers; as well as a number of Spanish songs, including *La Poderosa*; *El Suspiro*; and *El Trobador*. This volume bore the imprint of the St. Lawrence Publishing Company of Los Angeles.¹⁸

These days saw Sunday school program with recitations, dialogues, and songs, and at a slightly higher artistic level, presentation of class and school musical plays, as when in 1879 *H. M. S. Pinafore* was given in the High School auditorium. Churches sometimes presented cantatas and oratorios. Intertwined with these productions at times were glimmers of humor; as for example, when Mozart's *Twelfth Mass* with improvisations was ambitiously sung at the Catholic Cathedral. The not really irreverent anecdote concerns the musical ingenuity of Dr. Fernandez, its bass soloist. The

Herald is properly enthusiastic. "Dr. Fernandez is not only one of the most accomplished musicians on the American continent, but he is also possessed of a phenomenally fine basso voice. Only the fact that he is a devout Catholic induces him to sing at all publicly. Having a sepulchrally fine and deep basso, he sometimes sees, a page ahead, passages so high that to carry them out literally, with his cellar-drawn voice, would result in a downright bray. So thorough is his mastery of music that as he approaches these passages he improvises a score adapted to his superb voice, the organist and his fellow choristers looking on in dumb surprise the while."¹⁹ Dr. Fernandez was obviously fortunate in having an organist and director suitably in awe of his sepulchral bass.

Pipe organs were in the 1870's and 1880's coming to be stock musical equipment in the churches of Los Angeles. The Congregational church in 1872 was the first to possess such an instrument. Quartets, choirs, and soloists added their increment of beauty and solemnity to the services of the church, Protestant and Catholic alike. String instruments gave depth and background to single and massed voices.

In 1875 the united choir singers of the city presented the cantata, *Esther, the Beautiful Queen*.²⁰ Indicative of the well-rounded and often excellent church concerts of the time was one given in January, 1878, at the Fort Street Methodist church. The choral music was furnished by the regular church choir, accompanied by two organs, first and second violins, and a bass viol. The program included vocal quartets, the reading of a paper on "The Power of a Hymn," a trio, a biographical sketch of hymn writer Toplady, a solo, and several recitations. The audience sang with much fervor some of the old tunes: "Gregorian Chant," "Duke Street," "Hebron," "Zion," "Toplady," "Coronation," and "Old Hundred."²¹

Amateurs also performed in secular concerts, such as the one in 1873 participated in by a roster of local celebrities: Senor Ferrer (considered the best guitarist on the Pacific slope); Mr. Hartdegen, violoncello; Mr. Nesfield, pianist and vocalist; and Mrs. Barstow, contralto. Unfortunately, boy hoodlums entrenched on outside window sills and at the back door, disturbed the most effective parts of the music by screechings and groanings. "This," declared the

Music in Los Angeles

Express, "should be stopped; also a carpet should be placed upon the entrance stairs to eliminate the squeaking and tramping."²²

A seventeen-piece City Band had been organized by 1872, and a considerable amateur orchestra by 1878. Sheet music and instruments had become locally available by 1870, when W. J. Broderick, in connection with his insurance business, opened Los Angeles' first music store.²³

On June 4 to 6, 1878, came the greatest musical event thus far—the Good Templars' Jubilee Festival. In a tent on Spring street, the benches were crowded to hear the city's first concert band and orchestra, and the first offering here of Handel's *Hallelujah Chorus*. The general director was Charles E. Day. Fourteen soloists highlighted the sixty-four singers. Included was Madame Marra, the currently most popular local songstress. As grand climax came the *Anvil Chorus*, with a full complement of anvils, cannon, and bass drums.²⁴

A week or two after the close of the festival, nearly all of the participating singers and many of the instrumentalists, about fifty in all, organized into a Philharmonic Society, whose declared object was mutual advancement in the art of singing, and musical development in general. A constitution and by-laws were adopted, with these officers: President, E. F. Spence; Vice-President, H. K. W. Bent; Secretaries, F. B. Fanning and C. W. La Fetra; Treasurer, W. B. Abernathy. A typical meeting of the society, that of August 7, 1878, had the following program: a short business session, then a vocal duet, a vocal solo, a violin-piano duet, a chorus, and a guitar solo by Prof. Arrevalo.²⁵

These singers and instrumentalists in the Philharmonic Society appeared at the Horticultural Fair later in 1878, also at the Citrus Fair the subsequent February, at the spring Flower Festival and the Chrysanthemum Show in 1879.²⁶

It is to be hoped that there was eventually enlisted among the Philharmonic Society members also the genius in violin construction, who, as it was reported in the *Herald* that summer of 1879, had, in his sequestered Los Angeles county cabin in the mountains, whittled out, by means of a jackknife and gouge, a violin of admirable tone. The instrument was constructed of most unusual ma-

terials—almost exclusively of California woods—the front of mountain sumach, the back of California laurel, the fingerboards of manzanita. The chin-piece, however, was made of wood from the Hawaiian Islands. Even the catgut strings were from the entrails of a wildcat shot by him in the Cajon Pass. The keys and everything else was homemade by him.²⁷

In final roundup for the 1870's, we suggest that perhaps one of the most humanized accounts of the behavior of a musical artist carrying on under severe handicaps is the following humorous item in the *Herald*.

The celebrated Professor Savarin, an eccentric character of the city, was serenading two young ladies last night with the exquisite strains of his self-constructed violin, of sturdy size, when two rival suitors walked up, and drawing their hats over their eyes, requested him to retire as they were policemen. Savarin is not to be caught with chaff, and told the "police" to be d - - d and go to the hot regions where their father lived. When they seemed disinclined to go, Savarin took his bow and knocked one of the ex-officio policemen down. The other self-constituted defender of the peace then felt compelled to lay down the latest Supreme Court decision to the Professor, who laid out the second where the first had been a short time before. As the second young man had been knocked down with the violin instead of the bow, it took him longer to recover, but when he did he swore dire vengeance on the celebrated professor.

The end of the story is not given, but we can be sure it was not at the expense of the energetic professor.²⁸

Southern California, like Italy the traditional land of sunshine and flowers, by association of ideas should, like Italy, also be the land of music. And the early Spanish Californians certainly do not disappoint us; for the guitar and a wide repertory of Spanish airs were an essential part of the amatory equipment of every young California *caballero*. Apart from the love songs, many other Spanish melodies had come to California since the Mission fathers had first swung their censers over the land. With the arrival of the American after 1846 and California's entrance into the Union, Spanish Californian political and economic influence rapidly dwindled, but for a number of generations its cultural heritage continued to linger in bays and eddies apart from the swift central stream of Yankee activity.

Music in Los Angeles

With the passing of the older Spanish Californians, this fund of orally transmitted song diminished steadily, as the younger folk became ever more thoroughly Americanized. One American, Charles F. Lummis, who had come to Los Angeles from Ohio in the decade of the 1880's and was employed on the *Los Angeles Times*, felt that such Americanization was not without its loss to our common culture. In particular it seemed to him that the old Spanish Californian songs, once so commonly sung here on streets and in gardens, should not be allowed to perish. Soon after his arrival, therefore, he set about, with characteristic energy, to collect as many of these songs as possible before their memory should be entirely lost.

He began, among the descendants of the early Spanish families, a patient probing into their memories and traditions. The old people who had known the songs were fast dying off, and the younger generation scorned to carry on the musical heritage of their race. At first the task seemed futile, but gradually, from unexpected sources came valuable contributions. A poor washerwoman, proud of her race, proved to be a perfect bonanza of the early California songs. A rich young matron, who unlike most of her contemporaries, cherished her heritage, gladly contributed a score of songs. A blind Mexican lad, not having been swept on by the flood of modernism, was a staunch prop to the work. Some aged *Senoras* were able to sing as many as 140 songs from pure memory.

Lummis was deeply impressed by the exquisite charm of these early Californian folk songs. The lovely serenades, the quaint nursery songs, the battle songs that anyone might march to, and the lingering and passionate love songs, seemed to him comparable to the best that any country or period of history has produced. Most interesting of all, he felt, were the song whimsies of *vaqueros*, shepherds, those nearest the soil—the melodies of *peons*, *rancheros*, and all the other humble units of a by-gone time.

Five hundred songs were collected by Lummis, and three hundred of these were transcribed with musical notation. A few were arranged and printed, and it was the cherished dream of Mr. Lummis to publish his complete collection. Many notes and references are made throughout his writings, and even in his will, to

these songs, but strange to say, later no trace of them was to be found. Search has been made from time to time, but to no avail. The Southwest Society, to which Lummis willed his collections and museum material, has no record of their existence.²⁹

Though the younger generation of Spanish Californians generally ignored the old songs, instruments like the guitar maintained their perennial fascination. In the 1870's, Señor Ferrer of Los Angeles was considered the Coast guitar champion, and in 1881 Señor Dorrego challenged any guitarist in the world to compete with him for the universal world championship and a purse of \$2,000.³⁰

Along in the 1880's it came to be generally recognized that Los Angeles was a musical city. No matter how dull, or good, business might be, a good opera company was always assured of success. Concerts of all kinds were more largely attended here than in any other city on the coast, and the quality of music heard was generally higher than elsewhere. In view of this fact, the Los Angeles Public Library at the latter turn of the decade added to its facilities a circulating department of music.³¹ The city was a paradise for music teachers; and society girls, for their prestige as well as pleasure, sang in amateur musical plays and chorus.

Amateur concerts were both numerous and of high quality. Local colleges and schools presented well-attended programs. Typical of these was one given by Hanna College in the spring of 1888, where the school chorus sang at intervals, their glees varied by recitations, by instrumental and vocal solos, scenes from an opera, and a Japanese fan dance.³²

The German *Turn Verein* had an active musical section. A Turner programme in 1883 was advertised as a Grand Sunday Evening Concert and Ball. It consisted of two parts: (Part I) Overture by Wangeman's orchestra, followed by a song by the Turner chorus; a recitation; a duet from Act I of *Martha*, in costume; (Part II) orchestral overture; comic song *To the Ladies of Los Angeles*, by C. Ruthard; piano-violin duet—*The Last Rose of Summer*, with variations; male duet; finally, a song by the chorus. Admission to the subsequent Grand Ball was 50 cents, Turners free if wearing their Turner ribbon.³³

Central in amateur musical activity were the city's numerous

Music in Los Angeles

churches, whose choirs in the 1880 decade grew mightily in size and accomplishment. A benefit musicale program given by the Presbyterian church in 1880 was so popular that a repeat performance was given in Union Hall at which every seat was occupied. At the Catholic Cathedral on the occasion of a Pontifical High Mass, Haydn's *Second Mass* received a first Los Angeles performance by an augmented choir.

Organs were installed in several new churches, notably the Methodist and Congregational. The new Methodist pipe organ was inaugurated at the Fort Street church on Saturday evening, November 18, 1882. The following performed organ solos: Prof. Knell, organist of the Los Angeles Catholic Cathedral; Prof. Foss, former organist of Tremont Street church in Boston; Madame Fisk, former organist of the Congregational church at Natiche; and by Miss Badeau, formerly of the Wabash Avenue church in Chicago. Among the evening's organ selections was *The Alpine Storm*. There were vocal solos by Mesdames Beeson, Barnett (Rachel Edelman); Messrs. Lock, Booth, and Prof. Foss; and a duet by Mr. Pomeroy and Mr. Booth. In grand finale, a chorus of sixteen selected voices sang "The Heavens Are Telling" from *The Creation*, with organ accompaniment. Admission was 50 cents, reserved seats 75 cents.³⁴

On the subsequent Tuesday evening, November 20, the Methodists gave a second organ-featured concert, with the following programme: organ solo by Mrs. Dr. Nellis; bass solo by Prof. W. C. Stone; instrumental trio—Adagio Presto, from Haydn, by Beatrice Francisco and two Francisco brothers; vocal quartet; organ solo by T. F. Squires of Chicago; violin solo by Gracie Smith; organ solo by Annie L. Peabody; male quartet; piano solo; violin solo; and in conclusion, a contralto solo. Admission was again 50 cents.³⁵

As a presage of the coming tide of musical specialization were the singing or choral societies that began to be organized here in the later 1880's. The 1890's were to bring the purely instrumental orchestra; the orchestras of Los Angeles prior to that time placed emphasis upon both instrumentation and chorus.

Earliest of these choral organizations was the Ellis Club, founded on January 23, 1888, by Charles J. Ellis, with eight charter members. Men only were admitted. By 1890 there were sixty

active singing members and 200 associate members. These latter served as financial angels, paying \$10 per year, receiving in return four tickets apiece to each of the four annual concerts. Rehearsals were held weekly. H. T. Lee was President in 1890; D. McFarland, Secretary.³⁶

Amateur feminine singers of Los Angeles retaliated in 1889 by founding in their turn, the Treble Clef Club, for women only. It counted fifty active members by 1890, its director at this date being Mrs. Jirah D. Cole. Basic harmony between the Ellis Club and the Treble Club, however, was indicated by their having a musical director in common—Harold Burton.³⁷

Also in the growing current of specialization was the Heine Chamber Music Quartet, which gave its initial concerts in 1885, and until 1890 presented classical sonatas, trios, and quartets.³⁸

The development of advanced musical taste was the aim of the Students' Musical Club, which carried on effectively until 1894. Its chief activity was the systematic study of the works and lives of noted composers, past and contemporary.³⁹

In the 1880's public schools began to be interested in music, a part-time music teacher being appointed for the High School in 1885, and the first full-time teacher for the grammar and higher grades alike, Mrs. J. P. Rice, in 1890.⁴⁰

The orchestra and Philharmonic Society functioning with such apparent success in 1878 was active for only about a year, when it disintegrated. Almost a decade passed before another orchestra was organized, when in 1887 Ralph Klages brought together what came to be known as the Y.M.C.A. orchestra. This proved to be the root of future orchestral activity in Los Angeles, because most of the men in it were included in or directed other musical organizations. Although its term of life was short, it gave experience to a number of musicians who later were found in more permanent settings.⁴¹

More prominent at the time were the Philharmonic Society orchestra and associated chorus, founded by Prof. Adolf Willhartitz in the same year, 1887. Under his guidance, with the assistance of Messrs. Kubel, Marble, Hanchette, and some others, a new Philharmonic Society was organized. Its expressed purpose was to present to its members and friends the best and most pleasing music



—Photo courtesy Title Insurance and Trust Co.

E. F. SPENCE

*President of a Philharmonic Society in
Los Angeles in 1878.*



—Photo courtesy Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

W. H. K. BENT

*Los Angeles Postmaster, 1873-77, was vice-president
of 1878 Philharmonic Society*



—Photo courtesy Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

LYNDON ELLSWORTH BEHYMER

Began career as Los Angeles impresario in 1900.

Music in Los Angeles

of the age. After a few months, Willhartitz had gathered an amateur orchestra, and an eighty-voice chorus. In the early months of the next year, 1888, rehearsals were held in Bartlett's Hall, on First between Main and Spring. Membership was approaching 300, about half of whom were honorary ticket-buying patrons.

The first concert, featuring Mendelssohn's *Lorelei*, a difficult score, was given in September, 1888, and two weeks later a repeat performance was attended by an audience of 400. The orchestra now numbered some fifty, with a chorus of one hundred. Professor Willhartitz was conductor, and the soloist Miss K. W. Kimball of Boston.

Local music critics have asserted that the Los Angeles Philharmonic Society thus marked a musical "first" for the Pacific Coast, by the introduction of an orchestra as an integral part of the society. The Loring Club of San Francisco, the oldest organization of similar nature in the Far West, was currently giving three exclusively choral concerts each year, in its fourth employing an outside orchestra of some thirty members. A similar choral-orchestra cooperation has, however, already been noted above in the Los Angeles Philharmonic Society of 1878.

The Philharmonic Society in the season 1888-89 presented monthly soiree musicales for the enjoyment of friends of the organization, at which visiting artists were often introduced. At the first soiree of the season, in October, there were offered in sequence, a Mozart overture, a quartette Adagio from Mendelssohn, a vocal duet, violin solo, piano solo, vocal solos, a Mazourka by Chopin, and a chorus glee. During the intermission, Prof. Willhartitz, as the musical director, was presented with an engraved ebony-and-gold conductor's baton.

The high point of the year in music was reached when a week before Christmas the long awaited holiday-season program was presented, which had been in preparation for three months. Ambitious in scope, it included Beethoven's *Symphony No. 5 in C Minor*, two part-songs by the chorus, and finally, Mendelssohn's *Hymn of Praise* in both symphony and cantata. Soloists were C. Modini, Mrs. B. A. Butler, and Mrs. B. Stansbery. Bessie T. Marshall was organist.

The printed programme contained cuts of Beethoven and Mendelssohn, a sonnet to Beethoven by Fannie Raymond Ritter, a short biographical sketch of Beethoven, an analysis of the *Fifth Symphony*, and finally the words and an analysis of the *Hymn of Praise*.

Original orchestral scores by a local composer, Franz Nebelung, of Anaheim, were featured at the Philharmonic concert on March 5, 1889. The two compositions were entitled respectively *Sonnen Aufgang* (Sunrise) and *Blick auf das Meer* (Sea-scape). Both were tone poems in the contemporary mood, the first depicting musically the wonders of sunrise, while the second suggested the restless surface of the sea, with its varying moods of quiet peace and stormy darkness. This presentation was announced as the first step to be taken by the Society in its plans for the encouragement of local talent.

In the same program was Mozart's *Concerto No. 17* for two pianos, performed by Mrs. Coe, Miss Bessie T. Marshall, and the Philharmonic orchestra.

At various times during the Society's existence, light opera was also performed, among which were *Pinafore*, *The Mikado*, *The Bohemian Girl*, and *The Chimes of Normandy*.⁴²

A note for the history of a popular modern instrument—a saxophone solo highlighted the entertainment at the 1887 Flower Festival. The performer was Harry O. Alger, and his selection *Hear Me, Norma*.⁴³

Some few Angelenos aspired toward greater things than mere local performance—and with some success. There was, in the field of opera, W. G. Cogswell, who made his first out-of-the-city appearance before a San Francisco audience in April, 1883. "An excellent voice and faultless execution were shown to advantage," reports the *Express*.⁴⁴

Cogswell, who was a local music teacher, together with Madame Marria, had a brilliant pupil in Miss Mamie Perry, who in Italy in 1880 as the soprano Maria Perrini, took critical Milan by storm. Miss Perry had shown high talent here at a local production of *Pinafore* in 1879, and was accordingly sent by her parents to study in Italy. At her first performance in Milan, she appeared as the Countess in the opera of *Contessa d'Amalfi*, and was called out twice

Music in Los Angeles

for an encore amid a shower of bouquets, and presented with a gold necklace and a beautiful photograph of herself, tinted in oil colors, by an admirer.⁴⁵

During her stay in Italy, Signorina Perrini appeared in eighteen performances. Concerning one of these, *Il Mondo Artistico*, a musical journal of Milan says:

When the young lady, not yet twenty, made her appearance on the stage she was greeted with a tremendous buzz of applause. She is tall and beautiful, eyes black, slender but full of life and fire. Her singing is very sweet, well-mannered, and shows great study; she sings with sentiment and great expression. She has not a powerful voice, but is gifted with the reflective power; she uses it well and understandingly.

The public rose enmasse to applaud her, and it was deafening. Hundreds of small pieces of paper were thrown from the dome of the theater upon which were printed sonnets; these were given Miss Perrini by one of her admirers. To this artiste were also offered three immense bouquets with beautiful ribbons, two rings, and other tokens we did not see; she received also a shower of loose flowers from the boxes.⁴⁶

La Perrini returned to Los Angeles in 1881, and on February 18, 1882, gave her first home town concert as a celebrity, at Turnverein Hall—sold out a week in advance—assisted by Madame Marra, contralto; Signor Antonini, tenor; W. G. Cogswell, baritone; and Dr. Fernandez, basso. Her reception was immense; another concert was given in San Bernardino.

This brilliant singer, at the outset of what should have been a remarkable career, however, had made the artistic error of having fallen in love with a local, perhaps conventional-minded young man. She married him shortly after her arrival. The rest, except for ever sparser amateur appearances, was silence. La Perrini had become plain Mrs. Modini-Wood of Los Angeles, and the world of music heard nothing further of her.

Local talent was not, of course, the only source of musical entertainment here. From time to time outside artists appeared—some, it must be admitted, of sensational rather than aesthetic value. In this less desirable category is probably to be reckoned the “two-headed nightingale,” a woman born with two heads, who was touring the country as a singer. At her recital in Turnverein Hall in 1880 a lecture on the details of her birth was followed with songs

by the "unfortunate person." It is not known if the heads of this artist sang in unison or duet; her performance, at least, seemed satisfactory.⁴⁷

Somewhat of an oddity, too, was John Kelly, veteran singer of the Forty-Niners, who in June, 1882, appeared here in a concert of Gold Rush and Irish songs and violin pieces. Kelly had become renowned not so much for his musical artistry as because he had, in the early days in the mines, transcribed from a single hearing by the keyhole route, the rehearsal performance by a traveling company, of an entire opera, which transcription was then, when sheet music was very scarce, profitably produced by his own company.⁴⁸

More savory fare was represented by the National Opera Company that, upon ample guarantees, agreed to present their San Francisco repertoire here May 16 to 19 of the boom spring of 1887. Twenty thousand dollars was advanced by O. G. Weyse of Los Angeles upon the presumed success of the five performances. On the other hand, the Company agreed on its part to produce its operas in the same "magnificent style" which had characterized its representations in San Francisco.⁴⁹

Mr. Weyse's hopes were not unfounded, for the short season was a resounding success. Said the *Express*:

During the past week the largest audience that ever greeted grand opera in California was assembled in this city. It was an audience that might be expected to be seen in London or Paris, but seldom this side of those great cities. Every evening the Pavilion has been the scene of splendor. Losses that befell the management in San Francisco have been more than replenished in Los Angeles. That thousands of people should nightly crowd so vast an auditorium to attend so expensive an entertainment is something indeed remarkable in a city no larger than ours.⁵⁰

The boom-time crowds evidently had money in their pockets and were not chary in their support.

Even the opera manager was satisfied. He said that the performance of "*Faust*" was attended by its largest audience since New York. An index to his pleasant mood was the fact that his company, leaving San Francisco with a loss of \$20,000, had not only erased this red ink item but was now \$6,000 ahead.

Apart from musical tastes and money in the pocket, perhaps

Music in Los Angeles

an additional factor making for the popularity of the company was the fact that its offerings were billed as "Grand Opera in English." Presented were *Lakme*, *Lohengrin*, *Faust*, *The Merry Wives of Windsor*, and *Aida*. Ninety-two dancers were in the ballet; Emma Juch was the soprano and William Candidus the tenor.⁵¹

Extremely popular here during the 1880's was Emma Abbott, the Mary Pickford of early opera. Though a very fair singer, her chief attraction lay in her buoyant personality and romantic background. She had in her childhood been a penniless waif, and had risen to a commanding position in her art by a combination of merit and Cinderella-like good fortune. A typical Abbott appearance was that of January, 1885, when she starred in a week of repertoire: *Lucia di Lammermoor*, *Martha*, *La Traviata*, *Mignon*, *Faust*, and *Il Trovatore*.

Perhaps the crowning event in Los Angeles music during the decade was the appearance of Adelina Patti and her company in a concert on the evening of January 20, 1887. Two days before the scheduled performance she arrived in her private railway car—named "Adelina Patti"—with her husband Signor Ernesto Nicolini, Henry C. Abbey and wife, and the various members of her entourage. They were lodged in a fine suite of apartments at the Nadeau.

As to the program, *Faust* had been intended, but because of the illness of one of the principals, *Semiramide* was substituted. Arranged finally in addition was an aria "Ah, forse e lui" from *La Traviata* by Verdi; "Il Baccio" by *Arditi*; a duet with Mme. Scalchi, "Servami Ognor"; and an aria "Bel Raggio." Patti sang the part of Semiramide, with Mme. Scalchi as Arsace and Signor Galassi as Assur.

Patti's success was overwhelming—not least in that a seemingly new custom, hats off for ladies, was initiated. Said the *Times* the next day:

Adelina Patti sang to the largest audience both in numbers and money receipts (\$10,000) that ever greeted any artist in Los Angeles. It was a representative audience of the best society of the city, with a liberal sprinkling of winter visitors and handsome delegations from all the neighboring towns, some even from San Diego and Santa Barbara.

The stranger, noting the brilliancy of the audience, would have been struck by nothing more forcibly than by the absence of feminine head-

gear. Everywhere there ladies beautiful and richly dressed, but the very large majority had laid aside their hats or bonnets at the entrance and sat thus throughout the evening, crowned only with the chiefest glory of woman. The few who had not taken this step, so commended both by good sense and good breeding, seemed to feel somewhat uncomfortable by reason of their conspicuousness. Four fifth or so of local ladies had removed their hats, and most of those who kept them seemed to be winter visitors or ladies from outside towns. The ice was well broken last night, and there is good prospect that one of the most inexcusable barbarities connected with amusement-going will be a thing of the past in Los Angeles.

Of Madame Patti all that is really necessary to say is that she was in excellent voice. The rest goes without saying. The writer had the privilege of frequently listening to the youthful Adelina Patti on the occasion of her appearance in Italian opera in London, soon after the time when she first became the idol of the stage; when her youth, her beauty, her girlish simplicity, the charming grace and freshness of her acting, and above all her wonderful voice, made her an object of universal adulation. Seventeen long years have passed since then, and still the gifted singer holds her magic sway, as potent as ever, and with a voice changed only in that it has become richer with culture.

The secret of the wonderful popularity of Adelina Patti is not alone in her superb voice and matchless culture but also in the apparently artless way in which she continues to enlist the sympathies of her audience from the moment of her entrance on the scene. Over and above her vocal gifts she has a combination of grace, tact, and real enthusiasm in her art which magnetizes and captures men, and women too, wherever she goes.⁵²

Marco Newmark says of Patti's appearance here:

The world-famous singer held forth in the building owned by Thomas D. Mott at 125-139 South Main Street. On the lower floor were Jedophsky & Oder's delicatessen, Harriman's fish market, and Ludwig & Mathews' fruit and grocery store. The upper floor was occupied by Mott's Hall, and here it was, in this incongruous atmosphere, that Adelina Patti sang.

Impresario Lynden E. Behymer still remembers the event, and recalls a quatrain that went the rounds at the time:

Only to hear you, Patti;
Only to hear you squeak;
Only to pay seven dollars,
And starve the rest of the week.

One of the pioneers who attended, complained that the hall was drafty. The cause of this discomfort was an open rear window at which

Music in Los Angeles

was stationed an attendant charged with the duty, when the time arrived, of waving a handkerchief to the expectant overflow crowd gathered below on Main street as signal that the great soprano was about to sing.⁵³

One last word about the absence of women's hats at the concert. An observer noted that fully two-thirds of the ladies present were without hats, but displayed more or less elaborate coiffures. "Some wore an ostrich plume by way of adornment; some had a lace shawl or other trifle thrown over the head. None looked more charming than the Spanish-Californian ladies, who in conforming to the new custom simply re-adopted their national *rebosa*. A few women wore ordinary low-crowned hats, very likely because they did not possess good heads of hair. A few, only a very few, clung to the 'scoop-shovel' hat with all its terrors, and these were the subjects of remark."⁵⁴ We trust that no true lady, possessed of a good head of hair, ever again in Los Angeles blocked any gentleman's view of the stage.

Three years later, in 1890, it was planned to bring Patti again to Los Angeles, this time under the auspices of Henry E. Abbey, Maurice Grau, and their Grand Italian Opera Company. Co-starring with Miss Patti were to be Emma Albani, Giulia Valda, and Lillian Nordica. Tickets were for sale for these performances at Hazard's Pavilion February 7 and 8, two evenings and a matinee, at \$15-\$18 for the season. Los Angeles, declared the tour managers, was the only American city of even twice its size in which Patti had ever deigned to sing. But advance ticket sales were too few, and finally the concerts here were canceled.⁵⁵

Los Angeles by the 1890's was definitely established as a musical city, particularly in the amateur field. Study of music and its composers was widespread, there being in the 1896 directory the names of no less than 165 music teachers, with a probable total of some two hundred resident here.⁵⁶ Reckoning an average of twenty pupils apiece, there would be in this city of about 85,000 population no less than 4,000 active music students, not to mention the thousands more who had passed the stage of formal music instruction.

Recitals of all sorts, instrumental and vocal, were consequently numerous, with a considerable number displaying real aesthetic accomplishment. Typical of these recitals, a species of teacher self-

advertising, was one given by William Piutte, pianist, and C. S. Cornell, baritone, at Blanchard-Fitzgerald Hall in November, 1895. Cornell was musical director of the Methodist church. The Los Angeles Conservatory of Music and Art, as another example, was at this time presenting one of its pupils, Annie Denby, pianist, as first performer in its series of six recitals.⁵⁷

Apart from these seminal musical ventures of teachers and their pupils, there were band concerts in the park, symphony concerts, chamber musicales, light and grand opera, all generously patronized. Popular restaurants boasted of their string ensembles, while many eating places had at least an accordion, cornet, piano, or combination of these. Even from department stores and shoe salesrooms issued forth the seductive strains of a Strauss waltz or a Polonaise by Chopin.⁵⁸

Nevertheless, complaints were still heard, around 1896, that no local musical organization was self-supporting, and that the best musical talent, visiting and local alike received at times but scant attention. There seem indeed to have been an embarrassment of riches, a great wealth of talent, which however was insufficiently organized, and split by rivalry and jealousy between a host of musical cliques. At the halfway point in the 1890's, lovers of musical art were still looking forward to the time when at length the city would unit its forces and establish and maintain a great orchestra and oratorio society of its own.⁵⁹ It was 1898 before the foundation stones of our present Los Angeles Philharmonic Orchestra were laid, and a city-supported oratorio group or chorus was in 1900 still a dream of the future, as it is, we must sadly admit, even in 1956.

There was in the 1890's no lack of musical organizations of less than citywide scope and support. Music study clubs were active, the Students' Musical Club, founded in 1888, for example, developing consistently. By 1891, now known as the S. M. Club, it had won state-wide repute. Its membership included both professionals and amateurs, vocal and instrumental, the only such affiliation of the professional and amateur in the city.

Meetings of the S. M. Club were held on the first and third Monday evening of each month, and at each meeting the works of a single composer were studied. A committee was chosen for

Music in Los Angeles

each composer, to study thoroughly in advance his style, arrange for illustrative solos and concerted numbers, and to prepare a summary paper on the composer's life and works. By August, 1891, among American composers studied the previous season had been Foote, Buck, and Schlessinger, and during the coming year the program was to include Bach, Handel, and the American composers McDowell, Chadwick, J. K. Paine, and J. D. C. Parker. Mrs. Jirah D. Cole was in that year President, and Mrs. J. D. Hooker, Secretary.⁶⁰

Similar in study purposes but smaller, with but eight members, was the Ar-Ar Club organized in June, 1891, and composed of ladies desirous of spending a morning each week in the study of favorite composers. No one not a member was admitted, and no public concerts were to be given. As much social as a musical body, meetings were held weekly on Thursday mornings at the homes of members. Two hours' rehearsal was followed by luncheon. Each member wore a ring bearing the mystic inscription "Ar-Ar," whose significance was not divulged to outsiders.⁶¹ Another club of apparently the same type was the Monday Musicales Club, organized in 1896. These were representative of numerous other such musical-social neighborhood or close-friend groups existing here during the decade.

Passing to choral organizations of the 1890's, the so-called Euterpean male quartet enjoyed a brief period of flourishing in 1890. The choral Ellis and Treble Clef clubs were active through the decade and beyond 1900. On January 21, 1896, the two organizations united their vocal forces, sixty men's and eighty women's voices, with the instrumental talent of the Women's Orchestra (35 members) to produce the *Messiah*, the second time for Los Angeles, with Harley Hamilton, later director of the Los Angeles Philharmonic Orchestra, as conductor. A Pasadena chorus of one hundred voices joined in the massive production. The oratorio was repeated on January 27, 1896.⁶²

A characteristic program of the Treble Clef Club in single performance was a choral concert given in February, 1898, at which various selections were rendered, including the *Pilgrims' Chorus*, with orchestra accompaniment.⁶³

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Another choral society, this time for mixed voices, both men and women, was the Apollo Club, founded in 1891, and perhaps an outgrowth of or at least inspired by the Philharmonic Society chorus founded by Professor Willhartitz. The manner of its organization was as follows. Early in January, 1891, a male quartette was formed, which soon expanded to sixteen members. Robert K. Paulsen was its director. Researals were held twice a week at the studio of Prof. Kent in the Zahn Block, and soon a subscription concert in conjunction with the St. Cecilia Society, a female-voices club, was given. The St. Cecilia soon disbanded, and in its stead a womans' chorus of sixteen voices was organized and combined with the male chorus. The united group termed itself the Apollo Club.

Its first concert was given at the Los Angeles Theatre April 3, 1891, with Mr. Seamans, tenor, and Miss Sargent, soprano. A second concert was given June 30. At this time there were a total of forty active members.

In the period between 1891 and 1893 was formed the Los Angeles Choral Society, possibly as the successor to the Apollo Club, and the Choral Society in 1893 in turn was transformed into the Los Angeles Oratorio Society, which, more fortunate than its predecessors, carried on into the twentieth century. The Oratorio Society presented in 1894 the first Los Angeles performance of the *Messiah*, and in 1900 another first for Los Angeles, that of Mendelssohn's *Elijah*. A less ambitious program of the Society on January 5, 1895, featured Miss Auld, described as a "second Jenny Lind," in several selections from *Elijah*. There were other solos, vocal and instrumental, as well as recitations, and culminating chorus.

The amateur status of the Oratorio Society singers, with the popular program of the event starring Miss Auld drawing a capacity house, were contrasted favorably by *Herald* reporters with the scant attendance at the rigidly classical chamber concert on the same evening given by Arnold Krauss and his ensemble of fellow Los Angeles professionals.⁶⁵

In 1898 yet another male choral society was formed, known as the Mendelssohn Club. Its name was derived from the fact that its repertoire was to consist entirely of classical music, with a con-

Music in Los Angeles

siderable part of each program devoted to the works of Mendelssohn. There were some forty members at the outset, with associate members—ticket-buying sponsors—limited to 300. It was planned to give three concerts during the first year.⁶⁶

Finally, a tremendous chorus of five hundred voices sang at the Fiesta of 1895, assisted by a fifty-piece orchestra.

Church music in the 1890's continued burgeoning. It continued to be organ and vocal centered, though bonafide orchestras made their appearance before the pulpit now and then. Indeed so popular were organs becoming in this area that the first fine-organ factory in the West was established in Los Angeles on New High street in 1895 by Fletcher & Harris.⁶⁷ The year 1896 saw the installation of a new organ in the first Congregational church, with two thousand speaking pipes and multiplying devices, eight combination pedals and thirteen combination stops, and costing \$8,000. Its learned organist was Wilhelm Middleschultz.⁶⁸

At the First Methodist church, the musical director, C. S. Cornell, introduced early in 1896 something never before attempted in the city—a grand chorus of a hundred voices placed in the rear gallery, for antiphonal singing in alternation with the regular chorus of forty voices at the front of the auditorium.⁶⁹ In 1898 a not untypical Sunday's fare at the churches included Mozart's *Twelfth Mass* at St. Vincent's church, and Hayden's *Imperial Mass* by the Catholic Cathedral choir.⁷⁰

Interesting also were the seven well attended concerts given by the Sunday School orchestra of the First Congregational church in 1897-98. This orchestra consisted of eleven violins, a viol, a violoncello, two basses, one clarinet, one oboe, a bassoon, three cornets, a French horn, two trombones, a set of drums, and a piano. Both men and women were members.⁷¹

A type of musical organization rapidly developing in the last two decades of our period, here as elsewhere, was the symphony orchestra. Instruments were coming to be thought of in Los Angeles not as mere accompaniment and tonal background for the human voice, but both singly and in concert as having an artistic validity of their own. A more or less secular viewpoint and taste on the part of the audience, and technical skill of both performers

and conductor, were of course necessary for the full development of the symphony orchestra. Here in Los Angeles, music at this time was largely church-centered, and organizing and directorial skill also seem to have been wanting up to the middle 1890's. Most important lack of all, however, seems to have been Los Angeles' undeveloped musical taste, which definitely preferred choral music during most of our period. Indeed, it is only in the twentieth century and in our most recent decades that the symphony orchestra may be said to have come into its own. A full body blow has been dealt the popular preference for vocal music only in our own time, with the development of African and other primitive instrumental beat and rhythm.

Finally, too, during the whole period up to 1900, the amateur here, in general, was in his heyday, and a desire for widespread participation was dominant, rather than the critical and listener-spectator complex that in our own day has gained such ground, with the development of radio, television, LP records, and the phonograph.

The Philharmonic experiments of the late 1870's and late 1880's have been referred to. The Willhartitz group apparently vanished from the scene in 1889, but the next year, 1890, the perennial hope of instrumental enthusiasts here was re-embodied in the Los Angeles Orchestral Society, that by May had intensively rehearsed Mozart's *Twelfth Symphony*. Men and women alike were admitted to the Society; Dr. O. W. Green was President, G. E. Lawrence, Secretary. Instruments included were fifteen violins, two violas, two cellos, two basses, two flutes, an oboe, two clarinets, a bassoon, three cornets, two French horns, a trombone, and finally, a tympanum.

An esoteric kind of orchestra, composed entirely of flutes, was formed in the same year, 1890, with Prof. Tomaszewicz as leader, but it disbanded in 1891.

The Woman's Symphony Orchestra was organized in November, 1893, by Mrs. M. Larrabee and Mrs. L. Loeb, with 25 women members. They met at Lawrence Hall every Tuesday morning for study and rehearsal. The conductor was Harley Hamilton. It's first public concert was given in May, 1895.

Music in Los Angeles

The true beginning of our present Los Angeles Philharmonic Orchestra is usually considered to have been the organization—with *no* associated chorus as in the two previous Philharmonic ventures—founded and presided over by Prof. A. J. Stamm in 1892. Stamm was a music teacher, and organist at St. Vibiana's Cathedral. Early in October of that year, some forty leading instrumentalists of the city had been brought together, and the first rehearsal of the new musical group was held on the tenth of that month, with Stamm as conductor. It was proposed to give a series of four concerts during the winter season, for which a judicious mixture of classical and lighter compositions had been tentatively selected to please the popular taste. Reflecting this decision, the first rehearsal consisted of Strauss' *Tales From the Vienna Woods*, Kretschmer's *Coronation March*, and the Raymond and the La Gazza overtures. Future rehearsals were to include the overtures to *William Tell* and to the *Midsummer Night's Dream*, and similar fare.

The first concert was to be presented January 9, 1893, and in the interval much work had to be done, much of which fell upon the willing shoulders of Stamm. Not all the instruments necessary in a full-flight orchestra had been mastered by the members, and Stamm, who had had some experience in orchestral work outside Los Angeles, was obliged to instruct members in their use. As money was scarce, he himself bought and paid for a number of needed instruments. Apart from directing, instructing, and acting as fiscal godfather, Stamm also sold tickets, advertised the coming concerts, arranged a thousand details, and above and beyond all, endeavored to interest the Los Angeles public in maintaining the organization as a permanent addition to its cultural institutions.

Accordingly, on January 9, the first concert was given at the Grand Opera House, clearing, with a top admission charge of only 75 cents, some \$700 above expenses. Miss Augustine Berger was piano soloist, Mrs. J. S. Owens vocalist, and Harley Hamilton concert-master. On the programme were a Rossini overture, selections from *Lohengrin*, Mendelssohn's *Piano Concerto in G Minor* Op. 25, *Tales From the Vienna Woods*, and selection from Rubinstein and Meyerbeer.

The four concerts of the season duly given, with considerable

success, director Stamm was able to obtain a \$3,000 guarantee for the second season, that of 1893-94. Underwriting the guarantee were William H. Perry, Albert G. Bartlett, and John M. C. Marble. The 1894 season suffered, however, from repercussions of the severe financial and industrial depression current in the East; no further guarantees were forthcoming, and the project of a city-supported orchestra had to be dropped for the time being.

It was 1897 before a new attempt was made, this time with permanently successful results. In that year, Harley Hamilton, a well-known violinist and enthusiastic music lover, began symphonic rehearsals with about thirty-five of his friends.

The first concert was given February 1, 1898, with J. Bond Francisco as concert master and Hamilton as conductor. The location was on the second floor of a Spring street building, made available by William H. Perry and Charles Modini Wood, father and husband respectively of Mamie Perry (Perrini) Wood, whose meteoric debut as a soprano has been recounted above.

The program was a melange of popular and classical numbers, including the *Blue Danube Waltz*, the *William Tell Overture*, and Beethoven's *First Symphony*. The price of admission was only 25 cents, fixed thus low with the intent of attracting a large audience. Only 300, however, attended, which eventually, after expenses, gave the musicians 50 cents apiece and left Hamilton \$50 in debt.

On February 15, 1898, a second concert was presented: Schubert's *Unfinished Symphony* in B Minor, von Suppe's *Light Cavalry Overture*, a suite from *Lohengrin*, and four numbers of ballet music from *Faust*. Attendance climbed this time to 400, and the venture won strong support in the newspapers and other sponsors of cultural values.

Six concerts in all were given that first season, perhaps the most dramatic being the one with military and patriotic overtones given in April, soon after the commencement of the Spanish-American War. After Beethoven's *Second Symphony* came the swinging rhythm of von Suppe's *Light Cavalry Overture*, ending in a blare of trumpets, thereupon followed by the *Star Spangled Banner*. The audience went wild. At the close of the concert, the orchestra's drummer marched away to war with his regiment, the Seventh,

Music in Los Angeles

of which Mr. Hamilton had for some time been band master.⁷²

In contrast with the difficulties encountered in establishing a symphony orchestra in Los Angeles, the mood of our band masters was a merry one. Ever since the first local brass band was organized in 1867, the city was never without one or another or several of these popular organizations. By the time of the Fiesta of 1896 there were no less than five local bands—the Los Angeles Military, Douglass Military, Seventh Regiment, Blanchard-Fitzgerald, and the American Star Drum Corps. Anxious and eager to make the welkin ring for the Fiesta, they had aid and support in this worthy aim in visiting bands from San Diego, Riverside, Santa Ana, Ontario, Pasadena, and Santa Barbara. When their united strains rang out, small boys must have been in the very seventh heaven of bliss.⁷³

Bands even inspired local musicians to original productions, as when Professor Willhartitz composed the previous year's 1894 *Fiesta March*,⁷⁴ and in the year 1897, when the *Fiesta March* was composed by Louis F. Gottschalk, and later conducted by him.⁷⁵

Sunday afternoon concerts in Westlake Park were sponsored by the street car companies. A typical program was that given at Westlake in February, 1898, by the Seventh Regiment Military Band: *Hungarian March* (by a local composer, Dr. A. Hartmann); Concert Polka—*Through the Meadows* (Wilson); Polonaise—*Gruss in die Ferne* (Kiesler); Overture—*Berlin in Joy and Sorrow* (Conradi); *Swedish Wedding March* (Soderman); Potpourri—*My Best Girl* (Boettger); Waltz—*Golden Shower* (Waldteufel); Caprice—*On the Plantation* (Puerner).⁷⁶

As to visiting organization and artists, Sousa, the famous march king and band leader was extremely popular here in this decade. His program in April, 1894, opened with Tschaikowsky's *1812*, descriptive of the siege of Moscow and the subsequent rout of the invaders; there was *Marching Through Georgia*; a trombone solo by Arthur W. Pryor and songs by Miss Inez Mecusher, a soprano; and most enthusiastically received of all, of course, the Sousa marches themselves.⁷⁷

Sousa played his popular *King Cotton* for the first time, at Manhattan Beach in August, 1895. He appeared again in Los Angeles the next year 1896, in February, playing again a good

deal of Sousa. At this time he stated to a local reporter that he was currently preoccupied with his new opera, *El Capitan*, to be produced in Boston in April by his friend, De Wolf Hopper. Twelve years before, Sousa reminisced, Hopper had made his debut, in another of the Sousa operas, *Desiree*.⁷⁸

Also in the tradition of military music and instrumentalism was a group of some forty boys, here in 1897, who were being trained as musicians for the Austrian army. Their official advertised title was—*Kaiser Franz Josef's Magyar Husaren from Budapest*. The *Express* rated them highly: "One of the finest musical organizations ever to visit the coast. Altogether the little hussars made a most brilliant appearance in their showy uniforms, are trained with the utmost military precision, and have been taught with intelligence." The type of program presented, however, was discounted, containing as it did but little Austrian national and folk music. A characteristic program for their stay here follows: *Hail Columbia*; von Suppe's *Festival Overture*; a *lied* from Obersteiger, *Sei Nicht Boes*; Sousa's *Stars and Stripes*; and *All Coons Look Alike to Me*.⁷⁹

The violinist Ysaye paid Los Angeles a visit in concert tour during May, 1895. A Belgian—tall, well built, with clear grey eyes beaming with cheerfulness, he confided to a *Times* reporter: "I like California—I like San Francisco—it is a charming public—I have a great time—they try to understand music. I like Los Angeles too—all have great enthusiasm—it is the sun and flowers that make them so. I like the travel in this country—it is so comfortable—there is so much interesting to see—I am not tired even after my eighty-nine other performances."

Ysaye was fascinated by the American negro, never having seen persons of African hue before. One night in Indianapolis, it was said, he had the station master gather together all the negroes in the depot, then treating them to all they could possibly eat, including great slices of apple pie, of which he himself had become very fond.

In recital, says the *Express* reporter, "Ysaye sways and fairly hugs his instrument in an ecstasy of emotion, while his raven locks break loose and come dancing in front of his ears and about

Music in Los Angeles

his jolly face and double chin. Now and then with a graceful movement, he brushes it back without ostentation or affectation."

At the Ysaye concert, the problem of ladies' hats of bonanza size being worn during concerts was even yet not entirely solved, ten years after Patti. The reporter subtly snubs the orchestra seats:

Very naturally the latest and probably the costliest 'poems' in the line of spring hats predominated in the parquet, while the balcony contained many excellent ladies who wore no hats at all, and looked cool and comfortable and capable of a higher enjoyment of the musical feast. The gallery also was crowded with true music lovers, and here it was not necessary for a policeman to yell, 'Hats off gentlemen!' when the curtain went up.⁸⁰

Another violinist with wide contemporary repute performed here later in that same year of 1895—Ovide Musin. Musin was assisted in his program by his wife, Anna Louise Musin, soprano, and by Edward Scharf, pianist. In Musin's first concert, assuming he was to display his art before a critical and musically trained audience, he presented only classical concertos and selections of great technical difficulty. It seems, however, that he discovered his audience was composed mainly of youthful "gallery gods" and others of the type who idolized Sousa and attended faithfully the Westlake band concerts. So the next evening he changed his announced program radically, presenting the popular airs and tuneful compositions beloved by the simple listener.

The programme read: Ovide Musin: *Caprice on Scotch airs; Auld Robin Gray*, and *Charley is My Darling*; *Moses' Prayer* (Paganini) with variations (played on one string). Anna Louise Musin: *Merchant of Birds* (Jomelli), in which Mrs. Musin will take high G. Edward Scharf: *Etude No. 2* (Rubinstein). Mr. and Mrs. Musin: Duet—soprano and violin.

What happened? The reporter was astonished.

Think of gallery gods vociferously and even tumultuously applauding classical music! That happened at the Orpheum last night. They not only whistled and stamped, but insisted on five or six recalls for every effort, and rest of the house joined in the acclamation. No such demonstration has ever before been witnessed in a Los Angeles theatre.

This enthusiasm of the besmudged urchins delighted Musin and his assistants. He played and played and played again. He said to manager Petrich, *C'est me faire une grande plaisir a jouer cet nuit!* (It is giving

me great pleasure to play tonight). When Edward Scharf finished his *Hungarian Rhapsody* from Liszt so great was the acclamation that he was obliged to respond four times. The gallery gods applauded the music of Liszt, Vieuxtemp, Wagner, Hayden, and other masters. It has never happened before in this city.⁸¹ [We doubt that M. Musin spoke such atrocious French as the reporter records.—Editor.]

Paderewski gave his first concert here in February, 1896. The reporter described him as leaping briskly off his private railway coach upon arrival—an erect little figure, rather under the medium height, his most prominent feature the enormous crop of hair. The effect of this, surmounted by the orthodox silk hat, struck the observer for a moment as grotesque.

Paderewski was just in from San Antonio, a forty-three hour ride, but invited his interviewer to inspect the interior of his car. Within, the most striking object was the Steinway piano, whose gleaming surface was still partially clouded by the desert dust. He had tried practicing while the train was in motion, but found the noise of the locomotive too severe competition. So he played only at moments when the train stopped at wayside stations, whereby Arizona Indians were privileged to hear brief recitals without paying \$2 to \$5 a seat (the Los Angeles scale of prices). In the front of the car was the studio with the piano, next the sleeping quarters, then the dining room, and at the rear the kitchen. The famous pianist traveled with a suite of six persons, including manager, private secretary, valet, chef, and porter, but said the reporter, "without the slightest ostentation."

The piano arrangement was remarkable—for the use of the two new grand Steinway pianos Paderewski was paid a reputed \$150,000 per season, this being the sum the Steinway company had decided it was worth to them to advertise the fact that Paderewski used the Steinway *exclusively*.

Two concerts were given here. Liszt and Chopin were favorite numbers, but a typical program ranged from Liszt's *Rhapsody No. 10* to Schumann's *Papillons*. It commenced with Beethoven's *Sonata in F Minor Op. 57 (Appassionata)*, then Schumann and Schubert, five etudes and valse by Chopin, concluded by three of Liszt's works.⁸²

Music in Los Angeles

Turning in our survey of visiting celebrities from instrumentalists to vocalists, the first to come in view is A. Bienkowski. Mr. Bienkowski may hardly be called a celebrity, being only a San Francisco newsboy, but he was at least a newsboy with an idea. Arriving here in Los Angeles in 1895, Bienkowski had with him his "cosmopolitan" phonograph, also his collection of cylinder-recorded songs from many of the nations of the world, in forty different languages. He was on the first lap of a round-the-world tour, to be financed, he hoped, by the phonograph concerts he would give at each night's stopping place. His purpose was to gather and transcribe on records interesting folk songs from all possible countries. So far his luck had been good, having given profitable recitals at most of the small towns of the San Joaquin Valley.⁸³

More in the conventional mould was the Chicago Lady Quartette, here in 1896—"four young ladies of graceful presence, attired in simple, dove-colored gowns, singing songs everyone can understand—there is something homelike and refining in it." Easily comprehended, too, was the Wagnerian singer, Anton Schott, booked here for the same year, 1896, being by repute a court singer of the Emperor of Germany.⁸⁴

The so-called "queen" of comic opera appeared here in 1892, the scintillating Lillian Russell. Advancing years had laid weight upon her frame and she could no longer be called "airy, fairy Lillian," but, remarked the critics, there was still "the expressive beauty of her face, the laughing eyes, infectuous smile, and musical voice." Her singing seemed strong, true, and vibrant with feeling. She appeared in Audran's opera comique, *La Cigale*.⁸⁵

Alice Nielson, as a young light-opera soprano, came to Los Angeles in 1898, in *The Serenade*, by Victor Herbert, in which she played Yvonne. The *Herald* was much impressed: "The new soprano, Alice Nielson, is a captivating little woman, with a light, flexible voice of great purity and sweetness, and thoroughly at home in the business of the stage, her only prominent defect being a careless and indistinct delivery of her spoken lines, as if she did not think them of any importance. But she sings delightfully, and the waltz song, 'Cupid and I' was exactly suited to the quality of her

voice, its closing cadenza being so brilliantly rendered that she was asked to repeat the song as encore."⁸⁶

Grand opera was represented here by numerous singers, including the great names of Sarah Bernhardt and Melba. A lesser figure but very popular was Emma Juch, who in 1890 played locally in *The Huguenots*, *Rigoletto*, *Lohengrin*, *The Flying Dutchman*, *William Tell*, *Il Trovatore*, and *L'Africaine*. She was assiduous and charming, but a dispute raged here concerning the pronunciation of her family name, epitomized in a poem by the *Times*' Hank Wagoner (Leroy Eugene Mosher) entitled "Emma - - -?" "Juch" it seems, poeticized Wagoner, did not rime with "much" or "scrooch," but with "Luke." And that was that.

Most popular of the lesser operatic figures was the "people's prima donna," Emma Abbott, who had appeared here numerous times before her sudden death, at 41, in Salt Lake City, in 1891. Her singing had touched a popular chord to the tune of some four millions of dollars, being reputed to be one of the wealthiest women in the United States. Only ten days before her decease, Miss Abbott sang here in *Ernani*, *Romeo and Juliet*, *Bohemian Girl*, *Anne Boleyn*, *Rose of Castile*, and *Il Trovatore*. She was renowned for her gorgeous costumes as well as for her vocal power and histrionic ability. An earnest worker, constantly striving to perfect her style, she seemed, however, to lack tragic power, being more at home "in the tenderer passages."⁸⁸

When Sarah Bernhardt appeared in Los Angeles for the first time on September 10, 1891, she was to some Angelenos, few in numbers but loud and vociferous, only "that French actress" who had called her son her "little accident," and who was certainly not to be mentioned in the same breath with that "pure-minded, upright woman" and opera singer, Emma Abbott. Her private life, they declared, had cast more reproach upon the stage than her talent could elevate it. Says such a critic: "We are prone to lionize celebrities from across the water, and when a Langtry or a Bernhardt 'honors' us by taking a goodly portion of our shekels in big prices for second-rate acting, we try to think we have been highly entertained, when in fact we can scarcely conceal our disgust."⁸⁹ Hollywood's varied codes of morality had not yet appeared on the

Music in Los Angeles

scene, and this writer of a letter to the *Times*, no doubt a staunch church member with a conventional standard of conduct, seemed honestly and deeply shocked at the current theatrical gossip about Bernhardt.

The general tone of criticism by dramatic critics and music lovers was, in contrast, highly appreciative. Descriptive terms used in characterizing her stage presence — “perfect spontaneity and naturalness,” “genius of her acting,” “faultless performance,” — rated Bernhardt then not as a woman with perhaps private faults, but as an artist, one of the few supreme figures of our time.

Bernhardt performed here only once, in *Tosca*, considered by most a happy selection for a single night's engagement. It was a fashionable audience that greeted her, probably, said the *Times*, “the most brilliant of the kind ever assembled here.” The gowns, jewels, and coiffures were displayed under clear though garish electric lights strung for the occasion, by managers McLain and Lehman, under the edge of the balcony and in a great star over the stage arch. Box, loge, parquette, dress circle, balcony, and gallery fairly dazzled with beaming faces. Costly jewels sparkled in the light; elegant costumes were everywhere.

To some, the appearance of Madame Bernhardt at first sight was slightly disappointing. Contrary to general impression, she was a woman of only average height, weighing about 140 pounds, with a frankly generous waistline and bust. Her hair was bleached a dull red, and a sharp eye could detect that it was much darker at the roots than toward the extremities. Her throat, however, was sound, firm, and beautifully modeled; her face exquisitely oval, her mouth sensitive, her upper lip noticeably long, the nose just a trifle Hebraic. “Her eyes, as she entered, looked somewhat dull, but from that moment until the edge of her robe disappeared over the edge of the parapet and the curtain fell on the last act, they were even more expressive than her words. To those who could not understand her language, her eyes and face made the whole sad story plain.”

Though Bernhardt herself was superb, the acting of her company as a whole was second rate, which may have accounted for the markedly light applause; although one critic suggests that many

in the fashionable audience had come not because they were capable of appreciating the prima donna's genius but to gratify their scandal-seeking curiosity.⁹⁰

Melba, another great name in the annals of opera, appeared in Los Angeles on two successive nights in April, 1898. She was accompanied by stars of lesser degree—Campanari, and Viviani—and by an excellent orchestra presided over by Signor Bimboni. Melba on her first night sang Rosina in *The Barber of Seville*, her favorite role, and the next evening the feminine lead in *la Traviata*. As Rosina she was, said the critics, "radiant," "versatile and charming," and seemed to join in the enjoyment of the pranks and foolery engaged in by the principals.

At first the audience seemed unresponsive, says the *Herald*, but warmed up in a burst of enthusiasm when Melba, in the second act, after her brilliant rendering of "Contro un cor" in the singing lesson, "sat down to the piano and to her own accompaniment sang Tosti's *Mattitina*. It was charmingly sung, every liquid note as shining as a faultless pearl. This was the audience's opportunity, and the diva was gracious, rewarding the outburst of applause with *Swanee River*, which roused the house to a great display of enthusiasm. The climax was reached when she crashed the preliminary chords of *The Star Spangled Banner*. Melba, although in Spanish costume by force of circumstance [this was during the Spanish-American War], is of the Anglo-Saxon race, and sang every word of the paean of liberty as from her very soul."

In *la Traviata*, "the last scene of the first act was a triumph for Melba, every note of the soliloquy being beautifully rendered. With her voice of incomparable beauty and her remarkable dramatic power she transfigured the opera's commonplaces. Whether the diva has modeled her interpretation of the character after Sarah Bernhardt's or not, she certainly produces an even greater impression than the great French actress herself."⁹¹

So ends our present record of music in Los Angeles during the first fifty American years. A few projections into the twentieth century may help to indicate future trends. A lusty, flourishing Los Angeles Philharmonic Orchestra was in 1900 in its third season, and with Harley Hamilton to be conductor for sixteen successive

Music in Los Angeles

seasons, had finally attained permanent status. L. E. Behymer, whose name is almost synonymous with that of Los Angeles music after the turn of the century, began his career as musical impresario in the fall of 1900 by bringing to Los Angeles the 253-member Maurice Grau Metropolitan Opera Company. Its roster of singers included Melba, Nordica, Journet, De Reszke; with the forty-year-old Walter Damrosch as conductor. In April, 1905, he arranged for a season of the Conreid Metropolitan Opera Company; in 1906 the San Carlo Opera Company, and Sarah Bernhardt at Abbot Kinney's Venice; and Paderewski in 1907. Los Angeles had at last achieved musical maturity.⁹²

NOTES

1. Los Angeles *News* May 21, 1864.
2. *News* July 31, 1866.
3. Los Angeles *Herald* May 26, 1895 (p. 13 col. 1-3). Howard Swan: *Music in the Southwest* (San Marino, Calif. 1952) 86-231.
4. Swan *op. cit.*
5. Mrs. Winfield Scott Hancock: *Reminiscences* (N. Y. 1887) 57-58.
6. Santa Barbara *Gazette* May 22, 1856.
7. Hancock *op. cit.*
8. Bess Adams Garner: *Windows in an Old Adobe* (Claremont 1939) 5.
9. In the Los Angeles County Museum.
10. *News* March 20, 1872.
11. *News* March 24, 1872.
12. Los Angeles *Express* October 11, 21, 1873.
13. Swan *op. cit.*
14. *Herald* Sept. 13, 1876.
15. *Herald* Aug. 7, 1879.
16. *Herald* Jan. 27, 1876.
17. *Herald* March 16, 1879.
18. *Herald* Oct. 4, 1874. Swan *op. cit.*
19. *Herald* Jan. 28, 1879.
20. Swan *op. cit.*
21. *Express* Jan. 14, 1878 (p. 3 col. 3).
22. *Express* May 22, 1873.
23. Swan *op. cit.*
24. *Ibid.*
25. *Express* June 18, 1878 (p. 3 col. 8). *Express* June 25, 1878 (p. 3 col. 3). *Express* Aug. 8, 1878 (p. 3 col. 3).
26. Swan *op. cit.*
27. *Herald* Sept. 30, 1879 (p. 3 col. 3).
28. *Herald* Nov. 19, 1879.
29. Tujunga (Calif.) *Record-Ledger* March 18, 1937 (in W. P. A. files at UCLA). See also C. F. Lummis: *Spanish Songs of Old California* (Los Angeles 1923); and a volume, author unknown, entitled *Spanish American Music* (Santa Ana, Calif. 1934); also W. I. McCoy: *Folk Songs of the Spanish Californians* (San Francisco 1926).
30. *Herald* Oct. 25, 1881.
31. *Herald* Apr. 30, 1890 (p. 2 col. 3-4).
32. *Herald* May 12, 1888 (p. 4 col. 3).
33. *Herald* Nov. 17, 1883 (p. 2 col. 5).
34. *Express* Nov. 14, 1882 (p. 2 col. 5).

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

35. *Herald* Nov. 16, 1883 (p. 2 col. 5).
36. *Herald* Apr. 30, 1890 (p. 2 col. 3-4). *Los Angeles Choral Organizations 1888-1938* (n. p., n. d.) at LAPL.
37. *Ibid.*
38. Swan *op. cit.*
39. Caroline Estes Smith: *The Philharmonic Orchestra of Los Angeles* (Los Angeles 1930) 15-34.
40. Swan *op. cit.*
41. Smith *op. cit.*
42. Sources for the Philharmonic Society of 1887-1889: Smith *op. cit.* *Herald* Apr. 8, 1888 (p. 7 col. 2). *Herald* Oct. 6, 1888 (p. 2 col. 1). *Herald* Oct. 12, 1888 (p. 1 col. 5). *Herald* Dec. 17, 1888 (p. 3 col. 1). *Herald* March 11, 1889 (p. 8 col. 2-3). Programme dated Mar. 5, 1889.
43. *Express* Apr. 15, 1887.
44. *Express* Apr. 17, 1883.
45. Los Angeles *Commercial* Dec. 7, 1881.
46. *Commercial* Dec. 23, 1881.
47. *Express* Jan. 24, 1880.
48. *Commercial* June 20, 1882.
49. *Express* May 3, 1887.
50. *Express* May 20, 1887.
51. Play-bill programme (LAPL).
52. Los Angeles *Times* Jan. 20, 1887.
53. Marco Newmark (interview).
54. *Times* Jan. 21, 1887.
55. *Herald* Jan. 17, 1890 and ff.
56. *Herald* June 14, 1896 (p. 14 col. 4).
57. *Herald* Nov. 3, 1895 (p. 16 col. 4).
58. *Herald* Mar. 18, 1898.
59. *Herald* Jan. 26, 1896 (p. 10 col. 3). *Herald* Feb. 9, 1896 (p. 5 col. 4-5, p. 14 col. 3).
60. *Herald* Aug. 30, 1891 (p. 7 col. 1-2).
61. *Ibid.*
62. *Herald* Nov. 3, 1895 (p. 16, col. 4 and ff).
63. *Herald* Feb. 6, 1898.
64. *Herald* Aug. 30, 1891 (p. 7 col. 1-2).
65. *Herald* Jan. 6, 1895 (p. 9 col. 4-5) Swan *op. cit.*
66. *Herald* Feb. 6, 1898.
67. Swan *op. cit.*
68. *Herald* Feb. 9, 1896 (p. 5 col. 4-5, p. 14 col. 3).
69. *Herald* Jan. 12, 1896 (p. 14 col. 1).
70. *Herald* Feb. 6, 1898.
71. *Ibid.*
72. Sources for the Los Angeles Symphony Orchestra and predecessors: Smith *op. cit.* *Herald* Apr. 30, 1890 (p. 2 col. 3-4). *Express* Oct. 11, 1892 (p. 5 col. 4). *Herald* Feb. 6, 13, 20, 1898. *Herald* Apr. 20, 1898.
73. *Herald* Apr. 26, 1896 (p. 14 col. 3).
74. Isabel C. Wielus: *Los Fiestas de Los Angeles* (Master's Thesis UCLA 1946) 26.
75. Swan *op. cit.*
76. *Herald* Feb. 6, 1898.
77. *Express* Apr. 24, 1894.
78. *Herald* Feb. 23, 1896.
79. *Express* Nov. 9, 1897.
80. *Times, Express* May 25, 1895.
81. *Express* Nov. 20, 21, 1895.
82. *Herald* Feb. 6, 1896. *Herald* Feb. 9, 1896 (p. 5 col. 4-5).
83. *Herald* Oct. 19, 1895.
84. *Herald* Jan. 12, 1896 (p. 14 col. 1).
85. *Times and Express* Oct. 4, 1892.
86. *Herald* Feb. 8, 1898.
87. *Times* Dec. 26, 27, 1890.
88. *Times* Dec. 23, 25, 1890. *Herald* Jan. 6, 1891.
89. *Times* Sept. 19, 1891.
90. *Times, Herald Express* Sept. 15, 1891.
91. *Herald* Apr. 26, 1898.
92. Swan *op. cit.*

How the Railroad Came to Los Angeles

In the September, 1956 issue of the *QUARTERLY*, pages 211 to 224, we published an article entitled "*Serape to Levi . . . Southern Pacific*," by Frank B. Putnam. It recounted in detail the battle which preceded the election on November 5, 1872, when the Southern Pacific Railroad was voted a subsidy that made possible the extension of the line to Los Angeles.

A pamphlet written and published by Judge R. M. Widney turned the tide in favor of the Southern Pacific subsidy. Lack of space prevented the publication of the entire text of this historic document in the September issue. Since this pamphlet is one of the rarest of California political tracts, we regard it essential to publish its full text in order to preserve it for posterity. It was kindly furnished us for his purpose by Frank B. Putnam.—EDITOR.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

LOS ANGELES COUNTY SUBSIDY.

WHICH SUBSIDY SHALL I VOTE FOR,

—OR—

SHALL I VOTE AGAINST BOTH?

DISCUSSED FROM A BUSINESS STANDPOINT

—FOR THE—

BUSINESS COMMUNITY.

—BY—

R. M. WIDNEY.

LOS ANGELES STAR PRINT, 15 SPRING STREET

The Presidential election is of less importance to the people of this county than the election upon the subsidy question.

The first affects us indirectly and only for a period of four years. The other will affect our property immediately to the extent of several millions of dollars by the rise in value, also in the money immediately spent in constructing the road, in additional immigration, in the opening up of new markets for our products, and in the establishment of new commercial relations, which shall continue to affect and control our welfare for centuries to come.

If, through local envy, or from prejudice against individuals, we make a mistake, it can *never* be remedied. For when a subsidy is granted to the amount of 5 per cent, the county is powerless by law to grant another cent to any other road.

If we should fail to get the main trunk road, and it should pass us at a distance, we are off of it forever, for no company will take up its track and relay it through our county.

The matter of subsidy must be considered in a strictly business point of view. It must be determined on the *basis of dollars and cents*, viewing our present and future business.

As to the Stanford Company or the San Diego Company we must care nothing. Which ever benefits us most for the subsidy given is the one to receive the subsidy. If we can make more as a county by retaining our subsidy, and using it in the future to more advantage, then we most vote down both of the subsidy questions.

Taking this view of the matter I ask you to consider carefully, and from a business standpoint, the following propositions. If they are erroneous, then disregard them, but if true, give them your consideration, and act as your interest and the interest of the county dictate.

The first question that arises is:

What do we want *any* railroad for?

1st. It is to carry our corn, barley, hay, stock, vegetables, grapes, oranges, nuts, and other products to the *people who must buy them, and who can buy them in the largest quantities.*

2nd. To *bring to us* the trade and commerce of other localities, their minerals and ores, to bring the people of such localities here for their merchandise and their machinery.

Los Angeles County Subsidy

3rd. To take our people to the cities where they go to trade or visit.

4th. To bring to us people from those localities where there are people desiring to visit us and to immigrate to this part of the country.

Take the first of the above propositions. We produce for sale, corn, barley, bacon, stock, oranges, grapes, etc. We sell to San Diego all she can consume. In fact we control her market *now*, and no other part of the State can compete with us. We are the nearest, and have the ocean for shipping.

We do not, therefore, wish to pay for building a road to a market we now and always must control. Besides, the road will be about 130 miles in length. Fifteen dollars per ton per 100 miles is the legal limit for freight charges, which would be \$18.50 per ton freight charges. The *cost of freighting* per ton per 100 miles is \$3.50. This is without any profit to the railroad company, being wear and tear of cars, track, wages of employees, etc. These figures were given me by the conductors and freight men on the railroads in the upper part of the State. The *cost to the railroad company* from here to San Diego could not be less than \$4.67 per ton. With the profit of the company added thereto, *freight would be not less than from \$7 to \$9 per ton.*

Therefore if the route to San Diego were built *you as a farmer, or as a producer would not ship a single ton of freight over the road to San Diego*, because you can ship it by ocean for about half the cost by railroad.

This is true of your own knowledge as to shipping our produce to San Diego for her consumption. It is equally true, of all produce that is *proposed to be shipped from San Diego to other parts of the world*. We *do* take it to San Diego cheaper by water than the proposed railroad can under any circumstances.

Consider a moment, what new ports, or new markets of the world are to be opened up by the construction of the San Diego road. A ship can sail from San Pedro to any port of the world that a ship can sail to San Diego. And you know it only costs now \$2.50 per ton, including lighterage and railroad charges, to put grain on board a vessel at San Pedro; whereas it must cost about

\$9 per ton to put the same ton of grain on board a vessel at San Diego by railroad. When once loaded the vessel sails from San Pedro to any port. Therefore you do not want to go to San Diego by railroad with your freight for ocean shipping.

Only one other line of commerce can be opened from San Diego. That is by the Texas Pacific railroad out into Arizona. There is no market on that route west of the Colorado river, it being a desert of mud volcanoes and sand. The market lies *east* of the Colorado. Here you must remember that Stanford's road connects with the Texas Pacific at or near the Colorado, and from Los Angeles to the Colorado on Stanford's road is one-third nearer than on the San Diego and Texas Pacific road. Therefore *as the Stanford road gives us a nearer route to the Arizona trade than the line of the Texas Pacific by over 100 miles, this San Diego road does not and can not give us any new markets.* Let those who tell you in general terms that the railroad to San Diego will open up new markets, give to you the name of each identical market; also let them show you how you cannot now reach the same, at less cost, either from San Pedro, Anaheim Landing, or by the Stanford road. When they have done this, then remember that you can land all your produce in San Diego *by water for about one-half the cost by the railroad.*

Therefore, so far as new markets and trade with the world, or with San Diego is concerned, the road from here to San Diego is useless and of no value whatever.

2d. It *does not propose to bring to us* the trade of other localities. The object of the road is to take trade *to San Diego*. The last arguments above that we reach all points by other routes cheaper than by this also applies here.

3d. How often do you each year want to go to San Diego on any business whatever? How often would you use the road if built?

4th. How many visitors from San Diego come to this county per year? How many land buyers? How many immigrants?

What use have you or the people of this county for a railroad to San Diego that you should pay \$377,000 for the same? If it is of no use to you or to the county how is it going to increase the value of your property, except by a temporary and fictitious advance, if any? It is settled that Scott's road will come through the

Los Angeles County Subsidy

San Gorgonio pass, and most likely through Santa Ana Cañon within six miles of Anaheim. In that event do you want to give a subsidy to the San Diego road of \$377,000 for building a road about 30 miles long? Any company will for \$100,000 subsidy build the same, and thus save the county \$277,000.

Suppose Scott should conclude to terminate his road at the Colorado junction, for the reason that it will not pay him to run a road by the side of Stanford's from the Colorado to Anaheim Cañon. In that case the road to San Diego is worthless, and your subsidy lost. Until the San Diego road has fixed its terminus or junction with Scott's road why should you vote it \$377,000?

THE STANFORD PROPOSITION

The railroad proposed to be built by Stanford leads from this city north to San Francisco, there connecting with the entire railroad system of the Pacific Coast, extending to Oregon, and with the trans-continental road, by the latter reaching the entire railroad system of the northern States. From here it also leads east to the Colorado river, connecting with Scott's Texas Pacific road, and through it connecting with the entire system of railroads in the Southern States.

From near the Colorado Stanford's road connects with the 35th Parallel Railroad, and through it with the railroad system of all the Middle States.

The Stanford road together with the Port of San Pedro, connects us at once with the commercial points of the world, and does it by more direct routes than any other road can.

Take our peculiar products, the oranges, lemons, almonds, walnuts and other semi-tropical fruits. On the Stanford road we freight them north and sell them *along the road from here to San Francisco*, all of which is a *new* market. Then, by the railroads north to Oregon and east through Nevada and through the Northern States. The latter markets will be new, for the quick transit by railroad will bring such products into those markets before the fruit decays. *None of the above markets can be reached by the San Diego Road.*

Again, the present freight charges from here to Lone Pine and Cerro Cordo by mule team is \$90 per ton, a distance of 250 miles.

Stanford's road runs 150 miles of that distance. His outside charge for the 150 miles by law is \$22.50. But as we said of the San Diego road, one half of the legal limit is the usual charge, therefore Stanford would charge \$11.25 *for freighting 150 miles, which now costs by mule team \$54, saving \$42.75 per ton.*

This cheap freight will cause to be shipped from those mining districts and others, tens of thousands of tons of low grade ores through or to this place, or to San Pedro, and thence to Europe, as is now shipped from the mines of Nevada and California by way of San Francisco.

It will be shipped from San Pedro, because from such point near Lone Pine and Cerro Gordo it is over 350 miles to San Francisco, and only 150 miles to this place, which difference of 200 miles makes the cost *to San Francisco \$15 per ton more than to San Pedro.*

A market through this place for the low grade ores of those mines will cause a large increase in the working force and population of those mining districts, which increases again the demand and market for our produce.

San Francisco cannot compete with us in that market, for she must pay \$24.50 per ton to get her freight there, while we will pay only \$11.50 per ton.

Nearly all of our immigration reaches us *through San Francisco, none through San Diego.*

You well know that all of our immigrants and visitors complain only because we are not connected with the railroads of the north part of the State. *They do not want to travel on a road to San Diego from here. They want to come from San Francisco and other northern lines of travel.* All these are benefited by the Stanford road; none of them by the San Diego road.

How often do you, as a merchant or a business man want to visit San Diego each year on business? Not once a year. How often do you, and the business men of the county, visit San Francisco on business? All your business is transacted there, and to there you make all your business trips.

If the above is true, then all this business community is benefitted by the Stanford road, and the San Diego road is of no business use to the people of this county.

Los Angeles County Subsidy

To whatever extent you carry the investigation the same results are found. *All of which are given to us by the Stanford Road; none of which, and nothing in place of them are given by the San Diego Road.*

The Stanford Road, east from here connects with Scott's Texas Pacific Road at the Colorado. And it is one third nearer to Los Angeles from the point by Stanford's Road than to San Diego and on its road here. Therefore, however unlimited and great the commerce, trade, market, travel, etc., may be on Scott's Road east of the Colorado river, we control it by Stanford's Road at less cost than by the San Diego Road, Why do you or the people of this county want to build a road from here to San Diego, and thereby, *increase your distance to the market east of the Colorado* over 100 miles farther than by the Stanford Road, is a question for your serious consideration before voting. It is common for people to build extensive roads to *shorten* the distance to market, but never do they build roads to *increase the distance* 100 miles out of every 250 miles.

The Stanford Road connects with the 35th Parallel Road, or any central road running through the northern part of Arizona.

Freight by mule team from this place to Prescott is \$240 per ton. By Stanford's Road, charging the outside legal freight, the rate would be \$52.50 per ton, *a difference of \$187.50 per ton.* To Wickenburg, by mule team, \$220 per ton; by Stanford's Road, utmost charge allowed by law, \$45 per ton, saving \$175 per ton.

Charging at the usual rates, the difference to Prescott would be \$213.76 per ton less by Stanford's Road than now by mule team; to Wickenburg \$197.50 per ton will be saved. *The same state of facts applies to all the markets and mining districts in north part of Arizona.*

The ores and minerals of all of the present mining region of Arizona can by the Stanford Road be brought to this place or to the ocean at San Pedro at a cost of about \$30 per ton, against \$240 per ton, the present charge by mule team.

This would bring into market the millions of tons of low grade ores of northern Arizona, and would give employment to tens of thousands of people to work in the mines, where now not a person is employed. *It would settle up northern Arizona as Nevada is now*

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

settled. All of those people and their families would create a demand for our produce, and our merchandise, giving employment to our foundaries, workshops and woolen mills.

Your own business observations, as well as the history of commerce, teach you and each voter in this county that the above results must flow from the construction of the Stanford Road. Not one of the same results, or any in place of them, are to be obtained by the San Diego Road.

So, also, your semi-tropical fruits, nuts, grapes, etc., are by the quick transit of the cars carried to all the markets of the Territories, and you must bear in mind that the *San Diego Road* only carries your freight *to San Diego, there to be transhipped* to other points over other routes.

THE VALUE OF THE RAILROAD IMPROVEMENTS

All the workshops, repairing shops, etc., of the San Diego Road will be located at San Diego and not in this county. For these reasons: Scott will have at San Diego his repairing shops, etc., and will do all repairing for the branch to this place, which is to be given him. Again, San Diego is on the tide water, Los Angeles city 20 miles inland. It is, therefore, cheaper to have the shops, material, etc., at San Diego. For the same reason, the residence of the employees of the road will be in San Diego and not here. The headquarters of all the officers will be there. The only money spent by the San Diego Company in this county for permanent improvements will be for the naked track and a few cheap depots, probably amounting to about \$800,000.

The merchants, mechanics, tradesmen, professional men, laborers and farmers of San Diego will reap the benefit of all local improvement of this road, and not those in this city and county.

THE SAN DIEGO RAILROAD IS THE DEADLIEST ENEMY TO
OUR MOST VALUABLE LOCAL IMPROVEMENT, I.E.

THE WILMINGTON HARBOR

It is to the interest of that Road to utterly destroy the Wilmington Harbor, to stop all Government appropriations for its im-

Los Angeles County Subsidy

provement, to close it as a port of entry or delivery to the world. For if it can do these things then it will reap its richest harvests of coin, *for all the produce of this county will be forced to San Diego over the Railroad, and all of our imports will have to come here over the same railroad.* Let Tom Scott own this Road, as it is to be given him, and with his influence in Congress, and the argument that the people of this county are abandoning Wilmington harbor and giving more in subsidy to build a railroad to San Diego than the Government has yet expended on the harbor, he will succeed in closing our harbor, and stopping all improvement on it.

Already the attack is commenced. The Pacific Mail Steamship Company *refuse to receive our freight and demand that it shall be sent to San Diego for shipment.* That Company now owns the Horton wharf, and it is to its interest to close our port and force our freight to San Diego, to its wharves and into its warehouses. *Is it a safe business transaction for you thus to create in this county a railroad whose only chance for a profitable business is in destroying your harbor, your point of connection with the commerce of all foreign nations?*

Let the Act of Congress of 1870 making it a port of delivery be repealed, and you can neither ship to a foreign port nor receive imports from them. For all vessels will first have to go to the Custom House either at San Francisco or at San Diego, thus costing from \$4 to \$6 per ton extra.

If, in addition, the Government work on the harbor can be stopped, it will be but a short time until the whole harbor is destroyed even for a coasting business.

Is it safe for this county to pay \$377,000 for building the San Diego Railroad in view of the above facts?

HOW IS IT WITH THE STANFORD ROAD?

There will be 85 miles from this city north towards Tehatchepe, 35 miles east towards San Bernardino, and 20 miles to Anaheim. The subsidy to Stanford therefore represents 140 miles of railroad in this county. The machine shops, repairing shops, foundaries, etc., necessary to keep these roads and the cars in running order, must be in this county. For it will never pay Stanford's Company to take

its cars, engines, etc., to San Francisco, some 500 miles, for repairs. Because coal, iron, wood and material for repairing can be landed from London or New York, or any foreign port, at this place for the same cost as at San Francisco. Even less, for here are no port, pilot or wharf charges. Neither are rents or taxes so high, nor the cost of living. Therefore, all shops and foundaries for repairing the road not only in this county but the eastern divisions clear to the Colorado, and north, half way to San Francisco, will be located here. The value, therefore, of the improvements of the Stanford Company, permanently located in this county, will not be less than \$5,000,000. Now, let this property be assessed at half its value, \$2,500,000, and it is our fault if we do not elect honest assessors to thus assess the Road, and your fault if you do not have the Board of Equalization raise it if assessed at less. At 1.90 per cent, this year's rate of county taxes, Stanford's Company will pay to this county \$47,500 taxes each year.

The county will pay 7 per cent interest on \$377,000 additional county subsidy bonds, being \$24,390. *In other words, Stanford's Company pays the county \$23,210 more in taxes than he receives from the county as interest on his bonds for subsidy.*

The San Diego Road in this county, costing \$800,000, assessed at the same rate as Stanford's, as above, one half its cost, \$400,000, would pay a tax to this county of \$7,600 each year, and the county would pay the San Diego Road 7 per cent interest on \$377,000, or \$24,390. The county thereby losing annually \$16,790.

The employees of the Stanford Company, with their families, will mostly settle here, in preference to settling out on the line of the Road to the Colorado. Our climate, products, schools and society will always make this their most desirable place for residence. There will thus be added several millions of dollars taxable property to this county. The wages paid these employees will be principally spent here, and will go into the hands of our farmers, mechanics, and tradesmen.

You must also remember that all of this will be foreign capital and will be so much added to our circulating medium. A tight money market would in such a case be unknown to you. There would not be less than \$300,000 every year thus added to the cir-

Los Angeles County Subsidy

culating medium of this county, additional to the cost of building the road.

STANFORD COMPANY AND WILMINGTON HARBOR

It is to the financial interest of the Stanford Company to have the Government complete the Breakwater; also, to make appropriations to dredge out the bar and harbor so as to admit the largest Panama or ocean steamers. Because it will increase the commerce on his Roads, will settle up all this county and the country back, will give a port to contest with San Francisco and San Diego for the commerce of China and Japan across the continent; either to the Colorado river, thence over the Texas Pacific, Scott's Road, or over the 35th Parallel Road; it frees the Stanford Company from the avaricious grasp of San Francisco.

With Stanford's great influence in Congress exerted in our behalf, and with our cooperation, we are safe in saying that the Government work on the Wilmington harbor will not be stopped until it is enlarged and deepened so as to receive with safety the largest steamers for China and Japan.

The Government engineers now report that it is certain that a depth of 25 feet at low tide can be had in the harbor and across the bar at comparatively small expense to the Government.

Under the Acts of Congress Stanford's Road connects with the Scott Road. Therefore all of Scott's San Francisco passengers and freight will run over the Stanford Road through this place to San Francisco, and all of the San Francisco passengers and freight for the East on Scott's Road will run over Stanford's Road.

This obviates all necessity of Scott's building a Road from San Diego to San Francisco. The argument, therefore, that if we build a road to San Diego, Scott will continue it to San Francisco, is without foundation.

Again, Stanford's Road gives us at once an *opposition to the ocean steamers to San Francisco*. The San Diego Road creates a monopoly because it only carries our freight *130 miles farther from San Francisco to the wharf of a Steamship Company owning all the steamers to San Francisco*, which Steamship Company already compels our freight to go to San Diego to be put on board its vessels.

Stanford's Road is therefore our only chance for the opposition we have so long desired.

Stanford's Road enables us to reap the benefits of all opposition between the 35th and 32d Parallel Roads, as his Road connects with both of them.

The San Diego Road connects only with the 32d Parallel Road, and at once makes a monopoly against us, both across the continent and to San Francisco.

Stanford's Road makes this county the second railroad center on this Coast, San Francisco being first. The San Diego Road makes this county an insignificant terminus of a useless railroad (unless it can destroy and close our harbor), placing the county *130 miles inland from San Diego*, and making our farmers and producers *pay tribute forever to San Diego* commission merchants, wharves, and warehouses.

The San Diego Road, terminating at Los Angeles, places Anaheim 46 miles by railroad from Wilmington harbor, and places Los Nietos 32 miles from the same place. The Stanford branch places Anaheim 26 to 28 miles from Wilmington harbor, saving 16 miles, and Los Nietos about 18 miles from it, saving 14 miles. And for all freight to Arizona, or across the continent, or to San Francisco, or to Los Angeles, the distance is only 2 to 4 miles farther from either of those places, and would make no difference in the freight charges.

The good faith of Stanford's Company is shown by their refusal to terminate the Anaheim branch in Los Angeles City. The people of this city have not right to demand it. Anaheim and Los Nietos pay part of the subsidy, and are entitled to have the branch located exclusively for their benefit. This city gets the main trunk, and should be satisfied. It has no right to uselessly force the freight of those places through its city limits.

To build the Stanford Roads will cause an expenditure of over \$1,000,000 in this county for labor, teams and supplies within the year. What you want is an immediate market in this county for your grain, hay and merchandise. And to complete the Stanford Road to the Colorado will cause the expenditure of over \$5,000,000 here during the next five years. This is a practical business point

Los Angeles County Subsidy

for you to consider. The San Diego Road, will, on the same basis spend only a few hundred thousand dollars in all.

In view of all of the foregoing facts, is it not safe to estimate that the Stanford roads will, during the next five years, increase the value of property in this county, from \$20,000,000, to \$30,000,000.

And is it not equally true that the San Diego road will damage the value of property in this county, by reason of its natural enmity to our harbor, and the fact that it must increase our freight charges even to San Diego?

There is but one argument against the Stanford subsidy. "By the Act of Congress he must come through this place, whether the subsidy is voted or not," as the charter now stands. True. But when his advocates show in Congress, that in order to reach Los Angeles from Tehatchape, he must tunnel through four ranges of mountains, and add 50 miles of heavy grade to the length of his road, in running less than 200 miles, and that the Government lands of any value on the Los Angeles route are all located, and that on the other line from Tehatchepe to San Bernardino the route is level and the public lands unoccupied, so that he can have them; and that the shortest route is the one most important to the General Government and to trans-continental commerce. When this is represented, and Tom Scott backs up the argument by his influence, with a view to force our freight over his road; and the friends and owners of the San Diego and Los Angeles road, and the cities of San Diego and of San Francisco assist, how long will it take to have the Act of Congress changed, and Los Angeles left entirely off the Stanford Road.

Stanford says *he will do it*, that it is to *the interest of his Company to do it*, and that our *subsidy does not compensate him for his loss of subsidy in public lands and additional length of road*.

Can you, or the people of this county, afford to take the chances or run the risk. If you can, then vote against both subsidies. If you cannot afford to run the risk, then vote for the Stanford subsidy.

But some say, "I am opposed to subsidies generally." Why? To illustrate:

You propose to erect \$5,000,000 worth of improvements on

your own land, adjoining my land, thereby increasing the value of my land say \$500,000.

You demand of me \$50,000 subsidy, on the threat that if I do not pay it you will erect your improvements on a distant tract of land. It is not a business act for me to refuse on the ground that it is for your interest as well as mine to erect the improvements near my land.

If these are your terms I would commit a great financial error in not paying you \$50,000 to have my property increased \$500,000 in value.

California has paid some \$5,000,000 subsidy to various railroads. The property of the State has been thereby increased in value over \$100,000,000.

Why shall the State complain of such a transaction? The railroads pay a tax to the State and counties far greater in amount than the interest paid to the railroad companies on the bonds.

Again, *to build all the railroads, the capital is brought to this State from a foreign country*, thus increasing our money circulation and keeping down the rates of interest.

WILL STANFORD FULFILL HIS WRITTEN AGREEMENT AND
BUILD THE ANAHEIM ROAD?

Why not? Can you name the city or county to which he gave a written promise or agreement and failed to fulfill it? Has any public journal cited the names of such cities, towns or counties, or the terms of the contract? Only those interested in defeating Stanford charge him with bad faith, but they take good care to give no names or terms of contracts which they say he has broken.

It is generally the fact that unscrupulous persons resort to slander and personal abuse only when they have no good argument to sustain them. An honest person will not intentionally tell a falsehood against the character of even his worst enemy; neither will he assert that to be true, against the character of any one, *which he does not know to be true*.

Are there, then, any grounds shown to prove that he will not keep his written contract with this county?

Consider, therefore, the question of voting on the subsidy from

Los Angeles County Subsidy

a business standpoint, and cast your vote as your own honest judgment dictates.

BRIBERY AND BUYING VOTES

Are now crimes under the new election law, punishable either by fine, not exceeding \$1,000, or by imprisonment in the State Prison, not exceeding five years, or by both.

“Every person who, by force, threats, menaces, *bribery*, or *any corrupt means*, either *directly* or *indirectly attempts to INFLUENCE* any elector in giving his vote, etc., etc., is guilty of a misdemeanor.”

Penal Code, Sec. 53.

“Every person who, with intent to promote the election of himself or any other person, either:

1. Furnishes entertainment at his expense to any meeting of electors previous to or during an election.

2. Pays for, procures, or engages to pay for any such entertainment.

3. Furnishes or engages to pay or deliver any money or property for the purpose of *procuring the attendance of voters at the polls*, or for the purpose of compensating any person for procuring attendance of voters at the polls, *except for the conveyance of voters who are sick or infirm*.

4. Furnishes, or engages to pay or deliver, any money or property *for any purpose intended to promote the election* of any candidate, except for the expenses of holding and conducting public meetings for the discussion of public questions, and printing and circulating ballots, handbills and other papers previous to such elections, is guilty of a misdemeanor.

Penal Code, Sec. 54.

If, hereafter, the traffic in votes and the influence of money on the elections is permitted to continue, it will be the fault of the people of the county. In each precinct steps should be taken to detect any violation of these laws and furnish the evidence thereof to the District Attorney or Grand Jury.

It is charged that the Stanford Company will use money to buy votes.

It is but a matter of justice to say that Stanford's Company has

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

already contributed liberally to a fund raised in this city to be used in employing detectives in the various precincts in detecting any buying or selling of votes, or other violation of the election laws.

If those who are opposed to election frauds will act as the Law now gives them power, it will be but a short time until those who violate the law will receive punishment, and our elections will be the honest expression of the will of the majority.



Historical Profiles

By Marco R. Newmark

XXXIX

JUNIPERO SERRA

That heroic character known in history as Junipero Serra was a native of Petra, which was on the Island of Mallorca in the Mediterranean Sea, one hundred twenty miles off the Coast of Spain. He was baptized Miguel Jose Serra on the day of his birth on November 24, 1713, and it was on September 15, 1731, when he pronounced the vows of obedience, poverty and chastity that he chose the name of Junipero.

He received the sacrament of confirmation in the parish church of Petra on May 26, 1715. His mother took charge of his religious education and his secular education was acquired in the primary school conducted by the Franciscans in his native town. At the age of sixteen he had secured the classical education necessary to prepare him for admission into the Order of Friars Minor. He applied to the Franciscan Provincial for the habit of St. Francis, but he appeared to be of a frail constitution and undersized. The request was therefore denied. The ardent postulant, however, continued to petition until he was accepted, and he received the habit on September 14, 1730.

For two years he studied philosophy at the Convento Grande de San Francisco in the City of Palma. Of these two years he said later: "When I was a novice I was always sickly and very small of body but after I had made the vows I began to grow in strength and health until I reached medium height."

After completing his course in philosophy he took a course in theology to which he devoted himself for four years. He was ordained a priest in the summer of 1737. Even before his ordination he was made a professor of philosophy at his monastery and so served for three years.

Later he received the degree of Doctor of Divinity and was

elected to the Duns Scotus Chair of Theology at the University of Palma. He held the chair until 1749, when he set aside all worldly prospects in order to labor for the conversion of the savages in America, in spite of the fact that he had a high position in the church, and that there was a strong possibility that he would eventually be elected to the College of Cardinals. Together with Fray Francisco Palou, one of his pupils, he embarked on April 13, 1749, and reached Cadiz, Spain, on May 7.

A company of twenty-one volunteer missionaries, including Fray Junipero, Fray Francisco and Fray Juan Crespi, set sail for Vera Cruz, Mexico, where they landed on December 7. Other missionaries made the trip to Mexico City on foot, but Fray Serra determined to travel the nearly one hundred leagues on horseback, but Fray Junipero insisted on going on foot.

One night, while asleep, the itching caused by mosquito bites induced Fray Junipero to scratch his left foot and leg so vigorously that a vicious sore formed on the leg, which at times became very painful. In spite of the agony he continued to walk and on December 31, 1749, he and his companions reached the shrine of Our Lady of Guadalupe, which was near Mexico City, and on New Year's Day they were welcomed at the Missionary College of San Fernando.

A few months later Fray Junipero and Fray Francisco, with six other friars, were selected for the Indian missions in the Sierra Gorda. They labored there from January 16, 1750, to the middle of September, 1758. While engaged in this missionary activity among the Mexicans, Fray Junipero contracted a malady which ever after produced fits of suffocation. In order to excite the Mexicans to do penance for their unchristian conduct. Fray Junipero often beat himself with a stone or applied a burning torch to his bare breast or flogged himself unmercifully. These actions, together with his great eloquence, had wonderful results.

In July, 1767, Fray Junipero was chosen to lead a band of sixteen missionaries who were to take the place of as many Jesuit Fathers in the missions of Lower California. They arrived at Loreto on Good Friday, April 1, 1768.

Fray Junipero had been in Loreto about nine months when



—Photo courtesy Title Insurance and Trust Co.

FRAY JUNIPERO SERRA



—Photo courtesy Title Insurance and Trust Co.

MANUEL DOMINGUEZ

Historical Profiles

he was informed that the Spanish Government intended to occupy Upper California and to establish missions for the Indians in that territory. Fray Junipero immediately offered his services. Expeditions by land and water were directed to unite at the harbor of San Diego, which in 1542, Juan Cabrillo had named San Miguel Bay.

Fray Junipero Serra was the founder of the missionary movement in California.

The story of the missions began in the reign of Carlos III, King of Spain, 1750-1788. During his reign Spain's possession of Upper California was threatened by the Russians, who were coming down from the North on hunting expeditions. The King's viceroy in Mexico was the Marquis de Croix and he was selected to take care of the military situation in the Province.

In 1768, King Carlos issued a decree by the terms of which the Jesuits were expelled from Lower California, and the Franciscans and Dominicans were installed in their place. At about this time Fray Junipero assigned Lower California to the Dominicans and Upper California to himself and his Franciscan brethren.

The Indians acquired wives by purchase, the medium of exchange being shells and deerskins, and polygamy was a common practice among the chiefs, and their food consisted of elk meat, dried fish, eels, acorns, nuts and berries. The missionaries taught them horticulture, agriculture and cattle raising; provided them with an elementary education; instructed them in the rules of health protection; instructed them in the manufacture of implements; gave them a code of morality, including elimination of polygamy, and persuaded them to substitute a church wedding for the purchase of wives.

The names of the Missions, the dates of their founding and who founded them:

San Diego de Alcalá—July 17, 1769—Fray Junipero

San Carlos Borromeo, close to the Carmel River—June 3, 1770—
Fray Junipero

San Antonio de Padua, Monterey County—July 14, 1771—Fray
Junipero

San Gabriel Arcangel—September 8, 1771—Fray Junipero

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

San Luis de Obispo de Tolosa—September 1, 1772—Fray Junipero
San Francisco de Assis (Mission Dolores)—June 29, 1776—Fray
Francisco Palou

San Juan Capistrano—November 1, 1776—Fray Fermin de Lasuen
Santa Clara de Assis—January 12, 1777—Fray Tomas de la Pena

San Buenaventura—May 31, 1782—Fray Junipero

Santa Barbara—December 4, 1786—Fray Fermin

La Purisima Conception, a few miles north of Santa Barbara—De-
cember 2, 1787—Fray Fermin

Santa Cruz—August 20, 1791—Fray Fermin

Nuestra Señora de Soledad—October 9, 1791—Fray Fermin

San Juan Bautista, Monterey County—June 24, 1797—Fray Fermin

San Miguel Arcangel, San Luis Obispo County—July 25, 1797—
Fray Fermin

San Fernando, Rey de Espana—September 28, 1797—Fray Fran-
cisco de Palu

San Luis Rey de Francia—June 13, 1798—Fray Estavan Tapis

Santa Ines—September 17, 1804—Fray Estavan Tapis

San Raphael Arcangel—December 14, 1817—Fray Vicente Fran-
cisco Sarria

San Francisco Solano (Sonoma)—July 4, 1823—Fray Jose Altimura

Some of the original missions were crude constructions or
were deteriorated by earthquakes and the ravages of time. They
have now been completely restored or rebuilt, except Santa Clara
de Assis and Nuestra Señora Soledad.

The saintly Junipero Serra passed away on August 28, 1784.

Some years after his death his statue was rightfully placed in
the Hall of Fame in Washington.

* * *

THE DOMINGUEZ FAMILY

1719-1956

XL

JUAN JOSE DOMINGUEZ

Juan José Dominguez, who was born in Spain in 1719, was
a soldier in the Spanish Colonial Army on the West Coast. He was

Historical Profiles

of the Company of Catalán Volunteer Light Infantry under Lieutenant Pedro Fages, which in 1769 took part in the Portolá expedition to Monterey.

In about 1784 Juan José, being an "old soldier who just faded away from the army," sent a request to his company commander, Pedro Fages, then governor of Alta California (Upper California) for a land allotment. He had chosen the site of the original Rancho San Pedro, comprising some 46,000 acres. This grant was made to him in 1784. Upon his occupancy of the land in 1784, he constructed his adobe house on what is now known as Dominguez Hill.

The boundaries of the Rancho San Pedro comprised the area bounded on the East by the present Los Angeles River, on the North by a high road, now named Rosecrans Avenue, and on the West and South by the Pacific Ocean.

Juan José Dominguez, who never married, occupied the Rancho until the increasing infirmity of age caused him to retire to Mission Juan Capistrano in 1804. He died there in 1809, leaving his beloved lands in care of his Mayor-domo, Manuel Gutierrez. It was Gutierrez who granted to the Sepulvedas a grazing permit for the Palos Verdes Hills area which later permitted them to secure ownership under the doctrine of right of possession.

CHRISTOBAL DOMINGUEZ

Christóbal Dominguez was a nephew of Juan José Dominguez, and like his uncle, was a soldier in the Spanish army. He was in charge of the troops at Mission San Juan Capistrano while Juan José Dominguez was there from 1804 to 1809, and he acquired the Rancho by will. Christóbal Dominguez, however, did not retire from the army until 1817, during which time the care of the property remained with Gutierrez, who by that time claimed actual ownership. In 1822, after five years of petitioning, Governor Pablo Vicente Sola issued a certificate of ownership to the Dominguez family, which constituted the second grant.

Christobal Dominguez died in San Diego in 1825. He was survived by his wife and six children.

MANUEL DOMINGUEZ

Manuel Dominguez was the oldest of the children of Christóbal Dominguez. He was born in San Diego in 1803. When twenty-two years of age he took over the management of the Rancho. Although he had received only his pro-rata share of the land by his father's will he proceeded to purchase shares of others until he had sole ownership of 25,000 acres.

Not only was Don Manuel an able rancher and cattleman but during his entire mature life he was active in civic and political affairs. He refused many offices but a resumé of a few he occupied is as follows:

In 1828, he was a member of the *Ayuntamiento* (Town Council of the *Pueblo* of Los Angeles). In 1832 he was *Alcalde* (Mayor) and Judge of the First Instance. In 1833 he was Territorial Representative to the State Assembly, in Monterey. In 1842 he was *Alcalde* again. In 1843 he was Prefect of the Second District, an office second only to that of Governor. In 1848 he was a delegate to the state convention which was convened for the purpose of framing a state constitution. The constitution was adopted in 1849; and in 1852 he was a supervisor of Los Angeles County.

In 1826, a new house was built on Dominguez Hill. This building still stands. It is marked as a California Historical landmark and houses a museum of some distinction. The original house is now being reduced to a mound of *adobe* close by.

During the entire period of his occupancy of the Rancho efforts were continually directed to secure a better title to the property, which ended successfully in 1858 by a patent signed by President James Buchanan. This was the third and final grant of title.

Manuel Dominguez had married Maria Engracia Cota in 1827. Ten children were born to them. Only six—all daughters—lived to survive their father and mother, who died respectively, in 1882 and 1883.

DAUGHTERS OF MANUEL DOMINGUEZ

By the will of Manuel Dominguez all his property was left

Historical Profiles

to his wife, except \$5.00 in gold to each daughter and, as upon his death no new will was made, the result was that Doña Maria died intestate.

The surviving daughters were Anna Josepha, Guadalupe Marcelina, Maria Dolores, Victoria Susana and Maria de Los Reyes. Each sister wished to obtain title to her own portion of the property rather than hold an undivided interest in the whole, and as the lands varied considerably in value, a voluntary petition was filed requesting the courts to make a partition and distribution. The petition was granted and the partition and distribution were confirmed in 1885. This partition affected 25,000 acres and conveyed separate titles in various types of land and in various locations to each of the sisters with one parcel, the so-called Estuary Tract property, including Rattlesnake Island, comprising about 3,000 acres held in undivided ownership.

FORMATION OF PRESENT LAND COMPANIES

In 1909, Mrs. Anna Josepha Dominguez de Guyer, a widow with no children, passed away. She had willed all her property to the surviving five sisters in undivided interests. Instead of going through another long drawn out and expensive partition, the suggestion was made that her property be deeded to a corporation in which the five sisters would take equal amounts of stock. This was accomplished in 1910 by formation of Dominguez Estate Company.

In 1912, Guadalupe Dominguez, a single woman, conveyed all her property to the company, the consideration being the payment to her of \$1,000 per month for life. She received this income only until 1913, for her death occurred on January 2, of that year.

In 1928 and 1929, Maria de Los Reyes Dominguez (Mrs. Maria de los Reyes Francis, a widow with no children), conveyed most of her property to the company.

Thus, Dominguez Estate Company came into control of the interests of three of the daughters of Manuel Dominguez. Separate corporations were formed for the purpose of holding the lands of Victoria Dominguez (Mrs. George Carson), Carson Estate Company, Susana Dominguez (Mrs. Dr. Gregoria Del Amo), Del Amo

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Estate Company and Maria Dolores Dominguez (Mrs. James Watson), and Watson Land Company.

PRESENT COMMUNITIES INCLUDED IN BOUNDARIES OF
ORIGINAL RANCHO

In 1838, possibly in settlement of a controversy, 4,600 acres were allotted to Rosario de Ferrer, a niece of Manuel Dominguez. This area includes the present City of Compton.

In 1846, a long dispute between the Dominguez and Sepulveda families was ended by the grant of the Palos Verdes Hills area to the Sepulvedas by reason of continuous occupancy.

In 1854, 2,400 acres were sold to John G. Downey and Benjamin D. Wilson. This was later conveyed in part to the Bannings and comprises the present Wilmington area. (Phineas Banning founded the Town of New San Pedro in 1859. The name was soon changed to Wilmington.)

In 1887, 1,200 acres were sold to General Henry Ainsworth from whom it was acquired by the Huntington interests and the City of Redondo resulted.

In 1893, 3,000 acres—the entire Estuary Tract Rattlesnake Island area—were sold to Los Angeles Terminal Island Company. (The name of Rattlesnake Island was later changed to Terminal Island.)

In 1911, 3,500 acres were sold to Jared S. Torrance and associates, from which was developed the present City of Torrance.

Also, in 1911 was formed the Dominguez Water Company to provide necessary domestic and irrigation water from the Rancho lands. This company was succeeded in 1937 by the Dominguez Water Corporation, a wholly owned public utility, now serving over 10,000 consumers.

Other communities are the unincorporated Dominguez and Davidson townsites, and in addition substantial blocks of land have been sold to General Petroleum Corporation, Shell Oil Company, and other industrial users.

In 1921, oil was discovered on the property and the first development occurred on Dominguez Hill and later in the Torrance

Historical Profiles

area. Many thousands of barrels of oil have been and still are being produced from these fields.

PRESENT USE OF OLD HOME PLACE AND THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE RANCHO

As previously noted, the 1826 house is now a museum and the building with about seventeen acres of the old homestead is occupied by the Order of Claretian Missionary Fathers. This is a religious order of men devoted mainly to missionary activities, and in 1922, the Dominguez homesite property, now used as a training school for the development of priests of the Order, was granted to the Order by the Del Amo branch of the family. The deed, however, is signed by all the surviving sisters.

The bodies of Susana Del Amo and her husband, Dr. Gregorio Del Amo, lie in the crypt below the chapel in the new building built for the Order by Mrs. Del Amo and the doctor before their deaths in 1931 and 1941, respectively.

Although this particular Order was not active in the development of the California Missions along El Camino Real, you cannot see the black-robed instructors and students, gathered from all parts of the world, without calling to mind the words of the famous poem of Bret Harte:

*Bells of the past, whose long forgotten music
Still fills the wide expanse
Tingeing the sober twilight of the present
With color of Romance.*

Immediately adjoining the Seminary grounds is the fine old family home of Victoria Dominguez Carson Caldwell, one of the Dominguez daughters.

In the remaining lands, now comprising some 7,000 acres, the companies are actively engaged in development programs of many types, not the least of which is an extensive new industrial area.

In 1929, there was acquired, among other parcels, the property now occupied by the Dominguez-Wilshire Building, located at 2410 Wilshire Boulevard. The building was completed in 1930. Its affairs are administered by Dominguez-Wilshire Corporation, which is wholly owned by Dominguez Estate Company.

It is interesting to note that the expedition to Monterey in 1769, which was conducted by Gaspar de Portola, was participated in by Juan José Dominguez and that part of the route of march was along the fabulous boulevard where the building is located.

PRESENT DOMINGUEZ DESCENDANTS

Only two of the Dominguez daughters left direct descendants. These were Victoria Dominguez Carson, of whose fifteen children five are still living, and Dolores Dominguez Watson, of whose four children none are living. In the succeeding generation there are now living eleven direct descendants in the Carson branch of the family and six direct descendants in the Watson branch of the family.

There are many children in the next generation and they continue to come.

It is a marvelous experience for us now associated with Dominguez Estate Company to hold in our hands one of the threads making up the warp and woof of this beautiful cloth of gold which we know as California history.

On occasion such as a recent dedication of a new industrial road, and later, the opening of a new \$3,000,000 industrial plant, listening carefully, we can faintly hear Don Manuel from his place on a hilltop astride one of his many horses call out, "*Bien hecho Compañeros—Vaya con Dios!*"

Manuel Dominguez the honored pioneer who contributed so significantly to the building of Southern California, passed away on October 11, 1882.




A History of the San Gabriel Mountains

(Conclusion)

By Charles Clark Vernon

FORESTRY AND RECREATION

HE TRANSFORMATION OF THE SAN GABRIEL RANGE from a mountaineer's paradise to an area which "has the heaviest recreation use of any national forest in the United States,"¹ started when the first road made it possible for motorists to go places that only foot traffic could reach before.

Like all such changes, this transformation was a slow one. Westerners living just a few generations after that vast movement of people from the east, were not ready to forget the frontier and not quite used to the idea that an extensive one no longer existed.

Frontier activity marked our land from its discovery, it typified Californians of the gold rush, and was still being sought in the 1920's. Any place that offered adventurous experiences, especially if they could be had close to nature, was seized upon enthusiastically. And, at first, increasing population hardly seemed to diminish this craving for adventure. The automobile, rather than immediately transforming leg-borne traffic to wheel-borne, was taken in and made a part of the existing pattern of activity.

Evolution was in progress, however, and more people, more and better automobiles and more good roads, along with the constant development of new devices for the comfort and entertainment of all while requiring a minimum of physical and mental effort, contributed to changes in the attitudes and habits of Southern California people.

Now (in 1950) more than three million visitors annually go into the mountains, far more than ever enjoyed them before. This number includes many who never set foot on a trail as well as travelers crossing the range, picknickers, and snow sports enthusiasts whose cars crowd the roads to snow areas on winter week ends as downtown city streets are jammed in ordinary afternoons.

It also includes a deluge of early-season fishermen and hunters, campers attracted to the many improved camp grounds, and a group definitely in the minority, the hikers.

Credit for developing the San Gabriel Mountains into a recreational area should go mainly to the United States Forest Service. It has built most of the roads and camp grounds, done much of the reforestation, maintained the forest and has performed innumerable other services.

Since Angeles National Forest² was established in 1892, so many notable changes have been made that the mountains are scarcely the same. Accordingly, neither the story of the range nor their condition today can be fully understood without knowing the work of the Forest Service in this area. Its history and development date back to the activities of Abbott Kinney and come up to the present, with the benefits of the mountains, as they are offered to the public today, the current result.

As early as the 1880's, it was becoming obvious to some local residents that steps should be taken to protect the mountain's watershed from destruction. Fires and careless cutting of timber already had markedly affected both local water supply during summer droughts and proper drainage during winter storms.

Fortunately, at that time, the importance of conservation was receiving nationwide attention, and the very tool needed to implement conservation in the San Gabriels was made available everywhere in the United States. In 1891 the President was empowered by an act of Congress, to create Timberland Reserves to save water and timber resources which were being depleted in many regions throughout the country.

Since efforts to save the mountains had previously received substantial local support, it is not surprising that "the San Gabriel Timberland Reserve . . . was proclaimed by President Harrison on December 20, 1892, and was the first forest reserve to be created in California and the second in the United States."³

Considerable credit for this quick action on the part of the government must go to Abbott Kinney.

. . . a botanist of distinction, a member of scientific societies, an officer of the American Forestry Association, and the chairman of Cali-

History of the San Gabriel Mountains

fornia's first Board of Forestry established in 1885 . . . He had studied the effects on mountain and valley of uncontrolled fires and floods, unrestrained timbering and clearing, and unlimited pasturage by sheep and cattle . . .

It was the activities of . . . [the California Board of Forestry], with Kinney as leader, backed and furthered by the efforts of Southern California organizations and individuals . . . that led to the creation of the Angeles National Forest.⁴

Unfortunately, the designation of a Timberland Reserve (the name was soon changed to the more pleasing "National Forest"), did not mean that the area would be administered as such or that rangers would be appointed. But continued pressure on Washington brought about both. In 1897 Supervisor B. F. Allen assigned the first two rangers to duty; and, within a year, hired eight more.

A look at the life and duties of rangers in the days of the Timberland Reserve shows that they faced many problems. For the first few years, they worked only during the summer season of high fire hazard. Their pay was fifty dollars a month and they were required to supply everything: food, shelter, horses, tools and clothing.⁵ Their duties were simply to patrol a designated area of the mountains. For this work they were equipped with government handbooks of general instruction which apparently obviated orders from their supervisor.

The main objective of forest patrol was prevention and control of fires, but the areas assigned in those days were so large that a ranger was far more effective in preventing fires than he ever could be in fighting them. The task of prevention was handled by personal contact. That is, a ranger tried to see everyone who entered his section, and if a camper were careless and left a hot fire, measures were taken to educate rather than cite him.

When fire did break out, activity began. First the ranger had to determine if the blaze were big enough to require more help than he could muster on the spot. This meant a trip to the site of the flames. If more help were needed, he would phone for it, sometimes to other rangers and sometimes to the outside. Then, while waiting the many hours it took to round up fire fighters and march them in, he would get what local help he could and begin work.⁶

The passage of time described here was often great, and a number of early fires are known to have burned two or three months before dying out.

If the ranger's inadequacy in the face of a major fire failed to daunt him, then the extent of territory for which he was responsible should have done so. The first two appointees divided the entire range between them, and as late as 1905 there still were fewer than twenty men to guard the whole reserve.

Before 1892, roads, trails, camps and shelters were made by private parties. In this period there were only ineffectual means by which a bad situation in the mountains could be brought to the attention of the authorities, and often no agency had control over various things that went on, especially in regard to watershed destruction. Once they became a National Forest, the San Gabriels fell under Department of Agriculture supervision and regulation, and the possibility of stopping bad practices and starting constructive projects became a reality. For example: timber cutting was prohibited, the Forest Supervisor could control grazing, and rangers taught campers conservation methods and enforced them.

Within a few years after the appointment of the first rangers, it had become obvious that their work needed attention the year around, and that a staff should be maintained that would do more than merely patrol during the summer months. Consequently, rangers became full time employees and their duties were extended to include other very necessary work.

At this point the effort of the Forest Service to make the mountains more easily accessible to both foot and animal traffic, and to improve facilities throughout the range, became notable; for rangers, when not on patrol, busied themselves building and improving trails, cutting firebreaks, putting up and maintaining telephone lines and constructing cabins at important locations for shelter or storage.

Of all the work done in the San Gabriels by the Forest Service in its infant years, little was the kind that required a substantial amount of capital outlay except for wages. Trail building and fire fighting required physical labor but virtually no equipment other than shovels, axes, and brush hooks. The appropriation of federal

History of the San Gabriel Mountains

money for recreation was a thing of the future. Excellent camp grounds with stoves, tables, and water, as we find them today, were nonexistent. J. C. Kern observed that:

Prior to 1914, and due to the wide separation of that small band of men comprising the early Ranger force, camping and picknicking went on throughout the Forest at most any point chosen by the individual . . . Forest Supervisor Charlton stated that the fire menace was greatly increasing . . . due to people pitching their tents and building camp fires "here, there and everywhere." . . . Meanwhile, activity in the recreational field was gaining momentum . . . Congressional appropriations for recreational usage were still a vague hope . . .⁷

Naturally then, there was a growing desire on the part of the Forest Service to provide camp ground facilities, especially stoves and rest rooms, at the more popular places; for every camping area so improved decreased both the danger of fire and the chances of water supply pollution. As time went on, more and better facilities were built. The materials and equipment necessary were purchased with money given by local private sources, for until 1933, government funds were not made available for this kind of improvement. From that date on however, such rapid strides were made in the establishment and improvement of camp grounds, that today little is left to be desired.

Whatever the original purposes were in creating the Timberland Reserve and organizing the Forest Service, the major tasks quickly became those connected with fire control and recreation.

Fire, a constant threat in the San Gabriels during Southern California's rainless summer months, is an acute problem for a number of reasons. Damage to property alone is of major consequence, moreover a burned out area is a stark and sooty eyesore, in no way resembling a beauty which was present before. To visualize the change in the appearance of the mountains caused by fire, one should note that once the south face of the range down to the four thousand foot level was probably well forested with pine, spruce and cedar. But the most important reason why fire is such a problem is because it destroys the watershed cover⁸ and thus lays lower areas open to the threat of winter floods, a thing

forgotten by many as the southwest's eighth year of unbroken drought draws to a close.

Fire fighting methods are vastly improved since the day when men and hand tools were everything. They still remain the basis for mountain fire control, but transportation of men, equipment and supplies are so tremendously improved that the occurrence of month-long fires again is not probable. Furthermore, education of a public, which in the past has started ninety percent of all the fires, is expected to bring significant results.

No matter what use man would put the forest to, fire is still a threat. It destroys soil-protecting vegetation, thus preventing the ground's absorption of water which lowers the water level in underground reservoirs and forces rains to run off the surface, eroding their way to the canyons and out onto the plain, often in flood proportions.

A number of fires before 1933 burned off areas in excess of twenty-five thousand acres, and sometimes much more. A big fire now is one that spreads over five thousand acres before it is put under control. Why the difference? Modern methods and improved transportation and communication.

Thirteen high lookouts cover the entire forest, and when smoke is reported to central control, located at Arcadia, about three hundred men can be put on the fire in short order. To direct the fight, forty-two cars equipped with two-way radios are available, and any of the forest's six stationary radio stations that are near the scene lend their help.⁹ Of course some of this force is held in reserve, since the occurrence of two fires at the same time is not infrequent.

The water-pumping tank truck is a tremendous aid to fire fighters wherever roads come near enough to the blaze. It is for this purpose, and for ease in transporting men near to fire, that so many miles of Forest Service truck trail have been built. However, even the pump truck may soon be obsolete because of extremely great value of the helicopter in combating fire. With the helicopter, men who are absolutely fresh are transported in a few minutes to the most strategic location. When this craft is developed so it becomes effective at higher altitudes and can carry larger crews,

History of the San Gabriel Mountains

it will be the ideal implement for fire control, from the standpoint of cost, adequacy and safety. The importance of such transportation can be seen when it is known that an average of fifty-two fires a year break out within the National Forest.¹⁰

Behind all the activity and research that is constantly going into watershed protection lies a new concept. The mountains are no longer protected for the water they supply to valley towns, as formerly was the case. Instead they are protected from fire because of the damage ensuing floods can do once the watershed cover is destroyed. Boulders standing twice as high as a passenger car were rolled down Dunsmere Canyon into Tujunga in 1934. In 1928, Burbank streets stood three feet deep in rapidly flowing water. Lower Santa Anita Canyon was submerged three times during the thirties.¹¹ The section of both Santa Anita and Dunsmere Canyons which were so badly damaged by torrent-born rocks are no longer the uninhabited alluvial fans that they were in 1938, but are built up with fine homes whose owners paid premium prices for lots so near the mountains; and although preventative measures have been advanced, there is no assurance, as yet, that devastating floods will not recur.

The ravages of fire — and unrestrained water — are great. It is the first duty of the Forest Service and its cooperating agencies to control both. Los Angeles County is working closely with the federal Forest Service. Flood control dams have been built, in and about the mountains. Reforestation work has been in progress for a number of years, and County crews put in roads of their own, in addition to aiding the State in the construction of Angeles Crest Highway. The County has a particular interest in watershed protection since silt is carried downstream in tremendous volume from water running off bare slopes. This silt quickly fills dams, and given adverse conditions, can make them useless within a decade.

If the first job of the Forest Service is watershed protection, unquestionably the second is maintenance of the recreational facilities within the mountains.

The scope of this job is tremendous, for the San Gabriels receive more visitors annually than any other National Forest in the United States, yet only one twenty-sixth of their surface is

suitable for camping and other recreational purposes. Into this small portion of the range are crowded seventy-five public camp grounds, eleven hundred private cabins, fourteen resorts and three winter sports areas. Why so much activity in so limited a region? Because no other mountain playground in this country is as near to a major population center.¹²

The number of people who come into the San Gabriels for recreation is increasing by leaps and bounds. The three million visitors of 1950 constituted a group twice as large as that which visited the forest in 1936. The reasons for such an increase are the population gain in Southern California during that period, the completion of many miles of new highway in the mountains, and the tremendous upswing in the popularity of snow sports, especially since the end of World War II. Also, modern camp grounds, many of which are right at the roadside, are a big attraction.

During the winter, the snow line varies from three to five thousand feet, with a good base, usually several feet deep, clinging to the higher slopes from December through March. As fast as people have discovered the winter sports areas, they have become enthusiastic, for warm sunny days, even in January, bring shirt-sleeve skiing. The latter is king of snow sports, and the San Gabriels at present offer three areas developed for downhill runs.

The Angeles Crest area has about a dozen rope tows and a good chair lift which runs to the top of Waterman Mountain. Many fine slopes remain undeveloped in this section, but a number of these will become accessible as the Angeles Crest Highway pushes on across the range. Facilities are good throughout this region and include food, lodging, warming huts, and equipment rentals.

Big Pines, soon to be connected by road with the above area, also has much to offer winter sports fans. A number of rope tows service slopes of both beginning and intermediate difficulty, and two chair lifts offer a variety of good runs off the top of Blue Ridge. The facilities at Big Pines also are complete.

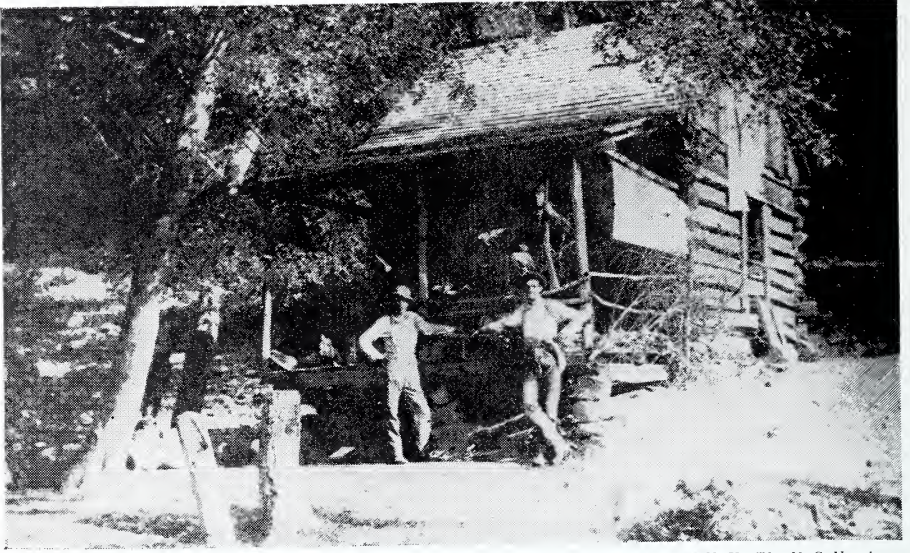
The Baldy or San Antonio area is, at present, the least developed of the three. It has rope tows at two locations, but one is handicapped by its position at too low an elevation for deep and lasting snow, and the other by its situation some three miles from



—Will H. Thrall Collection

RANGERS JESSE SEVIER AND BILL BACON

*At the original Pine Flats Ranger Station
... about 1902*



—Will H. Thrall Collection

FIRST RANGER STATION IN ARROYO SECO

History of the San Gabriel Mountains

where cars must be left. This upper tow on the Lytle Creek Divide is a most agreeable place to ski since it seldom is crowded, and its placement and altitude keep the slope skiable for about one month after other establishments are through for the season.

So far, any place with a rope tow and six inches of snow has attracted crowds. Find a slope, build a tow, and if there is time, clear a run or two, then pray for snow. If it falls, success is practically assured. For the skier, a wait in line of half an hour between trips up the Waterman chair lift is not unusual. The ride takes ten minutes, the slide down about ten minutes more or less depending upon his skill, then another half-hour wait. Only bad weather and poor snow conditions reduce the crowds

From waiting in line to ski there is an escape, for in a mountain range fifty miles long, which has extensive high country, one need not limit one's self to the developed slopes. Ski touring, as cross country skiing is often called, is a pleasant way to enjoy the snow, the outdoors, and physical activity. The only requirements are the equipment, a knowledge of the terrain and a fair stamina. Ski touring, like hiking, is as hard or easy as a person cares to make it. Again like hiking, ski tours can be made across level country or to the top of high peaks. The very nature of the San Gabriels dictates that most trips will be of the alpine variety where moderately steep slopes are encountered, but a leisurely pace greatly reduces their difficulty and the novice need have no fear if he is accompanied and does not attempt too long a trip. Whether traveling for one day or for several, snow enthusiasts will find a new thrill in ski touring. The forest is sparkingly different, views are clearer and white, and other men are seldom encountered once the road is left behind.

Areas suitable for cross country skiing are the top ridge of the range in a big arc from Waterman Mountain to Big Pines, and the San Antonio Peak environs. This latter location is the most promising winter sports section for the future, as the south face of San Antonio is a giant mile-long slide that drops twenty-five hundred feet in an unbroken sweep from the tip of the 10,080 foot peak to a flat at its base. Many people already take advantage of this fine clear slope which offers runs of all degrees of difficulty;

and the Sierra Club Ski Mountaineers have a cabin at the bottom of the slide in recognition of its possibilities. This location can be reached by trail only, but is well worth the trip.

Winter sports other than skiing, and plain frolicking in the snow, are enjoyed everywhere along the roads. Every new snow brings a crowd of motorists into the mountains for the novelty. Chains are seldom required because of high daytime temperatures; and paved roads are kept clear throughout the winter.

The ski patrol is doing fine safety and aid work of all kinds, and under all conditions. Its tasks have ranged from routine patrol and help for the injured, to the rescue of snowbound people during unusual weather conditions. It deserves much credit for a job well done, but the work is only started, for the future promises several new ski areas and larger crowds.

The entire snow region from Waterman Mountain through Kratka Ridge, back country camps and resorts, and hunting and fishing areas from Barley Flats eastward to Mount Islip, are put within reach of motorists by Angeles Crest Highway.

California State Highway 2, as Angeles Crest is designated, was started in 1926 as a work relief project. At that time, the back country could be approached by road no closer than the top of the front range. Consequently, a comparatively small number of people enjoyed its excellent camp grounds. From a survey of the acreage available for recreational use, it became evident that most such land lay in this high region, and little public use of it could be expected until it was put within reach of the motor car.

Work on the highway has been understandably slow, for not only have the usual difficulties in putting a modern road over rough terrain been encountered, but the necessary funds have not always been available from the State for this, a purely recreational highway. Expenditures on construction have averaged close to one-half million dollars a year, although there have been many years when, for various reasons, less money was appropriated.¹³

The Angeles Crest Highway was completed in 1955, and it now connects Los Angeles with the Mojave Desert, passing through canyons, high country and recreational areas from the Arroyo Seco to Big Pines, making new developments possible and traversing

History of the San Gabriel Mountains

the mountains via the very crest of Angeles National Forest.

County, State and Federal Governments also have maintained a number of projects within the San Gabriel Mountains aside from those already mentioned. Mount Wilson was used during both world wars as a military observation point.¹⁴ San Gabriel Canyon's Morris Dam, behind which lies the largest body of water in the mountains, is used by the Navy as a torpedo testing range. In addition, the Navy developed (during World War II) a secluded canyon behind Pasadena for testing rockets.

Great changes have taken place, with passing time, in the manner in which men use the mountains. The Indian used them to sustain himself, otherwise they were an obstacle to his movement and trade. Spanish and Mexican Californians turned to them for pasture, and for a brief period, timber, but for little else. The range stood as a barrier, and the chaparral was very bothersome. But real use — and exploitation, perhaps — of the San Gabriels was left to the American; and he had done varied things with what he found there.

First the American looked upon the range as a new frontier, but a frontier it remained only while men were few. The resources of the land were discovered, sought and left somewhat depleted. Then the American found that the benefits of the San Gabriels included more than gold, timber, big game or wild and isolated retreats. He discovered that the mountains put to recreational use provided pleasure in a degree he had not anticipated.

The coming of the auto has divided the recreational era in the mountains into two periods, the earlier of which was discussed in Part III. In the later and current period, the mountains are made use of in more ways than ever before, and are enjoyed by a number of people which is greater than was the total population of Southern California in years not too long past.

As to the future; more extensive recreational development is indicated. Roads and highways will be extended and improved, additional camp grounds, especially large ones with extensive facilities, will be constructed. The Forest Service will grow in size and activities, new winter sports areas will be added, and other advances will, no doubt, be made that are unforeseen today.

The San Gabriel Mountains are, under the Forest Service, fast becoming a giant playground for all of Los Angeles County. They are truly a gift to the people.

NOTES

1. *Angeles National Forest*, U. S. Department of Agriculture, Forest Service, 1948.
2. The San Gabriel Mountains make up the southeast portion, or about three-quarters of the total area, of Angeles National Forest.
3. W. L. Sears, "History of the Angeles National Forest," *Trails Magazine*, Spring, 1936, p. 7.
4. Robinson, *op. cit.*, pp. 22-23.
5. W. W. Bacon, interview, June 29, 1951.
6. *Idem.*
7. J. C. Kern, "A Few Leaves from the Camp Ground History Book," *Trails Magazine*, Spring, 1936, pp. 11-12.
8. William Mendenhall, interview, July 2, 1951.
9. *Idem.*
10. *Idem.*
11. Joe Clark, interview, February 24, 1951.
12. E. g., Los Angeles to Angeles Crest ski areas is forty miles, Pasadena to Mount Wilson twenty-five miles, Arcadia to Santa Anita Canyon five miles.
13. Mendenhall, *idem.*
14. At present, Mount Wilson is host to seven television and four frequency modulation transmitting stations.



Book Reviews

LATIN AMERICA: A HISTORY. By Alfred Barnaby Thomas. New York (MacMillan) 1956. 801 pp.

This well-organized text book is of course, primarily intended for use in college courses in Latin American history. It can nevertheless be recommended for the general reading public, both as an interesting and very comprehensive survey of the history of all those sections of the Western hemisphere that trace their lineage to Spain and Portugal and as a convenient reference work for the region.

The book is divided into four sections of unequal length, dealing with Colonial Latin America, the Wars for Independence, Modern Latin America, and Inter-American Affairs. The first of these deals sketchily but adequately with pre-Columbian cultures and then goes into considerable detail regarding the period of colonization from the beginnings to approximately 1800.

If any of the sections of the book might be termed inadequate, it would be the second, dealing with the wars for independence. And perhaps even this section is inadequate only in the eyes of a Californian, who naturally expects a fairly full treatment of Mexican independence as it affected Alta California, particularly in the secularization of the Missions and the attendant changes in land holding. However, important as this may be to the development of these regions that were once Latin American, it is probably outside the scope of the work.

The modern section is by far the most complete and detailed. It deals meticulously with each separate region of the Latin American areas and brings the history right down to the year 1956. A somewhat fuller treatment of Inter-American affairs and relations might be desirable.

The excellent bibliography as well as the useful index deserve special commendation. On the whole, the book is a valuable addition to the library of anyone who has an interest in the history of the Western Hemisphere.—G.O.A.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

CALIFORNIA DONS by Ralph LeRoy Milliken. Academy Library Guild 1956, pp. 267, photos, sketches. \$3.00.

This book, like *Leather Dollars* by Mrs. de Packman, reports the tales of another person, and has been set down in anecdote form. Senor Don Estolano Larios, the leading Don of San Juan Bautista, relates his incidents during a visit in the author's home. Mrs. de Packman reports the stories of her own grandmother which were told to her when a little girl. Yet there is something in common between the two books. Both young and old will enjoy the picture of earlier years, reflecting the life of California as it was in the Mission days. The author in his Introduction regrets that we have become soft and pliable and no longer lead lives of Spanish bravery—the personal kind where men “single handed, fought grizzly bears, wild bulls and marauding Indians. Young boys rode bull calves for excitement. Children made pets of grizzly bear cubs.” That tells us of active times, quite different from our current air and auto age, with its more docile existence.—G.E.M.

NO LITTLE PLANS. The Story of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce by Norman S. Stanley, published by the Chamber, 1956, as a reprint from Southern California Business, September, 1956.

This history prepared as a very attractive pamphlet was distributed in connection with the dedication of the Chamber's seventh home on South Bixel Street on September 10, 1956. Pp. 32. Illustrated with 19 cuts and six photographs of leaders. Lists of the founders and of the complete directorates of the years 1952-1956, are shown as well as the six previous buildings before the present new one. Pictures of the laying of the several cornerstones will interest many local persons and members of this Society will see many of our officers in their own several capacities in the outside world. One photograph of the famous walnut elephant which symbolized the chamber to so many visitors here in earlier years will hold the attention of our older members. The deTurk Livery stable of 1888 and the second home adjoining the old Times building ring up history of our town and the several street scenes recall earlier days. Fine pictures of Major Jones, first president, Frank Wiggins, the outstanding Secretary, Charlie Willard, Daniel Freeman, M. J. Newmark and J. S. Slauson add interest to the pamphlet.

Book Reviews

The story is well done and will give to those not familiar with the Chamber a clear idea of the relation between community growth and the foremost civic body of our day. It might prove interesting to run a check of our "Builders of Los Angeles" plaque's thirty-seven names with those appearing in "*No Little Plans*."—G.E.M.

THE AMERICAN ASSEMBLY—"The Forty-eight States: Their Tasks as Policy Makers and Administrators" with separate authors by divisions. (Columbia University Graduate School of Business) Pp 144, 13 diagrams, maps 1, tables 1. INTRODUCTION: "*The Challenge to the States*" by James W. Fesler. Div. 1 "*The States in the American System*" by Harvy C. Mansfield Div. 2. "*The Traditions of Government in the States*" by Allan R. Richards. Div. 3. "*The Politics of the States*" by Dayton D. McKean. Div. 4. "*Lawmaking in State Governments*" by Karl A. Bosworth. Div. 5. "*Administration in State Governments*" by York Willbern.

The Eighth American Assembly participants' findings and then follows a list of the participants in the Eighth American Assembly. President Eisenhower, while President of Columbia University in 1950 established the American Assembly as a national, non-partisan program of continuing conferences which brings together representatives of business, labor, farm groups, the professions, both political parties and government. Its aim is to throw impartial light on the major problems which confront America so that our citizens can take effective steps toward solving these problems.—G.E.M.

THE TREASURES OF MISSION SANTA INES. By Kurt Baer. Fresno (Academy of California Church History), 1956. 323 pp., 109 illustrations.

This most welcome addition to the growing literature on the California Missions really offers much more than its modest title leads one to expect. The actual catalogue with detailed descriptions of the many fine art objects occupies little more than one-half of the book, while the first half is devoted to a short chapter on the Missions and their art in general and an excellent, long chapter on Mission Santa Ines from the date of its establishment, through the period of secularization, to the present day. This in itself is a valuable contribution to Mission literature, since a detailed history of this, the youngest and in some respects most interesting of the southern missions has until now been lacking.

The catalogue itself is very satisfactory by virtue of its completeness, the thoroughness of the descriptions, and particularly the professional competence of the esthetic evaluations. Moreover, al-

though the author is an art historian and writes in a manner that satisfies professionals in the field, nevertheless he never loses sight of the fact that he is writing primarily for the interested lay public. To make it even easier, he provides a glossary to explain the technical art terms which cannot be avoided in the text.

Since the fair-minded reviewer should not only point out the merits of a book but also its faults, it must be mentioned that there are some typographical errors—which no one will notice who does not read the book as carefully as I did. There are also some omissions in the Index, particularly of some rather important place-names. The bibliography is excellent and well selected but I would suggest that Omer Engelbert's *The Last of the Conquistadors* should have been included. (This may have appeared too late for inclusion.)

But these are very minor faults, they only serve to make the book more human. Its author and publishers are to be commended for producing a fine, interesting, and informative book. I sincerely hope that it will serve to draw renewed attention to this beautiful but little-known shrine and that it will help to bring in more contributions toward the completion of its restoration and toward its permanent maintenance.—G.O.A.

Activities of the Society

MEETING OCTOBER 30, 1956

President Gustave O. Arlt assembled the meeting at about eight o'clock with about 75 members and guests present. As there had been no meeting of the Directors since the September 25th meeting no official action could be announced but the appointment of Director Carver as the new Membership chairman was referred to and the request of Bullocks for cooperation of the Society in celebrating their 50th Anniversary by an historical exhibit.

The piece de resistance of the evening was the delightful illustrated talk by our member Mr. Giles S. Hall relating his experience in taking a trip by auto to Baja California with a friend. His talk gave the audience an excellent idea of the character of the country, the missions, villages, highways and the people encountered. The many questions asked in the period following his talk bore witness to the interest he aroused. Refreshments followed with Mrs. Giles Hall and Mrs. Edward Ripley, selected by Mrs. Ducommun, Chairman of the Hostesses of the Social Hour, presiding at the urns. The whole evening was a clear demonstration of the real enthusiasm in our Society.

MEETING NOVEMBER 27, 1956

At this meeting President Arlt reviewed some of the action taken at the Directors' meeting of November 19th. Director Stoermer offered a motion to authorize the president to appoint a Building Committee (Special) to look into the whole matter of headquarters. Director Carver has offered many useful suggestions upon increasing our membership and he appealed to all present to become active in helping Director Carver. Director Newmark called

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

attention to the revised Bronze Plaque with 16 new names added, present in the refreshment room, and asked all to examine it during the refreshment period. President Arlt reported that the Directors had authorized him to sign and return the resolution received from the San Fernando Valley Historical Society dealing with the use of the land in Cahuenga Pass for a state park rather than to see it developed as industrial or business property. The president also stated that he had appointed a Nominating Committee consisting of Messrs. W. W. Robinson, chairman and Ducommun and Newmark to replace retiring Directors and to fill the Board for the ensuing four years.

With business out of the way, he introduced the speaker of the evening Mr. William F. Holtz, President of the Pasadena Historical Society, who lectured upon "The Crown of the San Gabriel Valley" with Mr. Frederick W. Nelson, Curator of the Pasadena Society assisting at the lantern with many attractive and significant pictures. The history of Pasadena opened up before the members of our society and interested many especially the older persons present. Mr. Nelson had present on our large table many of his Historical Scrap Books which he has been at work upon for twenty years. They are beautifully assembled and judging from the attention they received from those present made the evening a most attractive occasion. Informal questions to Mr. Holtz added to the pleasure of those present along genealogical lines as well as historically.

With the meeting adjourned, members and friends withdrew to refreshments with Mrs. Thomas Workman and Miss Ann Patton presiding at the urns.

The Historical Society was officially represented by its Executive Secretary, Guy Marion, at the dedication of the Los Angeles State and County Arboretum Administration Building on Friday, December 14, 1956. Directors K. L. Carver and F. B. Putnam also attended.

The arboretum occupies a part of Rancho Santa Anita. This rancho is of particular interest to our society because of its past ownership by Harris Newmark and William Wolfskill.

The Society had the pleasure of presenting a historical exhibit,

Activities of the Society

"The Home of 1907," at Bullock's Downtown Store in connection with the 50th Anniversary of this fine department store. The exhibit consisted of three complete and authentic rooms, a parlor, a dining room, and a bedroom, furnished and decorated in the style of 1907. In addition there was an entry hall, a kitchen, and a small but exquisite "Turkish Room," which was the latest rage in that long-past era.

The selection and arrangement of the furnishings was supervised by our members, Mrs. E. J. Kennedy and Mrs. Louise P. Sooy, and our Secretary Mr. Guy E. Marion. An attractive program and a number of clever posters called our Society to the attention of the thousands of visitors who attended the exhibit.

We congratulate Bullock's upon their golden anniversary and wish them many more years of success.

CORRECTION

December, 1953, QUARTERLY, page 306, second paragraph: The digits in the date 1853 are reversed and should read 1835. Frank Rolfe who wrote this article "Early Day Los Angeles a Great Wagon Train Center" reports this error and wishes it to be noted by our readers.

Gifts to the Society

In each issue of THE QUARTERLY there appears a list of the donors and gifts made currently to the Society.

The Society is making an especial effort to build up its collection of historic materials, such as diaries, letters, account books, early newspapers, theatre and other programs, pictures of early-day life in California and costumes. We need your help.

Many members having treasured ancestral keepsakes were impelled to give them to the Society because of the realization that in private possession they would, sooner or later, disappear or deteriorate, whereas, in the custody of the Historical Society of Southern California they will be preserved indefinitely.

MARCO R. NEWMARK,
Chairman, Committee on Gifts and Bequests

MRS. LETITIA TALBOT TUNGATE (David W.) *History of Los Angeles County, California*, with illustrations descriptive of its scenery, residences, fine blocks, and manufactories. Published by Thompson and West, Oakland, California 1880. Rebound in cloth with heavy boards.

also

THE HOLY BIBLE: Containing the old and new testaments; together with the Apocrypha and arguments prefixed to the different books: with moral and theological observations illustrating each chapter composed by the Reverend Mr. Ootervald, professor of divinity, and one of the ministers of the church at Neufchatel in Switzerland, translated by the desire of, and recommended by, The Society for Propagating Christian Knowledge, etc. etc. Published in New York by Evert Duyckinck, John Thebout, G. & R. Waite, and Websters & Skinners of Albany (George Long, Printer) 1813. Contains Family Record of John Brown and Charlott Mather. Bound in sheep skin (damaged binding).

also

COMMON PLACE BOOK of Irene Rogers (Many sweet and touching poems and writings of her relatives and friends dated from 1824 to 1829).

PHIL TOWNSEND HANNA. *A Map of the Missions, Presidios, Pueblos* and some of the more interesting Ranchos of Spanish California together with the Routes of the Principal Land Explorations Therein. Compiled by W. W. Robinson and William H. Newbro, Jr. Edited by Phil Townsend Hanna. Cartography by Lowell Butler. Copyright by the Automobile Club of Southern California 1956.

Gifts to the Society

DR. JOHN SCHWAMM. "*Official Base Ball Souvenir Program* and Score Card of the Los Angeles Relief Associations, Police Dept. (for the benefit of the Police Department Relief Funds for Sick and Distressed Officers and Firemen). Dated Sunday, June 23, 1907, Chutes Park.

GLENDALE GOLDEN JUBILEE ASSOCIATION, INC. *Glendale Golden Jubilee Souvenir Program*—1906-1956, October 13th through 20th, 1956.

HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY AND ART GALLERY. *Twenty-ninth Annual Report* July 1, 1955.

Index

VOLUME XXXVIII

Compiled by Carroll Spear Morrison

A

Abbey, Mr. and Mrs. Henry C., 326, 327
Abbott, Emma, 325, 341, 342
Abernathy, W. B., 315
Adamson, J. E., 158
Agassiz, Louis, 100
Aquirre, Anita, 94
Ainsworth, General Henry, 370
Albani, Emma, 327
Alemany, Sadoc, 34
Alger, Harry O., 323
Alexander, Raimond and Maria Valdez,
247
Allen, B. F., 375
Alliklik Indians, 56-59
Allison, D. C., 174
Alter, M. H., 134
Alvarado, Juan Bautista, 13, 16
American Assembly, The, rev., 387
American in California, An by Andrew
F. Rolle, *rev.*, 298
Ancker, Mrs. Albert, 180
Anderson, "Professor" H., 76
Anza, Juan Bautista de, 34
Apollo Club, 330
Arkush, J. Robert, 182
Arlt, Gustave O., 3, 206, 300
Arlt, Mrs. Gustave O., 300
Armer, Ernest J., 182
Ar-Ar Club, 329
Athol, Duke of, 188

B

Baker, Edward D., 19
Bancroft, Hubert Howe, 27-29
Banks, James, 158
Banning, General Phineas, 185, 214
Barnett, William T., 173
Bartlett, Albert G., 334
Barrows, David Prescott, 36
Barnch, Jacob, 171
Baum, Mrs. De Wold, 181
Baur, John E., 61
Baysley, Jack, 106
Beckman, Edward, 182
Behrman, Paul, 183
Behymer, Lynden E., 327

Belated Diagnosis by Helen Rocca Goss,
193-204
Bell, Mrs. Alonso, 207
Bent, H. K. W., 315
Berger, Miss Augustine, 333
Berman, Jack, 182
Bernhardt, Sarah, 341
Bidwell, Annie Kennedy, 19
Bidwell, John, 13, 17-19
Bienkowski, A., 340
Black, George N., 171
Blanchard, J. H., 106
Blum, Rev. Abraham, 170
Boardman, Reverend, 308
Bolander, H. N., 109
Bolton, Herbert, 29, 35
Borel, F., 118
Bostwick, Norris, 304
Bounette, Juan and Loreta Cota, 247
Bovard, M. M., 130
Bowen, William A., 136
Brand, Leslie C., 232
Branner, John, 36
Brannon, Samuel, 35
Brant, Otto F., 232, 233
Brauerman, Michael, 184
Breeze, Mrs. Horace, 94
Briggs, Martin Clock, 21, 34
Broderick, W. J., 315
Brown, Hebert E., 208
Bucareli, Antonio Maria, 35
Buchanan, A. Russell, 205
Burbank, Luther, 36
Burton, Harold, 320
Butler, Mrs. B. A., 321

C

Cabrillo, Juan Rodriguez, 33
Cahuilla Indians, 42-59
Calkins, E. H., 109
California Dons by Ralph LeRoy Milliken, *rev.*, 386
California Missions, Founding, 366
Caldwell, Victoria Dominquez Carson,
371
Candidus, William, 325
Capp, Andrew J., 170
Carrillo, Francisca Benicia, 13

Index

Carson, Christopher (Kit), 34
 Carson, Victoria Dominguez, 369
 Carvalho, S. N., 118
 Carver, K. L., 390
 Caughey, John W., 61
 Chaffey, George, 37
 Chandler, Harry, 232
 Channing, William Ellery, 20
*Chamber of Commerce Cornerstones:
 Milestones in Los Angeles Progress*
 by John E. Baur, 61-70.
 Chapman, Fervorosa, 242
 Chapman, Jose Dolores Ramon Satur-
 nino, 244
*Chapman, Why Joseph, Adopted Califor-
 nia and Why California Adopted Him,*
 by Paul T. Scott, 239-246
 Chapman, Joseph (Jose Juan), 144, 151,
 239
 Childs, Ozro W., 217
 Chudacoff, Leonard, 179
 Clark, Alvin G., 130
 Clark, C. W., 120
 Classen, C. H., 250
 Clemens, Samuel Langhorne, 35
 Cobden, Richard, 9
 Coburn, Christianna, 80
Coburn, George, Must Be Back by Helen
 Rocca Goss, 75-90
 Coburn, Luella, 81
 Coburn, W. R., 81
 Colby, Delos and "Ma", 267
 Cole, Harry, 117
 Cole, Mrs. Jirah, D., 320
 Cole, Louis M., 173
 Cohn, Kaspere, 170
 Cohn, Mary (Mrs. Harry Adler), 169
 Cogswell, W. G., 323
 Cole, Senator Cornelius, 18, 35
 Cole, Mrs. Jirah D., 320
 Coleman, William Tell, 36
 Collins, Edward, 81, 86
 Collins, E. L., 79
 Colton, General D. D., 220
 Cooper, Dr. Elwood, 135
 Cooper, Dr. J. G., 101
 Cornell, C. S., 328, 331
 Coronel, Dona Mariana, 190
 Cota, Maria Engracia, 368
 Coulter, B. M., 94
 Cox, Prof. E. T., 107
 Crane, Michael, 123
 Crow, Alex, 116
 Crocker, Cal, 219
 Crump, Judge, 81
 Cryer, George, 70

D

Dalland, Augustine, 304
 Dalton, Henry, 264
 Dalton, Roger, 45
 Dana, Julian, 16
 Davidson, Dr. A., 114
 Davidson, Dr. Anstruther, 134

Davidson, George, 36
 Davis, Horace, 36
 Davis, William Heath, 227, 300
 Day, Charles E., 315
 Dechter, Rapheal, 182
 Del Amo, Susana Dominguez, 369
 Dell, Fred, 158
 Denby, Annie, 328
 Dentzel, Carl, 228
*Development of Science in Los Angeles
 and the Southern California Area
 (1850-1900)* by Henry Winfred Split-
 ter, 99-140.
 Dewey, W. B., 152, 285
 De Young, Meichel Harry, 37
 Dickson, Edward A., 3
 Dickson, Wilhelmina de Wolff, 8
 Dobbins, John P., 303
 Dominguez, Christobal, 367
 Dominguez, Juan Jose, 366
 Dominguez, Manuel and daughters, 368
 Dougal, Marsha, 94
 Dougal, Mrs. John Park, 94
 Downey, John G., 212, 370
 Drake, Sir Francis, 33
 Dubrin, Rabbi Maxwell H., 174
 Ducommun, Mrs. Edmond, 95
 Dumke, Dr. Glenn S., 304
 Dunn, George W., 110
 Dunraven, Lord, 185
 Dye, Tom, 75

E

Earl, E. T., 232
 Earl, Guy T., 4
Early Los Angeles: Mecca of Celebrities
 by Maymie R. Krythe, 185-192
 Easton, David, 183
 Edelman, Abraham, 168, 171, 173
 Edelman, Dr. David W., 172
 Elias, Jacob, 168
 Elizalde, Graciosa, 242
 Ellis, Charles J., 319
 Ellis Club, 330
 Elsasser, Meyer, 173
 Engelhardt, Zephgrin, 34
 English, Buck, 76
 Epperson, J. M., 79
 Euterpean Male Quartet, 330

F

Fanning, F. B., 315
 Fay, Rev. Eli P., 170
 Ferguson, William, 156, 236
 Fernando Indians, 44-59
 Ferrer, Rosario de, 370
 Field, Stephen Johnson, 35
 Figueroa, Governor Jose, 13
 Finkenstein, Mrs. M. J., 180
 Fishburn, John E., Jr., 94, 206
 Fisher, Tom, 241
 Follows, Ralph and Sarah, 284

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Fox, Eddie, 313
 Foy, Mary, 301
 Francis, Maria de los Reyes Dominguez,
 369
 Francisco, Beatrice, 320
 Francisco, J. Bond, 334
 Franklin, George E., 134
 Franklin, Sir John and Lady, 185
 Frasier, Captain, 130
 Fremont, Charles, 186
 Fremont, John Charles, 34
 Freeman, Amelia, 258
 Freeman, Archie, 259
 Freeman, Daniel, 256
 Frenchel, Signor Albert, 310
 Frenchel, Signorina Adelina, 310

G

Gabrielino Indians, 42-59
 Galvez, Jose de, 35
 Garter, Arthur, 147
 George, Henry, 35
 Gilder, Frank, 311
 Giles, Jean, 94
 Gilman, Daniel Coit, 36
 Gilroy, John, 243
 Glass, John, 73
 Goldman, Manuel, 183
 Goldenfield, Ernest, 183
 Goodman, Morris S., 167
 Garner, Bess Adams, 309
 Goss, Helen Rocca, 75, 193
 Gottschalk, L., 311, 336
 Grant, Daniel J., Jr., 304
 Grant, Richard A., 304
 Grau, Maurice, 327
 Graves, Jackson A., 231
 Gray, Prof. Asa, 110
 Greeley, Horace, 217
 Green, Dr. O. W., 332
 Greenbaum, Mr. and Mrs. Ephraim, 167
 Greenberg, Rabbi Leonard, 179
 Griffin, Dr. John Strother, 216
 Griffith, B. W., 134
 Griffith, David Work, 37
 Grinnel, Joseph, 113
 Groff, Helen Spaulding, 96
 Guyer, Anna Josepha Dominguez de, 369

H

Hale, Edward Everett, 21
 Hale, Professor George Ellery, 36, 132
 Hall, Giles S., 389
 Hall, Mrs. Giles S., 389
 Hamilton, Harley, 332
 Hammel, H., 250
 Hammond, George, 29
 Hancock, Henry, 231
 Hancock, Mrs. Winfield Scott, 308
 Hanna, Phil Townsend, 392
 Hansen, George, 186
 Harris, *Journal of B. B.*, 71-74
 Harris, Leopold A., 170

Harte, Francis Bret, 35
 Harney, J. C., 111
 Hartwell, 147
 Hatzensein, Gus, 251
 Hawkins, Dr. G. G., 196
 Hayes, President and Mrs., 191
 Healy, Frank, 122
 Hecht, Sigmund, 176
 Heine, Cincinnatus (Joaquin Miller), 35
 Heinsch, H., 250
 Heinzeman, Dr. C. F., 113
 Hellman, Herman W., 170
 Hellman, Isaias W., 211
 Henley, Dr. Balentine, 94
 Henne, Christian, 250
 Henniger, William K., 265
 Hicks, Dr., 80
 Higuera, Evangeline V. de, 95
 Hilgard, Eugene Woldeman, 37
 Hill, Daniel, 243
 Hindman, Jo, 255
 Hirshfield, Mrs. Leo, 180
 Hoffman, Joan, 183
 Hogan, Chester L., 304
 Holder, C. F., 114
 Hollzer, Judge Harry A., 177
 Holtz, William F., 390
 Hoaker, Mrs. J. D., 329
 Howland, Charles, 255, 258
Howland Grace Freeman, by Jo Hindman, 255-262
 Jo Hindman, 255
 Hughes, E. B., 96
 Hunt, Rockwell D., 9
 Huntington, Collis Potter, 36
 Huntington, Henry E., 37, 232
 Hyatt, Edward, 112
 Hyde, Colonel William B., 213

I

Ide, William B., 34
 Irmas, Mrs. Sydney K., 180

J

Jackson, Helen Hunt, 189
 Jacobs, Mrs. David, 180
 Jamison, J. H., 81
 Jastrow, Dr. Marcus, 170
 Jevene, H., 64
 Johnson, Hiram W., 5, 35
 Johnson, O. T., 64
 Jones, E. W., 62, 64
 Jordon, David Starr, 25-27
Journal of Lt. Thomas W. Swenney,
 edited by Arthur Woodward, *rev.*, 297
 Juaneno Indians, 42-59
 Juch, Emma, 325
 Judah, Theodore Dehone, 36

K

Kahn, Dr. A. J., 197
 Kalisher, Fanny (Mrs. Samuel Ling-

Index

stone) 169
 Kalisher, Wolf, 167
 Kauffman, Mrs. Jules, 180
 Kawaiisu Indians, 44-59
 Kearney, Stephen Watts, 34
 Keith, William, 35
 Kellogg, Vernon Lyman, 36
 Kelly, John, 324
 Kent, William, 37
 Kennedy, Mrs. E. J. 391
 Kenny, George, 28
 Kerckhoff, William G., 64, 232
 Kern, J. C., 377
 Kew, James H., 261
 Kimball, M. H., 107
 King, Thomas Starr, 18, 19-21
 King, W. S., 100
 Kingsbaker, Alfred T., 176
 Kinney, Abbott, 134, 374
 Kitanemuk Indians, 54-59
 Klages, Ralph, 320
 Klauber, William, 251
 KleinSmid, Rufus B., von, 32
 Kline, Mr. and Mrs. John A., 136
 Knight, William H., 28, 134
 Koepfli, J. O., 64
 Kramer, Haskell W., 179
 Krauss, Arnold, 331
 Kremer, Maurice, 167
 Kremer, Mrs. Maurice, 172
 Krvthe, Maymie R., 185, 247
 Kuhl, Mrs. Peter, 94
 Kuhn, Mrs. Samuel, 180

L

Lacy, William, 70
 La Fetra, C. W., 315
 Lamport, Mrs. Harry, 94
 Lane, Franklin Knight, 37
 Lankershim, Isaac, 91, 229
 Lankershim, Susanna, 93
 Larkin, Thomas Oliver, 35
 Larrabee, Mrs. M., 332
 Lassen, Peter, 35
 Lasuen, Fermin Francisco de, 34
 Lathrop, Jane, 24
Latin America: A History: by Alfred
 Barnaby Thomas, *rev.*, 385
 Laughlin, Homer, 64
 Lavalenthal, Elias, 168
 Lavalenthal, Teany (Mrs. Issac Kauff-
 mon) 169
 Lawler, Oscar, 206
 Lawrence, G. E., 332
 Lazard, Solomon, 167
 Lazard, Mrs. Sylvain, 180
 Leavitt, Melbourne, 182
 Leck, Lorenzo, 250
 Le Conte, Joseph, 25, 36
 Lee, H. T., 320
 Lehman, "Dutch" George (Round House
 George) 248
 Lewin, Mr. and Mrs. Lewis, (Jeanette

 Lazard) 169
 Lewis, S. B., 62
 Lewis, Thomas A., 62
 Levi, Mrs. Herman, 180
 Levy, Michel, 170
 Lick, James, 37
 Lindley, Dr. Walter, 292
 Lobb, William, 107
 Loeb, Mrs. L., 332
 Loeb, Leon, 170
 Loew, Jacob, 171
 Loomis, Captain and Mrs., 268
 Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce,
 61-70
 Los Angeles Choral Society, 331
Los Angeles County Subsidy, A reprint
 of pamphlet written by Judge R. M.
 Widney, 1872, 347-362
 Los Angeles, How the Railroad Came
 To, 345
 Los Angeles Oratorio Society, 331
 Lopez, Catalina, 225
 Lopez, Don Pedro, 225
 Lopez, Geronimo, 229
 Lowe, Prof. Thadeus S. C., 271
 Lugo, Antonio Maria, 242
 Luisano Indians, 42-59
 Lummis, Charles F., 317
 Lundquist, David, 79

Mc

McFarland, D., 320
 McKinley, George, 86
 McReynolds, James O., 94
 McReynolds, Mrs. James, 94

M

Maclay, Charles, 230
 Magnin, Rabbi Edgar F., 173
 Malinow, Nathan, 176
 Manley, William Lewis, 35
 Manning, Most Reverend Timothy J., 95
 Marble, Joan M. C., 334
 Marion, Guy, 390
 Marion, Mrs. Guy, 95
 Markham, Edwin, 8, 35
 Marsh, John, 21-23
 Marshall, Bessie T., 321
 Marshall, James, 16
 Martin, W. T. (Tooch), 158
 Masbacher, George, 172
 Masser, Dr. W. H., 133
 Masson, Mrs. Charles M., (Charlotte
 Workman), 301
 Mattoon, Paul F., 304
 Maynard, F. A., 307
 Mecusher, Inez, 336
 Melczer, Mrs. Edward A., 180
 Mendelssohn Club, 331
 Merritt, Alice J., 134
 Meserve, E. R., 111
 Meyberg, Emma Hellman (Mrs. Mox),
 291
 Meyburg, Eugene, 291
 Meyburg, Leo J., 291

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Meyberg, Manfred, 291
 Meyberg, Max, 290
 Meyberg, Moritz, 290
 Miller, Frank Augustus, 31-32
 Miller, Henry, 227
 Millikan, Robert Andrews, 36
 Mitchell, Beatrix Sabichi, 95
Mission Santa Ines, The Treasures of, by
 Kurt Baer, *rev.*, 387
 Modini, C., 322
 Modjeska, Madame Helena, 190
 Monday Musical Club, 330
 Morosoli, Mr. and Mrs. Fulgenzio, 196
 Mueller, Madame Fabbrie, 311
 Muir, John, 21-23
Music in Los Angeles, by Henry Win-
 fred Splitter, 307-346
 Musin, Mr. and Mrs. Ovide, 337
My Memories of San Fernando Valley,
 by J. Benton Van Nuys, 235-238
 Myers, Mrs. E. E., 85

N

Nadeau, Remi, 211
 Nebelung, Frog, 322
 Nelson, Frederick W., 390
 Newcomb, Lou, 144, 147, 267
 Newmark, Constance Meyberg (Mrs.
 Marco), 291
 Newmark, Estelle (Mrs. Leon Loeb),
 169
 Newmark, Harris, 170, 213
 Newmark, Joseph, 167
 Newmark, Joseph P., 167
 Newmark, Marco R., 64, 91, 96, 167,
 289, 237, 363
 Newmark, Maurice H., 173
 Newmark, Meyer J., 93
 Nicolini, Signor Ernesto, 325
 Nordica, Lillian, 327
No Little Plans, by Norman Stanley,
rev., 386
 Norton, Mr. and Mrs. Isaac, 169
 Norton, S. Tildon, 173

O

Olden, W. R., 119
 Oliver, J. C., 109
 O'Melveny, Henry, 64, 216
 O'Melveny, H. K. S., 214, 216
 Opid, Mr. and Mrs. John, 282
 Ortega, Guadalupe, 241
 Ortega, Rafaela, 243
 Otis, Harrison Gray, 62, 233
 Owens, Mrs. J. S., 334

P

Packman, Ana Begue de, 300
 Page, Kate Van Nuys (Mrs. James R.),
 93, 236
 Palmer, Dr. Edward, 123
 Palmer, Dr. F. M., 124

Palomares, Don Ynacio, 309
 Palou, Francisco, 34
 Pardee, Sheriff, 79
 Patti, Madame Adelina, 190, 325
 Patton, Ann, 390
 Paulsen, Robert K., 330
 Peabody, Annie L., 320
 Peel, Col. Benjamin L., 213
 Pelton, John C., 36
 Perry, Emma Harris, 71
 Perry, George, 236
 Perry Mamie, (Maria Perrini), 322
 Perry, William H., 334
 Philharmonic Society, 315
 Phillips, Mrs. Richard, 262
 Pickering, Dr. W. H., 130
 Pico, Andres, 227, 228
 Pico, Pio, 228
 Pico, Romulo, 231
 Portola, Gaspar de, 11, 34
 Piutte, William, 328
 Pleasant, J. E., 226
 Plummer, Mrs. J. L., 206
 Porter, Benjamin F., 230
 Porter, George K., 230
 Paston, D., 79
 Potter, Charles, 102
 Powell, Chuck, 304
 Powell, Ruth, 304
 Prager, Samuel, 168
 Prenzlauer, Mrs. Cora, 180
 Presto, Adagio, 320
 Pryor, Arthur W., 336
 Putnam, Frank B., 96, 211, 347, 390

R

Rancho Story of San Fernando Valley,
 by W. W. Robinson, 225-234
 Redick, John L., 62
 Redler, Thomas, 184
 Retzer, George W., Jr., 304
 Rhinehart, Arthur, 182
 Rice, Mrs. J. P., 320
 Richards, John E., 37
 Richardson, Douglas F., 304
 Richardson, Friend W., 70
 Riley, Bennet, 34
 Ripley, Mrs. Edward, 389
 Ritter, Fannie Raymond, 322
 Roberts, Henry, 264
 Roberts, H. C., 156
 Robinson, Henry M., 289
 Robinson, Laurabelle Arms (Mrs. Henry
 M.), 289
 Robinson, W. W., 206, 225
 Robinson, Mrs. W. W., 207
 Rocca, Andrew, 75, 82, 193
 Rocca, Florence, 77
 Rocca, Mary, 194
 Rogers, Betty and Will, 29, 30
 Rogers, Harrison, 244
 Rolle, Andrew F., 300
 Rolle, Mrs. Andrew F., 300
 Roseman, Mrs. William, 180

Index

Ross, L. J., 192
 Roth, Mrs. Kelley, 180
 Rothchild, Leon, 182
Round House George and His Garden of Paradise, by Maymie R. Krythe, 247-254
 Rowell, Chester, 5, 35
 Rowen, V. J., 233
 Rule, Ferd K., 64
 Russell, William, 36
 Rust, R. N., 121
 Ruxton, George Frederick, 12
 Royce, Josiah, 25, 34

S

Sabichi, Mrs. Carlos, 96
 Sachen, Baron Osten, 186
 Salmina, Felix, 196
 Salvator, Ludwig Louis, Archduke, 187
 Sanchez, Padre, 243
San Gabriel Mountains, A History of the, by Charles Clark Vernon, Part I, 39-60; Part II, 141-166; Part III, 263-288; Conclusion, 373-384
 Satori, J. F., 232
 Saunders, Leopold B., 170
 Schlesinger, Herman, 167
 Schelsinger, Jacob, 170
 Schneider, George, 144
 Schneider, Walter, 270
 Schreiber, Dr. Emanuel, 170
 Schieffelein, Ed, 189
 Schultz, Madame Anna Bishop, 311
 Schott, Anton, 340
 Schwab, Benjamin J., 173
 Schwamm, Dr. John, 303
 Schweppe, Annis Van Nuys, (Mrs. Richard J.), 96, 236
 Scott, Irving, 36
 Scott, Paul T., 239
 Seligman, Mr. and Mrs. Carl, (Ella Newmark), 169
 Seltzer, Mrs. Harry B., 180
 Serra, Junipero, (Miguel Jose Serra), 10-11, 18, 363-366
 Serrano Indians, 42-59
 Sepulveda, Judge Ynacio, 93
Serape to Levi . . . Southern Pacific, by Frank B. Putnam, 211-224
 Severance, Madame Caroline, 294
 Severance, Theodore, 294
 Seward, Rev. A. D., 135
 Shauer, Mrs. Albert, 180
 Shaw, Carrie, 77
 Sherman, Gen. M. H., 233
 Sherman, Gen. William T., 186
 Shorb, J. de Barth, 191
Short Line Junction, by Jack R. Wagner, *rev.*, 205
 Shoshone Indians, 39-59
 Siegal, Belle, F., 304
 Slauson, J. S., 64
 Sloat, John Drake, 34
 Smathers, E. L., 174

Smith, Prof. Emory E., 110
 Smith, Grace, 319
 Smith, Jedediah Strong, 11-12
 Smoller, Rabbi Phineas, 179
 Solomon, David, 168
 Sooy, Mrs. Louise P., 391
 Southern California Indians, 39-59
 Spalding, W. A., 134
 Spence, E. F., 130, 315
 Splitter, Henry Winfred, 99, 307
 Spreckels, Claus, 36
 Squires, T. F., 320
 Stansbery, Mrs. B., 322
 Stanford, Leland, 21, 23-25
 St. Cecilia Society, 330
 Stamm, Prof. A. J., 333
 Stearns, Abel, 34
 Steil, Peter, 278
 Stephens, William D., 64
 Stockton, Robert Field, 34
 Stoddard, Charles, 112
 Stoermer, Grace, 301
 Stone, Prof. W. C., 320
 Stoner, Prof. D. P., 123
 Storey, James, 79
 Starr, F., 64
 Strain, A. G., 150, 278
 Stransky, Jane, 94
 Strong, Constable, 79
 Sturtevant, William, 147
 Sutherland, Duke, 188
 Sutro, Adolph, 37
 Sutter, John Augustus, 13, 14, 15-17
 Sweet, John, 25, 36
 Switzer, Perry, 266
 Swift, Dr. Lewis, 132

T

Taylor, William, 34
 Temple, Francis P. F., 214
Terry, David of California, by A. Russell Buchanan, *rev.*, 205
 Therwinsky, Tobias, 167
 Thurber, George, 103
 Tibessard, Ed., 251
 Tierman, Samuel, 177
 Torrance, Jared S., 370
 Trash, Dr. J. B., 107
 Treble Clef Club, 320
 Trumbull, Jonathan, 35
 Trunard, Trapper, 72
 Tucker, Caje, 73
 Tungate, Mrs. Letitia Talbot, 392
Twelve Apostles of California, by Rockwell D. Hunt, 9-38

U

Uhlman, Mr. and Mrs. Daniel (Sarah Lehmann), 169

V

Valda, Guilia, 327
 Valle, Don Antonia del, 225

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Vallejo, Mariano Guadalupe, 13, 15
 Vancouver, George 34
 Van Nuys, Harriet Kerr, 91
 Van Nuys, Herber, 235
 Van Nuys, Isaac N., 9-93, 229
 Van Nuys, J. Benton, 93, 233, 235
 Van Nuys, Peter, 91
 Varnum, Mrs. George B., 94
 Vernon, Charles Clark, 39, 141, 263, 373
 Vischer, Edward, 228
 Vizcaino, Sebastian, 33
 Voluntine, John, 193

W

Wagner, Jack R., 205
 Waldeck, Jacob E., 171
 Walker, James, 228
 Walker, Joseph Reddeford, 34
 Wallace, William A., 108
 Watson, Maria Dolores Dominguez, 370
 Webb, Dr. Thomas H., 102
 West, Henry H., 96
 Weyse, O. G., 324
 Wheeler, Benjamin Ide, 25, 36
 White, John P., 118
 White, Stephen Mallory, 35
 Whitley, H. J., 233
 Whitsett, W. P., 233
 Widney, Dr. Joseph Pomeroy, 217
 Widney, Judge Robert Maclay, 214, 301, 347
 Wiggins, Frank, 69
 Wilkie, Alfred, 311

Wilshire Boulevard Temple: Congregation B'Nai B'Rith., 1862-1947, by Marco R. Newmark, 167-184
 Willard, C. D., 64
 Willhartitz, Prof. Adolf, 320
 Williams, Don Isaac Julian, 71
 Wilson, Ben, 86
 Wilson, Don Benito, 72, 146, 185, 213, 370
 Wilson, T. R., 225
 Winer, Mrs. Louise H., 182
 Wolfskill, John J., 94, 96
 Wolfskill, Joseph W., 304
 Wolfskill, William, 226
 Wolfstein, Mrs. Florine, 173, 180
 Wolfstein, Samuel, 179
 Women's Symphony Orchestra, 333
 Wood, Charles Modini, 334
 Wood, Mrs. Modini, 324
 Workman, Mrs. Thomas, 390
 Workman, W. H., 62, 64
 Wright, Mrs. George V., 304

Y

Yates, Dr. Lorenzo J., 115, 133
 Yokut Indians, 56-59
 Yorba, Mrs. Ernest J., 95

Z

Zanella, Mr. and Mrs. Jacob, 304
 Zapatero, 73
 Zimmerman, Mrs. W. E., 206
 Zucher, Jack H., 182

Publications
of the
Historical Society of
Southern California

2425 Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles 5, California

DUnkirk 2-5582



1892 — Annual Containing the Sutro Documents with translations - - each \$3.00

1931 — One Hundred Fiftieth Anniversary Special Publication (Annual for 1931) - - - - each \$5.00

All other numbers of Annual Publications - - - - - each \$2.50

A limited number of sets of Annuals (1892 - 1934, inclusive) are available - - - - - per set \$75.00

These sets do not include Annuals for 1895, 1924 or 1933, which are out of print.

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to members - - - - - per run \$8.00

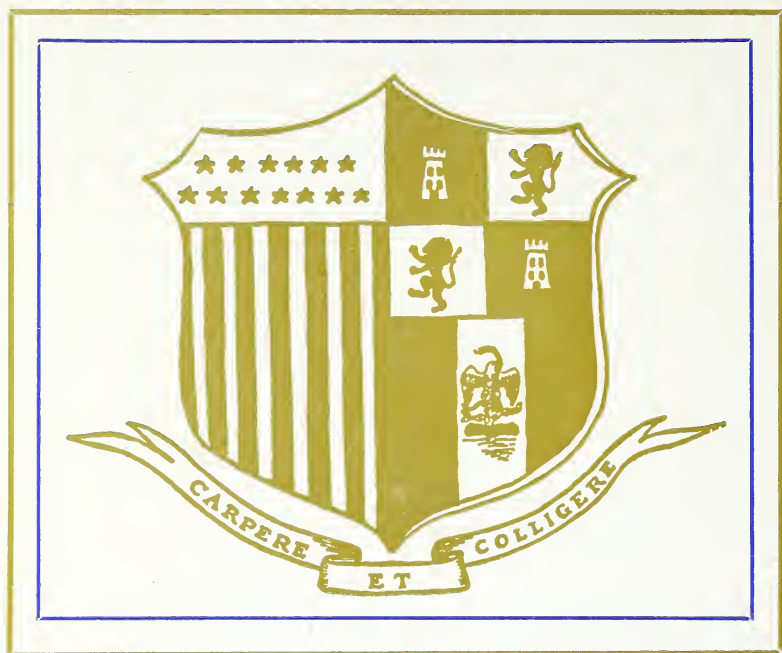
Individual single numbers to members - - - - - each \$2.00

Individual double numbers to members - - - - - each \$3.00

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to non-members - - - - - per run \$10.00

Individual single numbers to non-members - - - - - each \$3.00

Individual double numbers to non-members - - - - - each \$4.00



HECKMAN
BINDERY INC.



APR 95

Bound - To - Please® N. MANCHESTER,
INDIANA 46962

